

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON
MAN AND WRITER

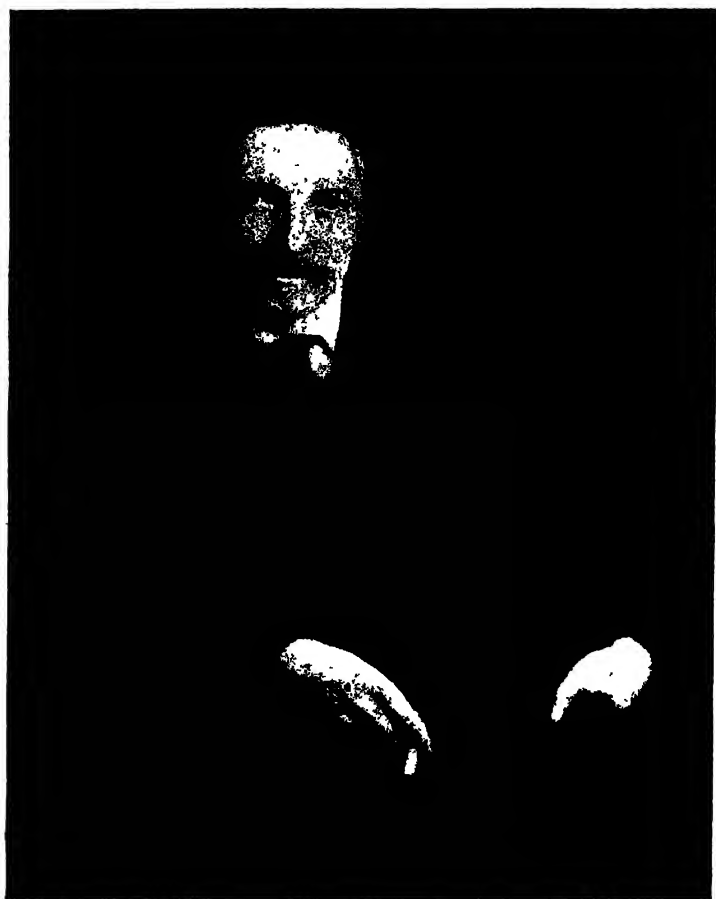
There are two distinct artist treatments for any man who enters on the business of writing : truth to the fact and a good spirit in the treatment.

It must always be foul to tell what is false, and it can never be safe to suppress what is true.

I am not afraid of the truth, but I am afraid of parts of it impudently uttered. Particularly of immorality.

If you are so seriously pained by the suggestion of your subject and so paternally delighted with his career, you will always be an excellent gentleman, but a somewhat questionable biographer.

R. L. S.



Photograph R. L. L. Notman, Boston, U. S. A.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Man and Writer

A Critical Biography by
J. A. STEUART

London
Sampson Low, Marston & Co., Ltd.

**PRINTED IN GREAT BRITAIN BY PURNELL AND SONS
PAULTON, SOMERSET, ENGLAND**

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

My most cordial thanks are due to the following for their help and courtesy in various ways: Mr. Livingston Chapman, Secretary, Stevenson Society, Saranac; Mrs. Dale, Scoughall, North Berwick; Mr. Davis (Messrs. W. H. Smith & Son, Leeds); Mr. William K. Dickson, LL.D., Advocates' Library, Edinburgh; Sir Joseph Dobbie; The Rev. William C. Fraser; Mr. G. W. Goad (Messrs. W. H. Smith & Son, London); Mr. Thomas Haddow; Messrs. Lizars & Co.; Mr. William J. Hay; Mr. James Brownlee Hunter; Mr. W. H. Ifould, Principal Librarian and Secretary, Public Library, Sydney, N.S.W.; Mr. P. A. Keppie; Mr. Thomas King, Anchor Line, Glasgow; Mr. Robert Leighton, London; Mr. Will H. Low, Bronxville, New York; Mr. W. Macdonald Mackay, Toronto; Councillor J. Wilson MacLaren, Edinburgh; The Very Rev. Professor W. P. Paterson, D.D., University of Edinburgh; Mr. Charles E. Pearce, London; The Rev. William Robertson, D.D., Mr. Fred J. Rymer; Mrs. K. H. St. Hill; Mr. Robert T. Skinner, House-Governor, Donaldson's Hospital, Edinburgh; the officials of the Speculative Society; Mr. C. W. Tinckam; Mr. James R. Tyrrell, Sydney; Sir John Somers Vine; Mr. John Walker, LL.B., Aberdeen; Mr. J. Mullo Weir, S.S.C.;

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

Mr. Charles Whibley; Professor William Wilson, Secretary, the University of Edinburgh; and many other friends and correspondents in widely-separated quarters of the world who prefer to remain anonymous. To Mr. Lloyd Osbourne I am especially indebted. Not only has he kindly granted me permission to quote from the writings of Stevenson, but has extended his courtesies in other directions, to the great advantage of my work. The following publishers of Stevenson's works have also kindly added their permission to quote copyright matter: Messrs. Cassell & Co.; Messrs. Chatto & Windus; Messrs. Longmans, Green & Co.; Messrs. Methuen & Co.; and Messrs. Charles Scribner's Sons, New York. Further, I am indebted to the kindness of Mr. W. T. Spencer and Messrs. Constable & Co. for permission to use information from *Forty Years in a Bookshop*.

I have also to record my sincere thanks to Mr. Henry H. Harper, of the Bibliophile Society, Boston, Mass., and Mr. George S. Hellman, New York, for aid most courteously given and permission to use copyright matter at my discretion. To Mr. Harper and the Bibliophile Society we owe the publication for private circulation of much valuable material previously unknown relating to Stevenson, his career and his works; while Mr. Hellman, as the owner of a large mass of important Stevenson manuscripts, has by scholarly articles and editing shed much light on obscure passages in Stevenson's life and writings.

It may be added that from the first line to the last this book was written in Stevenson's native town amid the scenes which are for ever intimately associated with his memory.

July 3, 1922.

CONTENTS

PART I

CHAPTER		PAGE
	INTRODUCTION	I
I	A BIRTH-PROUD PEOPLE	9
II	THE CHILD	36
III	THE TRUANT SCHOOLBOY	58
IV	THE SEDULOUS APE	86
V	A MELODRAMATIC REVOLT.. .. .	101
VI	NEW ASSOCIATIONS	137
VII	W. E. HENLEY	171
VIII	THE GREAT ADVENTURE	236
IX	UNROMANTIC REALITY AND SOME ENGAGING PHILOSOPHY	274

PART II

CHAPTER		PAGE
I	A GLIMPSE OF "WORKSHOP"	I
II	THE RETURN TO BRITAIN	38
III	ESTABLISHED POPULARITY.. .. .	71
IV	HAIL, COLUMBIA !	91
V	ULYSSES	123
VI	FIRST IMPRESSIONS OF SAMOA	152
VII	VAILIMA—THE JOYS OF CHIEFTAINSHIP	183
VIII	A WAVERLEY HERO	206
IX	"VAILIMA PRAYERS"	230
X	CONCLUSION	255
		vii

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

PART I

INTRODUCTION

THE REAL STEVENSON

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON was born in Edinburgh in 1850, and died in Samoa in 1894. Into his comparatively short life of forty-four years, especially into the last two decades of it, he crowded adventures and experiences such as fell to no other author of his time, and to few authors of any time. From birth he was consecrated to Romance. In his cradle the Mystic Mother breathed her magic spell upon him and while he lived it remained unbroken. His brave response to the early and clearly divined call may fitly be expressed in the great lines from *Paradise Lost* :

Go thou—I shall not lag behind nor err
The way, thou leading.

And as she led he followed, never lagging behind,
never erring the way.

The result is a precious double legacy ; first a delightful contribution to the romantic literature of his country and the world ; next such an example

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

of courage amid difficulties as must continue to inspire men to remote generations.

In the novelist's outfit many things are essential, but the prime essential is courage, the unwavering, unwearied, unconquerable courage which, like faith, removes mountains. Without it nothing else will avail, not brilliant gifts, nor good fortune, nor any other choice favour of the gods. Art is long; and in the arduous pursuit, the laborious days and "nights devoid of ease," the human spirit is apt to faint and fail. It is the peculiar glory of Stevenson that, despite hindrances and obstacles which might well dishearten and dismay, his ardour, his enthusiasm, his determination never abated. The blithe spirit of adventure, which was as the breath of life in his nostrils, impelled him forward like an informing, animating genius; as in fact it was.

Nor was it the spirit of adventure alone. In all the records of literature there is scarcely an instance of more ardent devotion to an ideal than his, not even with such austere artists as Dante and Milton. The value, the quality of the ideal is another question. Here we are concerned with the fact of its existence, its influence and sustaining power. Stevenson gave to it his whole heart, his whole strength, not grudgingly, not like a coward yielding up what he could not keep, not like a miser doling out alms, but with the joyous ardour of one who, being rich, is eager to give of his riches. In the end he gave his life. And it is because of that dauntless, undeviating valour, which was virtue in action, that the story of his career is so potent to charm and to inspire. To ardent youth lifting its eyes to far horizons aglow with rainbow visions he must long remain a shining avatar. Those who

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

follow him up the glimmering
breathe a rarefied and stimulating air.

In 1901, seven years after Stevenson's death, appeared the "official" or family biography, by his cousin, Mr. Graham Balfour. It is a work of much interest, as it could scarcely fail to be, written with cousinly sympathy, admiration, piety, and a sedulous suppression of the critical spirit. Clearly Mr. Balfour's task was to produce a family portrait which, so to speak, could be hung in the dining-room for the adoration and consolation of bereaved affection. Inevitably, therefore, the lights were turned high on certain features, and on certain others lowered so that these are softened or obscured to the point of extinction. Independent critics at once discerned the hand of the special pleader in the picture. One eminent critic, whose association with Stevenson at the most crucial stage of his career was one of close personal intimacy, recorded a vehement and damaging protest, declaring explicitly that the "Seraph in Chocolate," the "Barley-sugar Effigy" of Mr. Balfour's biography, was not R. L. Stevenson at all, but an imaginary figure of flawless, superhuman virtue, set up, draped and adorned, for blind, unquestioning worship. Whether the destructive criticism of W. E. Henley was just or the reverse will be considered in its place.

The biographer writing while his subject is still, as it were, a vivid part of yesterday, has obviously a delicate and difficult task. The naked truth never was and never can be put into obituaries any more than it can be engraved on monuments and tombstones. When Mr. Balfour wrote his book several members of Stevenson's innermost family circle were still alive. Moreover, it was composed under the eye,

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

under the actual, decisive supervision of Mrs. R. L. Stevenson, a lady of trenchant personality and arbitrary will, whose controlling hand is palpable throughout the narrative, particularly in those parts where a diplomatic reticence might seem the better part of candour. Nor is this at all surprising. Loyalty and affection alike dictated an "In Memoriam" in which the subject should appear with a celestial halo, or at any rate an enviable freedom from common human frailties and follies. The result is the family portrait we possess.

But since it was painted, those to whom Stevenson was closest and dearest, those who cherished his memory rather, it may be, for what he seemed to them than what he was in reality, have followed him to the "undiscovered country from whose bourne no traveller returns." Reticences, evasions, suppressions, trimmings, then perhaps appropriate, are no longer desirable or excusable. Stevenson has ceased to be a private family possession set on a domestic pedestal for privileged views, and is relegated to History to be judged by her impartial standards. The *suggestio falsi* and the *suppressio veri* mode of presentation would now be a double wrong—a wrong to his reputation and to the public.

As all students of literature are aware, recent years have brought a vast accumulation of new material bearing on the character and career of Stevenson. Not all of that material is authentic: but much of it is genuine, and, so to speak, clamours for its appropriate place in his true biography. Moreover the courtesy of various people who have looked on Stevenson's face and heard his voice, and were familiar with the circumstances of his early life, has enabled me to add much virgin informa-

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

tion to the store. Further, I have had access to important private documents not before available to any biographer. Thus I have been able to trace his ancestry to sources unknown to himself or to those who have hitherto written of him. Those sources explain many of the traits and peculiarities which so hopelessly puzzled his friends, and have misled both his critics and his eulogists.

More important still, it has been my good fortune to obtain specific information concerning that period, at once the darkest and most vital in his whole career, when the young Stevenson appeared to all who knew and loved him to be driving headlong for shipwreck. Yet again I have been able to discover the origin and history of the quarrels and estrangements, both early and late, which at various points embittered his life and seriously affected his work. The light thus obtained enables us for the first time, I believe, to see and understand the man Robert Louis Stevenson as he actually was, alike in his strength and his weakness, his gaiety and his gloom.

And in fine, competent judges with a sense of Stevenson's real worth as a man and a writer feel, lately with sharpened conviction, that the time has come for an authentic biography, written not with less sympathy or appreciation, but with ampler knowledge, sounder understanding, and a greater measure of independence than was possible for Mr. Graham Balfour. We need have no doubt what Stevenson's own judgment would be, could he be consulted. "Everything worth judging," he remarks in a pertinent passage, "whether it be a man or a work of art or only a fine city, must be judged upon its merits as a whole." To be judged upon his merits as a whole would unquestionably be his

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

own desire as assuredly it is his right. Besides, the readers of two continents who receive him joyously as a world-figure in literature are entitled to know what manner of man he was they admire.

The truth, I venture to predict, will increase, not diminish, their admiration. To his account there must be laid deflections from the straight line of rectitude observed by the society into which he was born. He was not immaculate ; but he was not an imposter or hypocrite unctuously affecting virtues he did not possess, though a fatuous idolatry has done its ridiculous worst to make him appear one. He never posed as a " Seraph in Chocolate." That equivocal creation was the work of others, and would, could he know of it, excite his scorn and his resentment, as it would provoke the satire of a Pope or a Burns. Were it said that he was an egotist in the grain, the statement would be undeniable ; but egotism is not hypocrisy ; rather is it the opposite pole of character. Nor does it preclude the love of truth and the practice of sincerity. It may be affirmed with certainty that Stevenson would be the first to repudiate the sham impeccability which an egregious worship has foisted upon him. Like Cromwell, he would insist on being painted as he was and is—" warts and all."

" Paint me as I am," he would say. " No fictitious virtues. No frills, no graces, no sublimities that are not mine. Add nothing ; omit nothing. What if occasionally I was foolish and took the left-hand road ! Have others always been so wise ? In the end I won my wager and recovered my glove. I can bear the truth. If it shames me at one point, it glorifies me at another. Strike the balance and let the world judge. For God's sake make me out a living, breathing human being."

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

To make him out a living, breathing human being is the purpose of this book. He can bear the truth, and less is an insult to his character and his fame. His works attest the accomplished and delightful writer. But behind the writer is the man, intensely alive, most fascinatingly, often most pathetically human. And as this human quality, this common heritage of the race properly understood, endears him to us, as showing that he shares our own fallibility, our own limitations, weaknesses, and pitiful failures, so it is the key to all that is essentially and enduringly characteristic in his writings. He was not perfect any more than we are perfect. The perfect man, should he ever appear, will be a monster whom all the world will avoid. In Stevenson's own words, "We esteem people for their virtues, but love them for their faults."

Renan remarks that saints are usually rather dull people.

We must agree that for the most part they lack the warm, genial, all-embracing humanity of the creative artist whose mission it is to observe, portray, and interpret human nature as he finds it in the seething world about him, not as it may exist in the sheltered seclusion of cloisters and convents. That is what Stevenson set himself to do, and he was not dull. He was no anchorite. He did not run away from life nor scorn its delights any more than he shunned its battles. A more intrepid spirit has not graced or inspired the world of letters in recent generations. And were he speaking for himself, he might well remind us that the great men, the moving spirits of the ages, whether in thought or in action, seldom adorn the calendar of the "unco' guid" or "the rigidly righteous." It is not for his saintliness that we adore David and

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

linger enthralled over the gripping, moving humanity of his story. It is not his saintliness that makes Burns the most beloved of poets, or Nelson the hero and darling of his countrymen. Assuredly it is not as a saint, with the Shorter Catechism under one arm and the Solemn League and Covenant under the other, that Stevenson makes his real appeal. His is a higher, wider glory than that of mere creed. He not only wrote romance, he lived romance. If, therefore, we accept Milton's dictum that he who would write a great poem must first make his life a poem, then Stevenson is justified of his faith. His was not a facile conquest. If it were, he should not be what he is, more heroic than any of his own fictitious heroes. For in the elements of true heroism not a David Balfour nor an Alan Breck among them equals their creator.

CHAPTER I

A BIRTH-PROUD PEOPLE

THE comic muse has long been wont to make merry over the spectacle of the infatuated Scot vauntfully flourishing his family tree. An inflated vanity, so the jest runs, must needs provide itself with illustrious progenitors—legendary kings, thanes, and chiefs of fabulous renown—and the attributes which made them glorious are perpetuated (and augmented) in their latest descendant.

Satire apart, it may be owned that hereditary pride does swell the Scottish breast. "Remember them you come of" is a sentiment to which Scotland, the Empire, and the world owe more than the satirist guesses. For, being a cardinal fact in national psychology, it makes the Scot what he is, an overweening patriot, a stickler for tradition, a maker and moulder of history, a dauntless, at times a fierce, exponent of racial virtues. In January 1923 there was unveiled in the old quadrangle of Edinburgh University a memorial to the band of young heroes, sons of the University, who, when Freedom was imperilled, hastened forth and gave their lives that she might not perish from the earth. At the foot of the bronze tablets inscribed with nearly a thousand names, a students' wreath of laurel was deposited, bearing the simple inscription, *All Earth is witness that they answered as*

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

befitted their Ancestry. In spirit, as in brevity and beauty, this plain statement of a great fact, put on record in words borrowed from Mr. Rudyard Kipling, suggests Simonides or the Greek Anthology. Neither has anything nobler, more touchingly true than the proud tribute by comrades and successors to the valour of Scottish boys going gloriously to death because their fathers would have had it so. As by a flash of genius it lights the secret springs of the Scottish heart, and in particular its quenchless fidelity to the past and the spirit of those who went before.

This inspiring reverence for lineage, this passionate, inextinguishable devotion to kindred and home, is indeed the keynote of the Scottish character :

One-half our soil has walked the rest,
In patriots, heroes, martyrs, sages.

The Scot is an inveterate wanderer. There is no corner of the habitable globe to which he has not penetrated. You may follow his track and behold his works on the uttermost confines of civilisation, and often where no civilisation exists. Others noting his propensities to wander have remarked, less in jest than in earnest, that he is never so much at home as when he is abroad, never so happy as when his ambition grasps the prizes in lands far from his own. But however far-flung his Odyssey, whatever his fortune, be he millionaire or pauper, his heart turns yearningly to the grey land of mist and mountain which nourished his youth, which furnished his ideals and sentiments, which holds the dust of his forbears. The long chain of heredity binds him as by a spell. Scott, seeking health in the sunshine of Italy, begs to be taken home that he may die with the music of the

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Tweed in his ears. Stevenson, an exile on an island in the Pacific, yearns with ever-increasing intensity for his own inclement, inhospitable city by the Forth and the faces there he can never see again. The emotion is as Scots, as characteristic as "Scotch Drink" or the Shorter Catechism.

STEVENSON'S QUEST FOR ANCESTRY

Nor is it without solid sanction and justification. For under the high warrant of science, the jest of the satirist has become the problem of the historian, the ethnologist, and the biographer. In his *Memoir of Fleeming Jenkin* Stevenson observes: "Genealogies have taken a new lease of life, and as we study we think less of Sir Bernard Burke and more of Mr. Galton. Not only do our characters and talents lie upon the anvil and receive their temper during generations, but the very plot of our life's story unfolds itself on the scale of centuries, and the biography of the man is only an episode in the epic of the family."

That family epic, that ancestral Little Iliad, became to Stevenson himself a subject of ceaseless absorption, almost a monomania. He is constantly reverting to it, dwelling on it, probing, guessing, theorising, doing his utmost to secure a lineage which should bear the severe scrutiny of his birth-proud countrymen. He pursues his unwearied quest through vapid family chronicles, musty, "gushy" letters, references, anecdotes, traditions, whatever might promise a ray of light on that engrossing problem of pedigree. Even the records of the criminal law are not neglected. And as the passion began early, so it continued late.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Almost the last letter he wrote was a request for aid in his search ; and, indeed, it may be said he died trying to establish for his progenitors a foothold in history, a niche in the domestic annals of their country. Byron, it has been said, was prouder of counting among his ancestors certain lords who crossed to England with William the Conqueror than of being the author of "Childe Harold" and "Manfred." Stevenson, one is tempted to believe, would have been more gratified to discover an ancestor in Domesday Book than he was to be acclaimed the author of *Kidnapped* and *Catriona*, *Underwoods* and *A Child's Garden of Verses*.

His quest proved disappointing. The lustre and renown of antiquity, which he sought with so much devoted ardour for more than twenty years, he failed to find. As already stated, I am able to give particulars of which he was ignorant, and trace his ancestry to sources which, had he discovered them, would certainly have excited him to exultation. Before doing so, however, it will be convenient to glance rapidly at his own story of descent.

His volume, *Records of a Family of Engineers*, partly reveals the eagerness of his researches upon the genealogy and history of the clan whose name he bore. The chronicle opens picturesquely in the thirteenth century, when a Stevenson of Stevenson, in the county of Lanark, with other "people of importance," tendered allegiance to Edward I. Whether the oath was taken voluntarily or the House was suspect does not appear. Thence the fond genealogist traces what he calls a "backward progress" to the year 1700, when, as he supposes, the clan was landless. There, however, curious antiquaries have found him wrong. At that date

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Stevensons still held land in the Shires of Haddington and Ayr ; but there appears to be no question that the family suffered a territorial decline. What the cause of that decline might be, whether it was misfortune or misconduct or a blend of both, is a matter of conjecture. Obviously the family was not of sufficient consequence for the national historian, and the silence of private records leaves us guessing.

The real romance of Scotland lives in her songs and stories. Border ballads, Highland lays, tales of Homeric prowess, passion of more than Latin vehemence and wildness—these enshrine the deeds and histories of the past as they appeal to the popular imagination. Neither in peace nor in war, neither in love nor in foray, did the Stevensons of olden time play a conspicuous or romantic part. Song and story ignore them ; and, indeed, it is not until we reach late generations that members of the family begin to emerge from a long and obscure mediocrity. To that later roll must be added the name that shines most brilliantly of all, the name of Robert Louis Stevenson himself. But for him, who searched so zealously for some shred of inherited glory, the Clan Stevenson would be unknown to fame save within the narrow circle of engineers and lighthouse-builders. As by a stroke of magic it is the prerogative of genius to confer distinction on an entire race.

The Stevensons, then, moved obscurely, and the safer, perhaps, because obscurely, through "the brawl that makes Scots history." Occasionally they scrambled into Parliament. Some half-dozen instances are recorded, and for aught I know each of them may have been as expert a gambler as any successor of to-day in the equivocal game of cabal

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

and caucus which, with delicate satire, we call politics. Since democracy in its present resplendent form had not then emerged even as a dream, the parliamentary Stevensons must obviously have belonged to the "governing classes." At one point a priest, at another a brace of physicians impart a pleasantly professional air. One at least mounted the bench in all the dazzling glory of a bailie, and may well have passed judgment on black sheep of his own kindred, cannily commending their souls to Heaven while sternly committing their bodies to prison.

Inevitably a true-blue Covenanter embellishes the record. He appears in the seventeenth century in the person of John, a farmer of "Daily Parish in Carrick," a notably pious man whom the family historian describes as "a poor, sickly soul disabled with scrofula." Nevertheless, to the scrofulous, sickly John fell the ineffable glory of engaging in a hand-to-hand combat with Satan, and gallantly routing the enemy. Had he gone down in the dread encounter, "it might," as he quaintly remarked, "have brought a great reproach upon religion." But he was ordained to win as champion of the Cause, and his amazing victory is joyously celebrated in the chronicles of the Covenant.

Our Stevenson mentions him as "the one living and memorable figure" in a prosaic succession. Since, however, he is claimed merely as a "collateral" ancestor, it would be too wild a fancy to suppose that in him we see the primary impulse which two centuries later was to produce *Lay Morals* and *Vailima Prayers*. Others of the name were more politic or less valiantly pious. One stood sentry by the great door of Holyrood Palace while plotting lords were "dispatching Rizzio

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

within," thus for one brief moment making a dramatic appearance on the stage of history. Another burned his fingers in the Gowrie plot, but contrived to save his skin and neck by timely flight. For the rest, in the quaint language of ancient chronicles, the Stevensons were indwellers of good repute, respected burgesses, tradesmen, quietly and prudently serving their day and generation, as bakers, maltsters, millers, and the like, decent honest folk, as Stevenson relates, "playing the character parts of the Waverley Novels with propriety if without distinction."

If distinction is lacking, so inevitably is romance. There are no garnerings of the rich harvest of tradition which is the dower of multitudes of families on both sides of the border, a dower which would have been at once a precious patrimony and a source of inspiration to the latter-day teller of tales. The House of Stevenson furnishes its romancer with no heroes, no heroines to charm or thrill readers of fiction. He made ingenious efforts to smuggle them in and glorify them under other names—MacGregors, for example—but the attempts were futile. The best he could do was to introduce a Balfour; and David cuts but a poor figure beside Alan Breck and John Silver.

Nor has Stevenson himself the lineaments of his race physically or temperamentally. Why the deviation from type? Whence does he derive the traits and qualities which differentiate him so sharply from preceding bearers of his name? As we shall see, there were influences working in his blood of which he was himself unaware, after the most strenuous researches in family history and heredity. Before, however, proceeding to that alien heritage, let us briefly consider the family

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

tree as it appears stripped of fond surmises and hypotheses.

RESPECTABILITY AND PIETY

The eminently practical family of engineers which, as by a freak of nature, produced a devotee of pure romance, originated, so far as can be discovered, in the West of Scotland, and there in the county of Renfrew and parish of Neilston. They were farming-folk straight from the soil, and exhibited, it may be presumed, the solid virtues and sharp limitations of their class. In politics they were Whigs of the old school, though their later descendants in Edinburgh developed vehement and even aggressive Tory principles. It is not uncommon for people, ambitiously climbing the social ladder, to discard old creeds as they discard old clothes to harmonise with the new environment. Aristocratic sentiments and rising fortunes go naturally together, and the cobbler's grandson, moneyed or titled, must needs disown the ancestral bodkin and leather apron.

Hence the transmutation of the Stevensons from Whigs to Tories need not be too readily construed as snobbery, nor as a supple imitation of the agile and politic Vicar of Bray. By the time Louis came upon the scene, the political tenets of the family were firmly rooted, had, in fact, attained the sanctity of a religion. With his pap he imbibed a fervid love of Toryism and as fervid a hatred of all things Radical. "He detested Mr. Gladstone, I am pleased to say," wrote Mr. Henley in an article which has never been thought to have any taint of panegyric. His political creed he accepted

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

ready-made ; other creeds he made for himself ; and they were not shaped according to family pattern.

The first authentic date in the history of the Westland Whigs is 1665, when James Stevenson, a farmer or farmer's son of Nether Carsewell, in his native county, took to wife one Jean Keir. To them ten years later was born in Glasgow a son, Robert. He in turn married—twice—and among ten children born to him and his second wife, Elizabeth Cumming, were two sons, Hugh and Alan. That they were boys of exceptional ability, energy, and enterprise their brief but stirring careers prove. With them, indeed, comes the first real spice of romance in the drab, prosaic Stevenson records. While still mere youths they established a prosperous business in the West Indies with a home branch in "the clean and handsome little city on the Clyde." Glasgow will appreciate the compliment. Hugh, the elder, went abroad as managing partner, leaving the younger brother to manage the home establishment.

In love as in business Alan was precocious. At nineteen he married Jean Lillie, the pious and excellent daughter of a Glasgow builder, and he was but twenty when his only son, another Robert, was born. The adventurous young brothers seemed to be making swiftly for fortune when suddenly a crushing calamity befell them. A trusted agent turned thief, involving them in ruin. Alan was summoned by his brother to aid in hunting down the criminal, the law being both weak and incompetent. Day and night, from island to island, the two pursued him in an open boat. Their adventures were the very stuff of heroic romance, and doubtless gave more than one hint and impulse to

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

the author of *Treasure Island*. But, as with Sisera, the stars in their courses fought against them. The pursuit cost them their lives. Simultaneously they were struck down by fever, due to hardship and exposure, and they died broken and beggared men. As though to make calamity worse, the Glasgow builder died at the same time, leaving no estate for his daughter. Alan's wife and child were left penniless.

By and by the young widow, who was a woman of force and character, removed, with her boy, to Edinburgh, and there some years later one Thomas Smith, a "merchant burgess," appears on the scene with far-reaching results. Tom Smith had had his share of hardship, and seems to have been braced and hardened by his experiences. The son of a skipper of Broughty Ferry who was lost at sea, he migrated early to the Scottish capital, carrying with him, it may well be, a dash of brine in the blood. He did not, however, follow his father's calling, though Fate decreed he was to have much to do with the sea. Ambitious to succeed, pushing, confident, and competent, he established a "solid business in lamps and oils," became in fact sole proprietor of the Greenside Company's works, under the shoulder of Calton Hill, a conspicuous concern in its day. I invite the reader to note those Greenside works as an important landmark in the old dead time. For in them originated not only much with which seafaring people are now familiar, but particularly and specifically the fortunes of the House of Stevenson as known to later generations.

The rocky, treacherous coast of Scotland had long been the terror of mariners. Every year it took a heavy toll of ships and lives. The peril was

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

so constant, the loss so great, that at last public action was taken to afford distressed or bewildered navigators some guidance among deadly reefs and breakers. The Board of Northern Lights came into being, and Thomas Smith, ready with his illuminants, his lamps and oils, to replace primitive coal-fires, was appointed its first engineer. Then came an unexpected turn of destiny which would delight a novelist in search of complicated and risky family relations. Thomas Smith, already twice a widower though but thirty-three, married the widow of Alan Stevenson. Twelve years later her son Robert, grandfather of Louis, married Smith's daughter by his first wife, Elizabeth Couper, the daughter of a Liberton farmer. "The marriage of a couple who had lived for twelve years as brother and sister is hard to conceive," comments Stevenson. Nevertheless the odd experiment proved happy and fruitful, alike in the spheres of matrimony and business.

Piety presided over the union, both Jean Lillie and Jean Smith being "eminently pious." Piety, indeed, was a constant ingredient in the constitution of the womenfolk, whose chief care seems to have been to produce children and rear them in "the nurture and admonition of the Lord." Moreover, they ruled their husbands with a rod of piety, which, however, did not prevent the intrusion of the worldly spirit and the good Scot's passion for "getting on."

Presently Robert Stevenson became joint-engineer with Thomas Smith, stepfather and father-in-law in one, and the strange partnership prospered. When by and by Thomas Smith retired, a comparatively affluent man, his stepson succeeded him, thus establishing the family of engineers. A Life

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

of Robert Stevenson by his son David reveals him as a remarkable man, not only with a brain for engineering, but a gusto for adventure and something of the poet's gifts and ideals. For nearly half a century—1797 to 1843—he held his official appointment under the Board of Northern Lights, and during that long period was responsible for the construction of many harbours and docks, in addition to some eighteen lighthouses. Of the most famous of those pioneer enterprises, the Bell Rock Lighthouse, he has himself left an account which may still be read with interest for its picturesque and graphic touches, and its revelations of an independent and intrepid spirit. It was with him that Sir Walter Scott made the cruise commemorated in the Introduction to *The Pirate*, a memorable bit of family history most dearly cherished. "To be mentioned in Gibbon's *Decline and Fall*," remarks Thackeray, "is like having your name written on the façade of St. Peter's in Rome." To be mentioned with approbation in the preface to one of the Waverley Novels is an honour not less distinguished and enduring.

To Robert and his pious wife thirteen children were born, most of whom died in infancy, infant mortality being then a feature of the family history. Five survived, and of those, three sons, Alan, David, and Thomas, the father of Louis, followed in the paternal footsteps. They were notable men in their generation; but it must not be forgotten that the impulse which carried them up and on came from the Broughty Ferry skipper's son, the proprietor of the Greenside Works. From him and his lamps and oil, his foresight, his energy, his hazardous cruises, followed all that made the Northern

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Lighthouse System a record of romance no less than a triumph of science.

THE CELTIC MYTH

In his ancestral researches Stevenson explored with unwearied gusto certain vapoury traditions which, interpreted by "the preconceived idea," appeared to give him a Celtic lineage. "The name Stevenson," he observes, "has a certain air of being Norse"; and through possible changes of nomenclature he connects it with the Clan MacGregor, suggesting proudly that he may be an actual descendant of the redoubtable Rob Roy. He is compelled to admit that all Stevensons cannot have been of the Clan Alpin, but holds to the notion that some might be and probably were; and he dotes on the idea that James Stevenson of Glasgow, his "first authentic ancestor," may have had "a Highland alias on his conscience and a claymore in his back parlour." The conscience is a matter of speculation; but a claymore, possibly smuggled from Glasgow, was in fact discovered in the back parlour of a reputable London citizen, editor and publisher of the *Wesleyan Times*, who was thought to have changed from MacGregor to Stevenson, because the former was "not a good Methodist name." Probably not, indeed. The scion of an outlawed clan would scarcely be reckoned an ornament by London Methodism. But Stevenson held to the conviction that the proscribed MacGregor was there all the same, veiled as a follower of John Wesley. In the letter already mentioned, written two days before his death, to Sir James Balfour Paul, Lyon King-of-Arms, he asks: "Why, where,

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

and when did the MacGregors use the name of Stevenson?" And he inquires what truth there was in the report, made by Sir Herbert Maxwell, that the MacGregors had registered the Stevenson arms, "or at least the chevron?" He is obliged to confess that he has been unable to obtain "one scintilla of evidence as to the wherefor" of the thing.

Having started his romantic quest, however, he was encouraged to go on. Someone in London discovered, or pretended to discover, in his writings what Matthew Arnold called "the lineaments of Celtic genius." It follows that if you have Celtic lineaments you must be a Celt somewhere in the core of your being. Stevenson's Highland inheritance being, it was thought, indisputable, the pertinent question arose, Whence did it come? What remote, forgotten ancestor, in lonely glen or by the wild western sea, bequeathed to him that legacy of magic and mysticism, that haunting eerie imagination, that uncanny intuition, and weird, half-ghostly gift of second sight, which critics found so plentifully displayed in his work?

Did the dauntless Rob Roy actually move in his blood to break out erratically in the tame nineteenth century? Was he, in short, a son of the Children of the Mist, the late descendant of a proscribed clan, masquerading under a safe and respectable alias? It is a pretty and romantic theory, and it pleased Stevenson greatly. Students of heredity with a taste for patness in pedigree were equally pleased. Ah! now the volatile, elusive Stevenson was accounted for! Personal traits and idiosyncrasies were cited as incontrovertible evidence. His odd un-Lowland appearance, his manners, gestures, tastes, all that was bizarre and ludicrous in him,

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

what were they but part of that Celtic inheritance ? Was he freakish, elfish, now absurdly gay, now as absurdly gloomy ? Here was the explanation. He was a Celt. The golden key to puzzles and paradoxes had been found, and the secret make-up of Robert Louis Stevenson could be read like an open book. It was all as simple, as convenient as a crib to Euclid, as authentic as an amateur astronomer's guide to the mysteries of the Solar System. For his own part, be it repeated, the hypothesis of a Highland ancestry fascinated Stevenson, and he died believing it true.

Why, it will naturally be asked, should he have striven so ardently to prove a Celtic ancestry ? The answer, I think, touches an interesting question in psychology : In the Highlands " the brawl that makes up Scots history " is compact of romance. There, if anywhere, the enchantments of " old, unhappy, far-off things " linger like a spell. North of the Grampians the whole land is, as Arnold said of Oxford, steeped in sentiment, and, more than Oxford was once, " the home of lost causes and impossible loyalties." Defeat may well be more splendid, more entrancing than victory. The failures of Prince Charlie are glorious memories to multitudes who have long forgotten the successes of Cumberland ; and round the fire of a winter's night you may still hear tales of valour and of fealty which make the nerves tingle and the heart leap in exultation. To say that a clan is proscribed is even now to endow it with all the adorable qualities which quicken the sympathy and rouse the imagination.

Stevenson, ever exquisitely sensitive to the heroic and romantic, was enthralled and fired by stories of Highland courage and Highland fidelity. For

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

some obscure reason he disliked the English ; for reasons not obscure he still more disliked his fellow-citizens of Edinburgh. If they were Saxon, he could not and would not be Saxon. There was but one alternative : he was Celtic. In proof he set himself arduously to discover or create a fit genealogy. For a born romantic, a constitutional and congenital rebel, a contemner of the politic prudences and long-faced professions about him, it would be a superb thing to demonstrate his descent from a race that recognised no authority but its own, and consistently acted on " the good old rule, the simple plan " of doing what and how it pleased. He sought confirmation in legend and tradition, and, by a little ingenious exercise of fancy, found it. MacGregor and Stevenson were interchangeable names, used of old as necessity or convenience dictated. Therefore he was a MacGregor, toned down, indeed, to the mean, prosaic conditions of the nineteenth century as it ruled in Edinburgh, but indubitably a son of lawless caterans and heroic freebooters. The fact that this theory did violence to the Stevenson tradition does not appear to have troubled him. Perhaps in the intentness of his quest he forgot that record of respectability and piety which was the pride of his family.

To the Celtic fancy he tacked on another which might also be called anti-Saxon. This was a possible inheritance of French blood through a certain barber-surgeon who was thought to have come from France in the train of the notorious Cardinal Beaton. He could discover no details. " But," he observes naïvely, " I am tempted to suppose there may be something in it."

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

To these fancies, in particular to the Celtic fancy, Stevenson, as I have said, died clinging. Beliefs at once so plausible and so dearly held are not to be lightly denied. The fact, therefore, that they must be pronounced pure illusions brings a pang of regret, almost of remorse. Of the barber-surgeon not a trace is discoverable, and it may be stated with certainty that no such person ever existed among the ancestors of Robert Louis Stevenson. With equal certainty the Celtic ancestry must be dismissed to the region of myths. Whatever Celtic qualities may or may not be discernible in Stevenson the writer (and that subject will be considered later), in Stevenson the man there was not a drop of Highland blood, even in the most diluted form. The Celtic traits which he found in his father, the Celtic traits which others, following a blind lead, found in himself, were, so far as heredity is concerned, simply non-existent. It is a pity to destroy pretty and alluring theories, theories, moreover, which in the case of Stevenson seemed to elucidate and explain so much ; but, in biography at least, fact takes precedence of fiction, however gratifying the latter may be to pride or vanity.

Was Robert Louis Stevenson, then, of the common, hard, practical, unimaginative Lowland stock he found about him ? He was accounted odd. Were his oddities, his apparent deviations from the normal in temperament and disposition, but outcroppings, freakish ebullitions of what, after all, is inherent and fundamental in the Scottish character ? Fortunately, I am able to answer that interesting and pertinent question with information which illumines many dark recesses, as it solves many puzzles of a complex and often contradictory

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

character. And I venture to believe that the lineage, now for the first time made known, would have gratified the eager genealogist searching so assiduously for a "potential ancestry" among Highland clans and fabled barber-surgeons from France.

THE FOREIGN INHERITANCE

By some subtle intuition, some dimly-realised sense of hereditary influences, Stevenson himself appears to have felt, and felt strongly, that somehow, from some undiscovered source, he had alien blood in his veins, blood, that is, which did not originate within the bounds of Scotland. He was right; and the foreign blood was French, though the mythical barber-surgeon had nothing to do with its transmission.

To trace its downward course we must take a backward leap of nearly four centuries, not, however, direct to France, but to two lairds in the district of Blairgowrie, in Perthshire, their names Freer of Essendie and Blair of Ardblair. The Freers appear to have been peaceful and law-abiding; the Blairs turbulent, predatory, and defiant. Our first glimpse is of one John Blair, with two neighbouring lairds and a company of fourscore men-at-arms "with jacks, steel bonnets, coats of mail, lance-staves, lang culverins with lichtit lunts, and ither wepins invasive," a formidable gang, invading the kirk of Blair during divine service, in search of one Drummond of Blair, who was marked for destruction. They did not find him in the kirk, but presently they found him on the bowling-green, engaged in a game of bowls, the unfortunate man, though it was Sunday. He

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

got scant time for prayer or repentance, for immediately his enemies were upon him, slaying both him and his young son. That was in 1554. The murder was reported to the Privy Council, and John Blair, called to account, offered to make atonement, as is quaintly recorded in ancient documents, by three distinct acts of penance :

(1) "To gang or cause to gang to the four head Pilgrimages of Scotland"—Melrose, Dundee, Scone, and Paisley.

(2) "To pray for the souls of the deceased in the kirk of Blair"—a piously satirical stroke ; and—

(3) "To pay a small money assythement."

Quite clearly John Blair was a man of resource, nerve, and humour, fitted to shine in any business in which audacity and courage tell. His cynical offer was rejected ; probably the shrewd man knew it would be, and that his suggested mode of reparation was merely a pretty, humorous piece of bluff. What happened next is not quite clear. Perhaps the Privy Council already had its hands full of thorns and had no desire to provoke a quarrel with the militant John and his ferocious men-at-arms with their all-too-ready "wepins invasive." Or it may not have loved poor Drummond, and politically winked at his removal by one who dared to do what it durst not do itself. Privy Councils in that stirring and picturesque time had a way of picking and choosing in their dispensations of justice. At any rate, the redoubtable Blair survived, possibly with a public admonition and a private note of commendation, to avenge himself on other enemies without pretence of praying for their souls. Had Stevenson known of him, we should certainly have a fascinating chapter in biography, and not improbably "John Blair" would have been glcefully

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

substituted for "Rob Roy" in the genealogical record.

With the amelioration of national manners the family tradition grows milder. In course of time John's descendant, Helen Blair, renouncing old feuds, married the Rev. George Freer, of Essendie, minister of Invernethie. How John would have viewed that alliance with the Kirk may be imagined. Later again—in 1748, to be exact—Helen's descendant, Adam Freer, married Margaret Lizars, a native of Edinburgh. Here we touch French blood. Margaret's father, David Lizars, was a farmer in Damhead, on the Water of Leith, and her mother, Isobel Anderson, daughter of Henry Anderson, a "portioner" of Newington, now a southern suburb of Edinburgh. They were all people of substance. To farming David added brewing, and, prospering in both, built or bought himself a residence at Fountainbridge and was accounted a man of importance in his day. Margaret's grandfather, John Lizars, also farmed land at Damhead, but the first of the Scottish Lizars was a French *émigré* who seems to have crossed to Scotland late in the sixteenth or very early in the seventeenth century, and settled in the capital. The name then appears as Lisouris, but soon became corrupted to Lizars.¹ The Scots version, it may be explained incidentally, was long supposed to have been derived from the fact that the first who bore it in Scotland was said to have been the keeper of a Lazar House, or Leper Hospital. Competent authority has, however, disproved that fanciful origin. Leper Houses were not called Lazar Houses but "Lipertouns,"

¹ In 1608 a Lizouris was apprenticed to Andrew Hairt or Hart, a notable Edinburgh printer who receives honour in the *Dictionary of National Biography*. The name, it may be added, exists variously in France as "Lizer," "Liziar," and "Leseur" or "Leseures."

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

and to-day popular philology—quite accurately, I am informed—finds a survival of the word in Liberton, a southern suburb of Edinburgh.

Dropping the French connection, the Lizars to all intents and purposes became an indigenous part of the community in which they lived. Down the generations they continued to mingle blood with that of reputable families in the land of their adoption; enjoyed a varying fortune, rose, declined, and rose again, achieving distinction in more than one member. Manifestly they were men of ambition and ability with a decided bent for art, doubtless a Gallic heritage. One became a noted engraver, another (on the female side) according to a well-attested tradition, won world-wide fame in the person of Sir David Wilkie. Three illustrious Scotsmen devoted their genius to the delineation of Scottish life and character—Burns, Scott, and Wilkie, and the last is not the least successful. “The Reading of the Will,” “The Penny Wedding,” and “Rent Day” are examples of Scottish life caught and fixed for ever in terms of art. To students of heredity this eminence in the plastic arts is significant for what it suggests in the coming writer of romance, who was to make a yet wider and more intimate appeal.

Nor were the family gifts entirely artistic. In science also it makes a creditable appearance. As late as 1835 Alexander Jardine Lizars graduated M.D. in the University of St. Andrews, and after practising a few years in Edinburgh, became Professor of Anatomy in Aberdeen University, holding the Chair from 1841 to 1863.¹ With art

¹ As recently as 1897 a gold medal for anatomy was founded in Aberdeen by the widow of Dr. Lizars, and is awarded annually.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

and science went a capacity for affairs. The early engraver, or an immediate successor, turning aside from engraving, set up in business as an optician, and the firm he founded is to-day honourably known throughout the kingdom.

Until a late date neither a Stevenson nor a Balfour appears in the record of blended home and foreign pedigrees. We now approach the point of contact and interfusion. In 1782 Marion Freer, daughter of Adam Freer and Margaret Lizars, married the Rev. George Smith, of Galston Parish, Ayrshire; and twenty-six years later—that is to say, in 1808, the year that saw the publication of “Marmion”—their daughter, Henrietta, became the wife of the Rev. Lewis Balfour, minister of Colinton, Midlothian. Margaret Lizars was therefore the great-great-grandmother of Robert Louis Stevenson.

Here we have a singular mixing of bloods—the wild Blairs, the less wild Freers, the adventurous “French *émigré*” uniting and slipping down the generations unperceived to appear with all their blended attributes and contrasts in the quiet seclusion and rigid orthodoxy of Colinton Manse. Did Henrietta Smith guess what dower she was bringing to the Rev. Lewis Balfour; did the Rev. Lewis Balfour dream what his choice of a bride was to mean? There is a touch of satire in the fact that the heterodox Louis Stevenson got the traits, the tastes and peculiarities which were to make him at once a riddle and an offence to so many, from that home of respectability and orthodoxy. But Fate is ever the most subtle of satirists. In tracing Stevenson’s life and career we shall have to bear constantly in mind those strange, far-off sources, that mingled inheritance which gave the final bent

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

to his character and genius. The legendary barber-surgeon, the legendary MacGregors disappear, and are replaced by ancestors who are not legendary but authentic.

The Rev. George Smith, whom chance has twice thrust into prominence in literary history, is the Smith of the

. . . cauld harangues
On practice and on morals—

dubiously immortalised by Burns in "The Holy Fair."

On the maternal or Balfour side we trench on Covenanting history. A Balfour ancestor, Robert Hamilton of Airdrie, fought at Bothwell Brig under a cousin, Hamilton of Preston, near Prestonpans, and both suffered exile for the cause. Louise Hamilton, daughter of the Bothwell Brig warrior, made a romantic marriage with James Balfour of the House of Pilrig, a name famous in the family annals and now well known to readers of romance. Through another Balfour ancestress, Cecilia Elphinstone, daughter of Sir John Elphinstone of Logie and Sheriff of Aberdeen, Stevenson was brought into a distant cousinship with Lord Byron, a relationship which may or may not be significant. There was also a remote connection with the Gordons of Gight, in Aberdeenshire, Byron's ancestors on his mother's side, as well as with the "Tiger Earl" of Crawford, a man of dread in his time, and (singularly enough through the Rev. George Smith) with the fierce Earls of Buchan. Even the notorious "Wolf of Badenoch" is dragged into the genealogical record, though, so far as I can discover, with little reason.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

It should be noted that Cecilia Elphinstone's mother was an Elliot of the turbulent, unfortunate border clan of that name. Here we touch the family tree of Scott. Gilbert Elliot of Stobs married Margaret, the daughter of "Auld Wat" Scott of Harden, commemorated in "The Lay of the Last Minstrel," and his wife Mary, "the Flower of Yarrow" still celebrated in border song. Margaret's brother was Sir William Scott, from whom were descended in direct succession Walter Scott of Raeburn, Walter Scott known in his native Teviotdale as "Beardie," Robert Scott of Sandyknowe, and Walter Scott, Writer to the Signet in Edinburgh, father of the immortal Sir Walter. From Margaret herself was descended the first Sir Gibert Elliot of Minto, whose granddaughter was Cecilia Elphinstone, grandmother of the Rev. Lewis Balfour. John Balfour, Cecilia's son, and Sir Walter Scott were therefore fifth cousins, an interesting link in the history of romantic literature.

Of his border ancestry Stevenson remarks, "I have shaken a spear in the debatable land and shouted the slogan of the Elliots." And it is worthy of note that perhaps the only woman he ever drew from the heart out was an Elliot, the Elder Kirstie in *Weir of Hermiston*.

The Balfours make a direct appearance more than once in Scottish history. One Andrew, minister of Kirknewton, near Ratho, took a prominent part in the "Protestation" of 1617, and very narrowly escaped the glory of martyrdom. His son James figures dimly as Clerk of Session in the time of Cromwell (he was appointed in 1649), and doubtless had his own troubled thoughts concerning the grim Oliver and his iconoclastic doings, events

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

which must have been extremely disquieting to a peaceable Clerk of Session. Nevertheless, the politic James preserved an eye to the main chance, and by marrying an heiress, Bridget Chalmers, secured the estate of Balbithan, Keith Hall. Their son, likewise James, appears questionably as governor of the notorious Darien Company, having as associate no less a person than William Paterson, founder of the Bank of England. That disastrous venture cost him his fortune. But the family was soon on its feet again, and a generation later we find a Balfour, son of the Darien adventurer, buying or rebuying the estate of Pilrig, between Edinburgh and Leith. David the hero of *Kidnapped* (unless that honour belong to Alan Breck) was a Balfour of Pilrig, and the name, as I have remarked, figures conspicuously in the family chronicles. There, writes a reverently-adoring chronicler, the buyer's "descendants kept up the Godly and honourable traditions of the house," the Darien affair being apparently forgotten or forgiven. Yet another Balfour of Pilrig, the great-great-grandfather of Louis, was Professor of Moral Philosophy in Edinburgh University from 1754 to 1764 and may have transmitted the taste for ethics which Stevenson fondly avows. The curious may trace certain features of the Professor's character in *Catriona*.

But our first real contact with the Balfours is at Colinton Manse, in the picturesque region of the Pentlands. The Rev. Lewis Balfour, D.D. (baptismally James Lewis), third son of a Pilrig laird, reigned there for thirty-seven years as minister of the parish—a divine of the old school, so called; that is, a strict adherent to Scots orthodoxy as yet untainted by any leaven of German

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

scepticism. The scepticism was to break out like an eruption after Dr. Balfour had gone to his rest. We have pictures of the old man from many pens, but chiefly from the pen of his famous grandson, who was in all respects so unlike him. To-day he gazes at us from his portrait with quiet eyes, expressive of old-world peace and tranquillity, set in a face unmistakably declaring nationality. It is a shrewd, kindly face, not strong, not imaginative, scarcely intellectual, but beaming softly with innate goodness and a desire to be on friendly terms with his fellow-men. As a pastor he was zealous, benevolent, respected, and believing, like Goldsmith's vicar, in population, became the father of a numerous family—a baker's dozen of thirteen, to be precise. His wife, who introduced the foreign blood, is described as a woman of singular charm and beauty. The charm she transmitted in large measure to her grandson; the good looks she did not; for Louis was never an Adonis.

In that sequestered manse tucked away, as it were, from the fret and fever of active life, were born and grew up, as Stevenson says, "a family of stalwart sons and tall daughters." Wooers found their way thither, among them Thomas Stevenson, the young lighthouse engineer, who might be expected to be rather a practical than a fervid or romantic lover. His solid qualities found favour at Colinton Manse and in 1848, when he was thirty, he married Margaret Isabella, the youngest daughter of the Rev. Lewis and Mrs. Balfour. Her brother, Dr. George W. Balfour, "that wise youth, my uncle," to whom (with others) *Underwoods* is dedicated, describes her as "tall, slender, singularly graceful, brilliantly fair in complexion,

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

and known throughout the parish as ‘ the Minister’s white-headed lassie.’ ”

At the time of her marriage she was nineteen, the golden age of romance.

CHAPTER II

THE CHILD

THOMAS STEVENSON carried his girl-bride to No. 8 Howard Place, Edinburgh, a modestly substantial, compact, middle-class residence of the time, standing on the northern skirts of the New Town. To-day commerce has invaded and enclosed it ; but then it stood on the edge of the country with a wide, open, northward view, and an air that had something both of the purity and the bleakness of the mountains. There on the 13th of November 1850 was born the son and only child of the marriage. He was baptised Robert Lewis Balfour—Robert for the lighthouse engineer, Lewis Balfour for the Colinton minister. The subsequent change from “ Lewis ” to “ Louis ” is a piquant revelation of the paternal psychology, or more pointedly of the force and aggressiveness of the paternal prejudices.

Thomas Stevenson, as has been indicated, was a stern and unbending Tory,” obstinately and most loyally blind to the virtues of any party but his own. It chanced that there was then in Edinburgh as “ stern and unbending ” a Liberal also named Lewis. The outraged descendant of Westland Whigs would have no association even in name with the latter-day Radical, who supported William Ewart Gladstone and his anti-Tory gang.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

His child's name must be changed. So "Lewis" was transformed into the "Louis" with which the world is familiar. For sake of brevity "Balfour" was dropped, and Mrs. Stevenson regretted an omission which seemed to cut off the entire Balfour connection, but dutifully acquiesced. In those semi-feudal, mid-Victorian days it was the part of wives and mothers to acquiesce in the desires, decisions, and prejudices of their menfolk. Besides, the young husband had a masterful way with him and was not easily opposed.

In 1853 the family "flitted" to 1 Inverleith Terrace,¹ close by, and again, four years later, to 17 Heriot Row, which was henceforth to be the home of Robert Louis Stevenson while he remained in his native city. By his association with it Heriot Row has acquired universal fame and must frequently recur in this narrative. All three houses stand in the same northern quarter of what is called the New Town.

The home into which an inscrutable Fate, as by a stroke of irony, sent a son of the Muses was in essence the fine flower of Scots Calvinism. On both sides there was an immediate heritage of piety; it is curious indeed how constant a factor piety is in the Stevenson-Balfour records. The ultra-pious Jean Smith, nursed and nurtured in the faith by the ultra-pious Jean Lillie; the devout and exemplary Lewis Balfour, a bulwark of Scots orthodoxy, each contributed a living and pervasive influence. What lay behind the dual inheritance of godliness, the wild, lawless inheritance from the remote and

¹ Recently the house No. 8 Howard Place was purchased by public subscription as a perpetual memorial of Edinburgh's gifted son, and will soon be available as a Stevenson Museum.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

romantic past, was so deeply in abeyance it did not appear to exist.

Both father and mother were shining examples of the virtues and graces (and virtue and grace are not always in union) which most readily procure esteem and affection. They have been described to me again and again by people who knew them intimately ; and never once has a derogatory word or hint been mingled with the praise. Detesting Nonconformity almost as a crime against God and nature, they were in their own walk and conduct exemplars of orthodoxy, social and religious. They were in fact eminently, pre-eminently respectable. Later, as we shall see, their son denounced respectability as a soul-destroying poison, and their grief was agony. But in his childhood there was nothing to disturb the smooth flow of convention and conformity which make ordinary people respected and happy.

Thomas Stevenson, while dowered with all the characteristic Scots dourness and doggedness, had rather more than the average Scots tenderness of heart underlying and belying the hard exterior. Deep down in his nature there was an abyss of gloom which occasionally found expression in surprising exhibitions of self-distrust and sentimentality. Like Hamlet, he was apt to be oppressed by " the heavy and the weary weight of all this unintelligible world." Yet in affairs he was forceful, practical, successful, with a passion for work, and tastes and sympathies far beyond the bounds of his profession.

Mrs. Stevenson was a complete, in some respects a piquant contrast, tempering his sadness with her gaiety, his constitutional despondency with a blitheness of spirit which shook off trouble as a bird

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

shakes water from its wings. To the end she was the light-hearted lassie of Colinton Manse, smiling, buoyant, graceful, defying care, or at any rate meeting and surmounting it with a gay courage that was infectious and exhilarating. She was never known to frown, and when trouble came she bore herself, at least to outsiders, as if it did not exist. Mrs. Dale of Scoughal, North Berwick, who knew her better than anyone else now alive, writes to me in this connection.

“As to Louis’s mother one cannot say too much of her gentle graciousness and sweetness in much delicacy of health ; but along with it all much capability and character. She was generally termed ‘ the angel of the family ’ by all its many members, and poured oil on any troubled waters there might be. It is always a satisfaction to me that on the day before R. L. S. died he gave the annual feast of ‘ Thanksgiving Day,’ to hold which always appealed much to his feelings, and to which he invited a large company of friends and neighbours. He stood up at the end of his table and began to enumerate some of the many mercies for which he had to be thankful, and ‘ the first and foremost ’ was the presence beside him of his beloved mother. That was her due ; for she was entirely selfless, never, in fact, thought of herself at all, and only lived to shed happiness around her. I can see her now, at the writing-table in the east-most of the three windows of her sunny drawing-room at 17 Heriot Row, overlooking the pretty gardens with the round pond and ducks on it.”

It was from her, not from his father, that Louis inherited the buoyancy and resilience of temperament which have roused the interest and wonder of the world. Mrs. Dale adds : “ Mr. Stevenson

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

senior much enjoyed walks along this seashore of Scoughall, and my husband followed his suggestion of allowing the large boulders to lie around instead of building them up with much labour into a sea-wall as a protection against the incursion of the waters, as had always been done, with little effect."

The characters and dispositions of both husband and wife will appear more fully as we proceed.

From the first Louis was a household idol, at any rate with its womenfolk. He was delicate and he occupied the throne alone, in the character of a despot. He did not escape the perils and consequences of the position. Many years later, when Fate was trying him as with fire, he referred to himself half-remorsefully as a spoiled child. Spoiled he was in the sense that he was the object of a boundless devotion and adoration, the little sun round which the domestic world revolved. To this fact is attributable, at least in part, the early and intensive development of the inordinate, ubiquitous egotism which to some tastes disfigures both his character and his writings. To others, of course, the egotism is an added charm.

CUMMY : " MY SECOND MOTHER," AND HER MISSION

His mother was herself delicate, often, indeed, gravely ill, and in order that her son, the sole hope and pride of the family, should lack nothing, a helper and ally was introduced. This was Alison Cunningham, " the angel of my infant life " of *A Child's Garden of Verses*. She came on the scene a mature woman, and survived " her boy " by

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

nearly twenty years, her death occurring as lately as 1913 in her ninety-second year. In the Stevenson household she was "Cummy," a childish corruption of Cunningham, and he was "Smout," a pet name not very happily bestowed by his father. In the vernacular it signifies "small fry."

In those days the mutual, semi-feudal attachment of employer and employed had not been swept away as a ridiculous anachronism by triumphant democracy. Cummy was a hireling, but she was also a cherished and loyal member of the family. Its interests were her interests ; its welfare her welfare. Her devotion to her charge was literally that of a "Second Mother," as he affectionately called her. She lived for him, even, it is said, declining an eligible offer of marriage rather than desert her little Lou. Whether in these enlightened, independent days any successor could be found so fondly foolish may be doubted.

Cummy harmonised ideally with her environment and the family tradition. She, too, *was deeply* pious, with a piety compounded in equal parts of fervent religion and gross superstition, of the fear of God and a living belief in the actuality and activity of the devil. A Covenanter in the bone, she stood for her faith with all the grim, fierce fidelity of her grim, fierce forefathers. In all likelihood some of them were at Drumclog, Bothwell Brig, Rullion Green, or other fields made glorious by martyrdom, and faced Claverhouse and his dragoons, not without inflicting casualties. For her as for them the Bible was God's own word, full of menace, dark with the terrors of damnation, but happily, also, an infallible warrant for taking vengeance on enemies.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Into her hands Louis was delivered at the tender age of eighteen months, and she became teacher and nurse in one. There can be no doubt that her influence was profound and formative, and that certain qualities and tendencies even in Stevenson's latest work may be traced back to Cummy and her teaching in the nursery at 17 Heriot Row. From her came the first unperceived impulse which was to carry him so far from the ways of his fathers and the courses she could not in her heart have approved, for to the Covenanting conscience fiction is anathema and of the devil. Yet affection conquered prejudice, and to the end Cummy continued as she began, treasuring her boy's books, letters, photographs, and most dearly of all his baby caps and childish dresses made by her own hand. At her death a considerable collection of Stevenson relics were sold and are now scattered in various collections at home and abroad.

Her first care was his health ; her next his religious and moral education. Very early she instructed him in the Bible, reading aloud to him in particular the stories and battle pieces of the Old Testament. Close upon the Bible came the Shorter Catechism ; then followed such works as *The Pilgrim's Progress*, *A Cloud of Witnesses*, *The Saint's Everlasting Rest*, Foxe's *Book of Martyrs*, and *The Remains of Robert Murray McCheyne*, the noble, the gifted who died young, leaving a memory that is still fragrant in many a Scottish home.¹ The lights of the Covenant, Wodrow, Peden, and the rest, had an honoured place in the curriculum. From these fiery sectaries Stevenson, on a half-

¹ It is interesting to recall that McCheyne's book, of which Stevenson in his maturity spoke disparagingly, was a favourite with General Gordon, and helped to sustain and comfort him in the black hours just before the end at Khartoum.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

jesting reference by himself, is thought to have derived his style, a theory which the credulous may accept if they so please. At least equally important for the future novelist, Cummy was an overflowing treasury of ghost, goblin, witch, warlock, spunky, and fairy stories, which she told him with the curdling realism that comes of whole-hearted belief. Burns, it will be remembered, had similar advantages of education at the hands of "an old woman remarkable for her ignorance, credulity, and superstition."

One valuable accomplishment Cummy had, oftener found in French nurseries than in British—she read aloud with admirable feeling and appreciation. Long afterwards Stevenson called her reading "dramatic." When he was ill, as he mostly was in winter months, when a hacking cough and feverish restlessness made sleep impossible, the devoted Cummy whiled away the tedium of the long night hours with select readings from the Old Testament. The stories of Joseph and his brethren, of Saul and David and Jonathan, of Moscs and Miriam, of numberless kings, warriors, and battles, how many young, ardent imaginations have they not fascinated and fired! Little Lou, listening enthralled, forgot his cough, forgot his fever, his restlessness, and begged for more and ever more. Before he was able to read for himself, his nurse, it is believed, had read the greater part of the Bible aloud to him three times. Byron, too, had a nurse who told him stories and legends and drilled him in Bible knowledge. "Don't forget this," he wrote to his publisher, John Murray, when he was famous, "that I am a great reader and admirer of those books, and had read them through and through before I was eight years old, that is to

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

say the Old Testament ; for the New struck me as a task, but the other as a pleasure." To that pleasure he owned himself indebted for his directness and vividness of style ; and, indeed, there has probably been no British writer of eminence during the last three hundred years who did or would not own a similar indebtedness. There, at any rate, Stevenson's education was excellent and super-excellent, though it must be admitted his mature work shows few traces of Biblical influences.

The " bogie-stories " bore more permanent, or at any rate more clearly perceptible, fruit. " Thrawn Janet," the best of Stevenson's short stories, in the opinion of many good judges the best story short or long he ever wrote, is exactly in Cummy's most authentic manner. He believed while he wrote, even as she believed while she recited ; and the result is a little masterpiece of gruesome Scots superstition, not unworthy to stand beside that other little masterpiece " Wandering Willie's Tale " in *Redgauntlet*.

Too much, however, must not be made of Cummy's ghostly recitals. The stories with which she made Lou's flesh creep were and are a common possession. All over the land other nurses and innumerable mothers were telling similar tales to similarly-enchanted little listeners. " Tell me a story " is a nursery request familiar in every age and every clime ; for the love of story-telling is as old and as universal as the race.

Cummy told stories that made the blood run cold and the hair rise on the scalp of her solitary auditor, but, as I have indicated, her real function was to ground him in moral and religious principles, that is, to make him a good Covenanter. Temporarily, at least, she succeeded with a completeness that

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

must have filled her pious heart with joy. The immediate effect of her teaching was to develop in him a precocious and impressive gift for prayer, and the recitation of hymns and passages from Scripture. "That I was eminently religious there can be no doubt," he remarks later, when religion was not a burning question with him.¹ In infant years, however, the fear of hell was terribly upon him, for Cummy made the fate of the wicked appallingly real. In the dark or when tempests raged, threatening to blow in windows and carry off chimney-stacks, he was abjectly pious; when daylight and peace returned, showing that the world still continued its course apparently undamaged, the piety merged and faded into something less austere and trying. "As the sun is up again we may lay aside the Bible, Cummy," he would remark, with a gleam of joy. "Now take down that Ballantyne from the shelf."²

Once or twice when left alone (a rare occurrence) he could be heard praying with desperate unction, and some extempore devotional utterances taken down by his father while hearkening outside his bedroom door were long preserved. They suggest the first symptoms of the hysteria which underlay so much of his mature work and finds expression in his correspondence, especially in the large sections which still remain unpublished. Whether the celebrated *Vailima Prayers* are in any sense a harking-back to those early memories of Cummy and her teaching can only be a matter of surmise;

¹ "I was lovingly but not always wisely treated, the great fault being Cummy's overhaste to make me a religious pattern. . . . Had I died in these years I fancy I might perhaps have figured in a tract." (Fragment of Autobiography.)

² Ballantyne was the first author whom Stevenson saw in the flesh—"An exceedingly good-looking, dark, full-bearded man."

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

certainly during the last days in Samoa the exile's thoughts reverted fondly to 17 Heriot Row and all who had taught and watched over him so devotedly there.

His childish zeal for religion had almost a Covenanting fury. That he might preach from the pregnant and awful texts supplied by Cummy, he built himself a toy church. "He makes a pulpit with a stool and chair," notes his mother in a record she kept of his childish sayings and doings. "Reads sitting, and then standing up sings by turns." Here, perhaps, is the germ of that disease of preaching which critics sometimes find a blemish in his writings. The same charge, however, has been brought against Scott, Thackeray, Dickens, and Victor Hugo, and might with equal justice be brought against every writer of genius from Homer down.

To Cummy also he owed the inspiration which produced his first essay in authorship, "A History of Moses," with illustrations by the author which showed the Israelites swaggering in top-hats and enjoying immense cigars. The historian was aged six. That precociously-ambitious work was dictated to his mother on five consecutive Sundays in competition for a prize of £1 offered by his uncle, David Stevenson. Lou did not come in first, but the award of a consolation prize so exhilarated him that, as he tells in one of his many confessions, "from that time forward it was the desire of my heart to be an author." A "History of Joseph," designed on the same lines and doubtless the result of the same inspiration, followed soon.

Much has been made of those childish efforts as something unique in literary history; but such precocity is by no means unparalleled. When he

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

was six Mrs. Cockburn described the young Walter Scott as a "most astounding genius of a boy." At seven Macaulay wrote a "Compendium of Universal History," at eight an essay intended to convert the heathen of Travancour to the Christian religion. About the same age he produced "The Battle of Cheviot" in imitation of "Marmion," and a little later an heroic poem called "Olaus the Great; or, the Conquest of Mona," with part at least of an epic in twelve books, besides many hymns which Hannah More thought "quite extraordinary for such a baby." Those infantile productions, however, were not handed round for general admiration.

These examples (and others that might be cited) are interesting as showing how "coming events cast their shadows before." But it would have been better for Stevenson, better, perhaps, for literature, had he been sent out with a hoop and thrust into rough-and-tumble contact with other boys. In his boyhood he never did undergo the common rough-and-tumble experiences which are so hard yet so effective a part of a boy's education. From the first he was a hothouse plant, sheltered, protected lest "the winds of heaven should visit his face too roughly." His delicacy was made yet more delicate by coddling, for there was the ever-present fear that attends the only child in a well-to-do household that risks, such as normal boys take naturally, might have disastrous results. The possessor of a single jewel is apt to be fussily anxious about its safety.

When reading and ghost-stories palled, the devoted Cummy would lift her small charge to the window wrapped in blanket or shawl, and let him gaze on the wonder-world without. Thus in the

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

dawn he often watched the carts rumbling cityward from the country, his peaked white face pressed hard against the pane in his eagerness to see men and horses. In the evenings he watched the lights springing up in other windows, and wondered if other children were caged prisoners like himself. The appearance of the lamplighter had almost the excitement of a raid by pirate or highwayman. Thanks to the re-creating power of genius, we can still behold in all its pathetic reality that pale, tiny figure with the expectant, wistful face watching from an upper window of 17 Heriot Row. He is gone, Cummy is gone : all who made home for him are gone ; but the picture remains a joy that touches the heart of innumerable multitudes in many lands. As long as the poetry of childhood endures—and childhood is a perpetual poem—so long will enchanted readers see in their mind's eye the little Lou looking forth from his window full of eagerness, full of plans and romantic aspirations for the future

But I, when I am stronger and can choose what I'm to do,
O, Learie, I'll go round at night and light the lamps with you.

Meanwhile there was the childish longing for notice, were it only a silent greeting.

And O, before you hurry by with ladder and with light,
O, Learie, see a little child and nod to him to-night.

The yearning of imaginative, imprisoned childhood has perhaps never been more truly or exquisitely expressed, not even by Victor Hugo, the supreme master of child psychology.

For months together, when winters were severe—as Edinburgh winters usually are—or the cough was troublesome, Lou was not once across the domestic threshold. In the long and tedious

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

imprisonment his mother occasionally relieved Cummy as nurse, but rather to observe and admire than to teach. What Lou did, what he said, how he said it, how he looked, these were the staple of her observations, and she filled a little book with the record, which she kept till her death. It is touching and lovely, but happily for our country it is the sort of record which might be duplicated in almost any middle-class home where mothers have leisure to play Boswell to their children.

Propped up in bed, or on the floor beside her, Lou amused himself in the manner of his age. Sometimes his cousin "Bob" Stevenson came in, and they fought mimic battles with tin soldiers or built castles and fortresses with toy bricks which were no sooner built than they were demolished. That childish taste for building with toy bricks Stevenson carried into manhood. A lady, still alive, whose home he visited when she was ten and he was four-and-twenty, complained archly that he commandeered her building material to build for his own amusement. Another favourite pastime was to lie on the floor face down with large sheets of paper and draw staggering pictures from imagination. Once looking up from such an exercise, he remarked gravely: "Mamma, I have drawed a man. Shall I draw his soul too?" a question which the devout fondly interpret as prophetic.

Though almost destitute of talent for the art, he retained a lifelong love of drawing. I have lately examined some pencil sketches done by him in later years, some gently caricaturing himself, others illustrating scenes from his books or depicting bits of scenery that chanced to strike his fancy. One done from memory in Samoa is a drawing of

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Swanston hamlet showing in the foreground the thatched cottage of John Todd, the Pentland shepherd, familiar to all readers of the Essays. Artistically the sketches are nothing ; but the last at any rate is significant as evidence of how the exile's heart turned to the scenes and companions of youth.

All through his childhood Lou enjoyed the licence of an autocrat, doing what he would, getting what he wished without question, if the resources of Heriot Row could procure it for him. Breeding as well as blood will out. As Louis began by having all his desires gratified, so later, as we shall find, he did what he wished to do, took what he wished to have as if it were his sovereign right to please himself. " If he wanted a thing," wrote Henley, in passing final judgment on his old comrade, " he went after it with an entire contempt for consequences."

He was not always a prisoner of health and weather, neither was he always a hero to those about him. When he walked out with Cummy, prim, girlish, guarded, wearing, it might be, a pelisse of her own making, the sight provoked bursts of derision from other boys. " Hauf a laddie, hauf a lassie, hauf a yellow yite," yelled the juvenile mockers, following Cummy and her charge. Lou made no attempt to retaliate ; but from those childish affronts may be dated the origin of his dislike of Edinburgh and its people which was to manifest itself with so much bitterness later. Children have long memories, and to the end those jeering voices rang in Stevenson's ears. Time and distance softened them, but they were never forgotten.

More pleasant were the experiments in sailing paper boats on a pond near 17 Heriot Row, the

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

visits to picturesque spots close at hand, and especially the raids upon toy-shops, where Lou, ever attended by the faithful Cummy, must have been a much-appreciated customer. Once in an access of piety and affection he presented Cummy with a Bible, having first borrowed the money for the purchase from herself. When he began to associate a little more with boys (the association was never close) there were games in Princes Street Gardens, or, better still, "military manœuvres" carried out in a brave Cromwellian spirit on the green slope under the Castle walls. Sometimes, like his great predecessor, he tried to climb the "kittle nine stanes" which "project high in the air from the precipitous black granite of the Castle-rock." More in the spirit of elfish mischief, he joined in organised excursions into neighbouring districts, where the excursionists indulged in an orgy of ringing door-bells and running from irate citizens.

At times the sport was varied by the invasion of gardens in the character of ferocious bandits. Once, when by himself in a western suburb, Louis came upon a shuttered house, the family being absent on holiday. His head at that time was scething with the glorious exploits of pirates and robbers. Here was a chance to emulate them! In a jiffy Louis was over the garden-wall and picking an entrance through a back window. But no sooner was he inside the house than a noise, taken to indicate the presence of a policeman, sent him scurrying under a bed, where he lay for two hours in a sweat of mortal terror. At last he ventured to creep out, found the coast clear, and made a bolt for home, quite definitely cured of all ambition to be a burglar. Asked once, when he was famous, what kind of a

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

boy Louis had been, Cummy answered succinctly: "Just like other bairns, whiles very naughty." The judgment on the whole sums him up accurately.

At six he was already an enthusiastic patron of the drama as exemplified in the toy-theatre. For that taste he jestingly asserted in manhood that Cummy was responsible. "You know very well, Cummy," he said, "how you acted those stories you told me just as if you had seen them yourself"; a statement she was wont to repeat with the delighted comment: "Think of Lou saying that to me when I was never in a theatre all my days!"

The tastes for such joys persisted, as described with reminiscent fondness in the sketch *A Penny Plain and Twopence Coloured*, written when he had reached his thirty-fourth year. In gratifying his passion for lurid melodrama he spent most of his spare coppers in that stationer's shop kept by one Smith, at the corner of Leith Walk and Antigua Street, made famous by his boyish visits. When his pockets were empty, as happened with distressing frequency, he stared with gloating eagerness at the tiny but splendid theatre within, set alluringly with scenes showing a forest, a combat, and a company of jolly, carousing robbers. "Long and often," confessed the grown man, "I lingered there with empty pockets . . . That shop," he added, "which was dark and smelled of Bibles, was a load-stone rock for all that bore the name of boy." In the literature of the drama his particular favourites were *Three-fingered Jack* and *The Miller and His Men*, a taste which did not at all belie the exquisite artist that was to be.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

GOLDEN DAYS AT COLINTON MANSE

One spot for ever associated with the name and fame of Stevenson was a haven of delight to him in his childhood, his mother's old home, Colinton Manse, some three miles south-west of Edinburgh. Until he was ten he spent much of his time there, and he has left more than one idealised picture of the Manse and its surroundings. Both have changed much since he knew them. Fashion has laid its gaudy, some might say its vandal, hand upon the village of Colinton, and from the heights behind pretentious villas of pseudo-antique patterns look down on the Manse, as in disdain of its sequestered lowliness.

Since the time of the Rev. Lewis Balfour, D.D., the house itself has undergone alteration and enlargement ; but it retains much of its old character. As I saw the scene in its fresh spring greenery on a beautiful afternoon of early May, Manse, grounds, garden, heights, and woods made a memorable picture of loveliness. The Water of Leith flows past as of old, singing a crooning gurgling song as it goes, though the mill " with the humming of thunder " and " the weir with the Wonder of foam " of *A Child's Garden of Verses* are gone. But the water-gate is still there inviting the visitor to follow where Louis so often went. Opening it, I dropped down some three feet and stood on the rocks below, which were once fields of adventure to him and his trooping companions.

Dark brown is the river
Golden is the sand.

The golden sand is all gone, swept away by spring

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

or winter floods, but the brown water, with its suggestions of Highland burns, comes tumbling and racing down among its boulders and rocks with the old, old monotone, musically clear and soothing, or swirling and eddying in black pools below. It is now much cleaner, I am informed, than it was in Louis's time, the mills, three in number, having ceased their work and their pollutions. The stream—it is scarcely a river—is to-day stocked with trout, and the angler may be seen casting his fly from its tangled banks.

The Manse, peeping from its "bouquet" of trees, faces the wooded acclivity across the water. "The woods rose like walls into the sky," Stevenson wrote. To the adult eye his description exaggerates the steepness, though it may well have seemed wall-like to the eyes of the city child and in recollection to the man. The lawn, still, as I saw it, "a perfect goblet of sunshine" rich in shrubbery and smooth as the proverbial velvet, ends in a walled bank above coiling, encircling water. Rearward, yews flank the Manse, and to the right is the ancient churchyard where "the rude forefathers of the hamlet sleep," among them the Rev. Lewis Balfour. Hard by the churchyard wall is the old yew, "one of the glories of the village," and from its gnarled boughs dangles a swing just as in the time of Louis. Under the tree's wide-spread shade, where it was "dark and cool" even in the blaze of summer, little Louis and his many cousins romped and shouted.

"And I can hear them call and say
How far is it to Babylon?"—

he sang long afterwards, fondly recalling that golden time. Standing on the well-trodden spot within

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

the yew-tree's shade, I almost fancied I could hear those gleeful young voices and see Louis's elfish face and bright-brown eyes alight with mischief.

The Manse as he knew it was "a nest of small rooms," odd corners, and draughty passages, as so many old Manses were and are, and therefore an ideal place for play. The garden, thriftily rich in fruit-tree, gooseberry and currant bush, with winding paths that lost themselves in blossomy thickets of lilac and laurel, was more a wonderland than the forest of Arden. There Louis played "tig" or hide-and-seek, or stalked Red Indians with contingents of the numerous cousins, some fifty in all, who from time to time shared his sport. Sometimes, too, in the gloaming they stole with bated breath along "the witches' walk" under the haunted kirkyard wall eerily expecting to encounter an apparition. To-day visitors sauntering in those yew-dimmed alleys, as dusk slowly darkens the glade, almost expect to catch glimpses of a boyish sprite flitting elusively into the gloom, a phantom yet familiar figure from the vanished past.

Indeed, by his unifying magic, past and present blend and become one, so that admiring readers coming from the ends of the earth to do homage find him still dominating, possessing the lovely and secluded scene. From every nook and corner, from every bushy cluster and turn of path, his antic spirit seems to leap.¹

In summer, when the woods are heavy with foliage and the roses are in bloom, the place seems like a foretaste of paradise; but in the sluicing rains of autumn and winter it becomes oozy, soggy, and

¹ It should be stated that the present incumbent, the Rev. Mr. Marjoribanks, does his utmost to continue the Stevenson tradition, and that visitors owe much to his unfailing courtesy, knowledge, and enthusiasm.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

depressing. Lying deep in the bottom of what is in reality a miniature ravine, hemmed in by wood and height and water, the Manse was thought to be an ill place for health. Dr. Balfour, however, stoutly maintained that the notion was entirely wrong. "I have spent a goodly part of eighty years in this Manse," he said, "and have always enjoyed good health; and when my children ail they always come back to recruit." He, indeed, lived to a patriarchal age in that dank spot, and that notwithstanding an early weakness of the lungs which seemed to indicate a phthisical tendency.

All the same, there can be little question that it left its mark on the constitution of his youngest daughter and consequently on that of her son. For all his delight in the place, Stevenson himself confessed that during the greater part of the year it was sunless, and that the butter-bur, the hemlock, and the nettle abounded in its gloomy recesses. He mentions "the gloom of the black, slow water, of the strange wet smell of the draggled vegetation," conditions scarcely conducive to the health of a young family, especially with inherited tendencies to disease. And, in fact, it seems clear that the seeds of Stevenson's lifelong disease were sown or developed prenatally in the dankness and decay around Colinton Manse.

Yet his memories of it were wholly charming. "Out of my reminiscences of life in that dear place," he wrote long after it had ceased to be his second home, "all the morbid and painful elements have disappeared. That was my golden age; *et ego in Arcadia vixi*." His golden age ended when he was ten, that is, when his grandfather died and, as he says, another race inhabited the Manse.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

There were other delights at Colinton Manse, less exciting perhaps, but scarcely less sweet, than his romplings and play-actings with his brigade of cousins. In these his chief ally was Miss Jane Balfour, the "Aunt Jane" of his reminiscences. Mrs. Lewis Balfour had died in 1844, six years before Louis's birth, and the household duties then devolved upon her eldest unmarried daughter. Miss Balfour was a woman of large heart, much force of character, and a genial disposition that made her the idol of her troop of nephews and nieces. In her youth, Stevenson informs us, she was "a wit and a beauty, very imperious, managing, and self-sufficient." A horseback accident injured her so seriously that it left her nearly deaf and blind, but it could not destroy her sweetness of temper nor her energetic practical capacity for management. At her hands Louis consumed immense quantities of "Albert biscuits and calf-foot jelly," and otherwise enjoyed the privileges of a favourite.

But in the midst of sport and feasting he did not forget his ambition to be an author. At Colinton Manse he dictated a whole series of "bungling adaptions from Mayne Reid" and others, which he or someone else had the good sense to burn. Inevitably they were boyish effusions, written in slavish imitation of the authors he was beginning to admire. It was to be a long time before he could rid himself of the shackles of imitation, if, indeed, he ever quite succeeded.

CHAPTER III

THE TRUANT SCHOOLBOY

THE school records of illustrious men seldom foreshadow the greatness that is to come. Nor is the fact surprising. The routine of education is designed not for the embryonic genius who is mostly independent of it, but for the average intelligence which in the fullness of time produces the average citizen. The world is a world of averages, planed down to a uniform docile mediocrity of talent, ambition, and achievement. Hence budding originality, moved by a secret power to incessant war with the commonplace and conventional, is apt to be indifferent, perverse, or downright recalcitrant in scholastic traces. The position is rarely ameliorated by pedagogues who are not commonly prophets able to perceive in present failure or contempt the earnest of future glory. A discerning dominic told the young Walter Scott that "a dunce he was and a dunce he would remain," a clear-sighted judgment that may account for the lifelong contempt in which the genial author of "Waverley" held the whole race of schoolmasters. "That schoolmaster deserves to be beaten himself who beats nature in a boy for a fault," remarks shrewd old Fuller, and he adds, "Many boys are muddy-headed till they be clarified with age, and such afterwards prove the best."

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Scott's literary successor in "the ancient and famous Capital of the North." escaped the title of dunce only by evading the tests of the classroom. With Louis Stevenson, indeed, there could be no classroom triumphs; for his education resolved itself into a series of haphazard experiments, abandoned almost as soon as begun. You may call it a gipsy education, and yet, so cunningly does Destiny lay her designs, that for the gipsy-like Robert Louis Stevenson it was probably the very best conceivable.

He began conventionally enough in his seventh year in a tiny school at Cannonmills, close to his home.¹ Thence after a brief stay he passed to a Mr. Henderson, who kept a small preparatory school in India Street, also close to Heriot Row. There he appears to have inaugurated the game of truancy, which later he was to develop into a consistent and much-bewritten system. There, too, began the real spells of ill-health which were to continue intermittently for the rest of his life. From the first, study seems to have been the last thought either of the pupil or his severely-practical father. Thomas Stevenson's attitude in the matter of education is one of the curiosities of psychology. It is said that when he met schoolboys in the street with bulging satchels he would stop them, gravely point out the folly of book-learning, and advise them to ignore "lessons" and read just what pleased them. That had been his own plan, and, like the professor satirised by Goldsmith, he was perfectly satisfied with the result. Louis obeyed the paternal precepts to the letter. He

¹ It has been stated to me that for some months in his fifth or sixth year he attended Free St. Mary's School, but I have been unable to verify the statement.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

learned to read ; that done, he followed his own tastes with consequences which his father was to find disconcerting almost to the point of tragedy.

At the age of eleven he entered the Academy, where he remained a sedulously idle and irregular pupil for eighteen months. Some of his school-mates, who still happily survive, have given me their candid impressions and recollections of him as an Academy boy. They recall him as the oddity of the school, not so much delicate or fragile as frankly, irredeemably bizarre. Inevitably he was the butt of such crude and cruel satire as boys alone know how to devise. The schoolmaster may chasten, but the average boy remains an ingrained savage. Louis was too tempting game to be neglected. Persistent efforts were made to goad him into retaliation ; but they failed. He simply would not turn on his tormentors. In school life, and in Scottish schools more than in English, a pair of hard, handy fists is an asset which inspires profound respect, as skill in " the noble art " is a source of great glory. No insult, no provocation could make Louis double a fist either in revenge or self-defence.

The normal boy is always a pugilist at heart, a potential lover and patron of the ring. Louis was not normal, and at school was never the hero of any of those sanguinary encounters which sober men love to recall as forbidden joys of boyhood. He never took a bully aside into a quiet corner of the playground, or behind a screening dyke, and there settled accounts in the midst of a circle of urchins, yelling and betting on the result. In a city of snows, snowball fights were an honoured pastime. Louis avoided them with more than the sedulity of a girl. He played no games. Football was

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

beyond him, cricket did not interest him. To crown all his strangeness, he was already beginning to display "queer Frenchified" airs. A little earlier, as we saw, the mocking cry was "Hauf a laddie, hauf a lassie, hauf a yellow yite." Now the chosen epithets were "daft" and "daftie," varied by the half-pitying, half-contemptuous "softie." At no period of his career was Stevenson supersensitive. He never felt a slight or a sting as Thackeray, for example, felt it. All the same, those galling experiences of his boyhood made him acutely miserable, and he remembered them with bitterness.

The Academy is an excellent school, with a long record of successes—judges, advocates, clergymen, doctors, schoolmasters, and civil servants. It failed utterly to make a scholar of Louis Stevenson, though his principal teacher was D'Arcy Thompson a noted Grecian in his day who subsequently rose to a professor's chair. Mr. Thompson was a man of ideas and ideals, with a genuine interest in the human side of his profession, and as genuine a talent for literature. His delightful little book, *The Day Dreams of a Schoolmaster*, may still be read with pleasure and profit for its wit, its wisdom, its freshness, originality, and luminous good sense. It opens with the date October 10, 1863. Louis had just left the Academy, carrying away, it may be, that love of Horace which he mentioned with pride in later years. He refers to his old teacher as "the delightful D'Arcy Thompson," a compliment which at least indicates some measure of mutual understanding. For the rest the school left no impress upon him.¹

¹ At the Academy he edited a school magazine, to which he was himself a voluminous contributor.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

His next venture, occasioned primarily by the illness and absence of his mother, was an English boarding-school at Spring Grove, Isleworth, near London. There, however, despite the wild excitement of sardine suppers on the sly, he was so utterly miserable that a single term sufficed. Rescued and taken back to Edinburgh, after pathetic appeals to his father, he passed to the care of one Robert Thomson, whose little seminary for backward boys in Frederick Street was well known in its day. A fellow-pupil, the late H. B. Baildon, wrote a book on his old schoolmate with reminiscences, impressions, and so-called criticisms. The good Baildon is immensely enthusiastic; would he were equally illuminative. His recollections, recorded late and recovered, as appears, from the baffling haze of a memory that was clearly defective, are tantalisingly vague, on some points demonstrably inaccurate. Nor are his critical judgments impartial or convincing. To exalt Stevenson he disparaged George Meredith and Thomas Hardy, an amateurish method which will scarcely appeal to enlightened readers.

As remembered, obviously with some difficulty, by Mr. Baildon, Louis was "a quick and bright but somewhat desultory scholar," which is tantamount to saying he was "a lad o' pairts" bent on indulging his own tastes. There is mention of French, Latin, and Geometry as more or less congenial studies, with loose renderings of Ovid, which may be taken as a sort of aftermath of D'Arcy Thompson and the Academy. The real interest, however, lay in the school magazine, a manuscript periodical which, with the editorial extravagance of its kind, ran two serial stories simultaneously. One was written wholly by Louis; the other he

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

wrote in collaboration with young Baildon. It is scarcely surprising to learn they were "blood-and-thunder tales" of the most lurid order, with pirates, bandits, and kindred gentry reeking of gore. To the last Stevenson retained that taste for blood. Baildon père, an Edinburgh druggist and chemist by trade, chancing to come on a specimen of the magazine, found its contents so "sensational" that he summarily prohibited collaboration, and Louis was left to carry on alone—his first real adventure in story-telling.

EARLY APPEARANCE

Physically Louis was then what he continued to be through life—angular, spidery, thin-armed, spindle-legged, narrow-chested with the stoop which comes of weak lungs and flaccid muscles. In colouring he was fair, like his mother, in childhood very fair, with twinkling brown eyes, set, as his portraits show, uncommonly wide apart. Some even of those who knew him personally have described him as black-haired and black-eyed, like Burns. The description is wholly wrong. I have examined a lock of his hair, cut in late childhood, and found it remarkably fine in texture and very fair—flaxen, in fact—the sort of hair that never could be black. In later years it became dark brown, as is usual with its kind. Brown eyes are seldom the eyes of genius, grey being the dominating colour, but brown hair, more frequently than any other, is the hair of genius. His brow was "oval and full," his mother's brow, indicating rather quickness of intelligence and nimbleness of fancy, than a rich, strong endowment of imagination.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

And in truth it may be said that at no point of his career, at any rate until the very end, did Stevenson display the imaginative power and scope which distinguish the great masters of his craft. His face was long, later developing into what is loosely styled the "horse-face" type ; and in that respect it suggests a resemblance to the face of George Eliot. The "foreign look," which so greatly puzzled his contemporaries (a legacy, as we have seen, from France), was already beginning to attract notice and excite derision. As the years passed that foreign look increased, suggesting in some of the portraits a Flemish-Jewish blend. To himself in those days he was beyond all doubt ugly, and past all contradiction idle.

EDUCATION BY TRAVEL

To supplement formal teaching then and afterwards Stevenson was helped by various tutors. But of hard systematic study there was and could be none, at any rate along prescribed academic lines. The household was almost constantly in the crisis of some illness. Now it was the mother who was ill ; now the son ; again both were ill together. At rare intervals it was the father. There had to be sudden flights for health ; the beginning, so far as Louis was concerned, of those long, desperate wanderings which were to end in far Samoa. An excursion in his twelfth year took him to London, the Isle of Wight, Stonehenge, and Homburg. Within a few months he was at Mentone with his mother, and thence followed a tour which included Genoa, Venice, Rome, Naples, and the Rhine. If travel be the ideal education,

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

few boys in Britain or elsewhere enjoyed such educational advantages as fell to the young Louis Stevenson. He does not, however, appear to have been greatly impressed by those early journeyings, though the Rhone and the Brenner Pass remained as vivid memories, the scenery of the latter being partly reproduced in his story "Will o' the Mill."

Two springs were spent at Torquay, again with his mother. Nearer home there were delightful trips with his father on brief tours of lighthouse inspection, experiences which he did not fail to chronicle in the full assurance that whatever befell him must interest the world at large. Nor did he miscalculate.

When there was no longer a Balfour at Colinton Manse, the family, according to city custom, spent its summer holidays at the seaside, with variations of scene on the Scottish coast. In those intervals Louis bathed, "Crusoed," rowed on the Tweed—a magical river in the annals of Scottish romance—and experienced his first love-affair with a pretty North Berwick girl. It was not as passionate an attachment as Byron's for Mary Duff, but it revealed to the boy the springs of passion in himself, and was, so to speak, the harbinger of much that was to follow. Of the romantic scenery of North Berwick he has left many scattered descriptions, and of his amusements he gives a racy and detailed account in "The Lantern Bearers," written a quarter of a century later. Then, as now, North Berwick was given up to golf, but Louis steadfastly refused to join in the game. Years afterwards a bond of sympathy with Fleeming Jenkin was the refusal of both to handle a golf-club. There surely he was no Scot, certainly no true child of Edinburgh, which is golf-mad. During a stay at Peebles he learned to ride, uncouthly rather than gracefully.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Nor did he forget the great purpose of authorship ; for he satirised the good folk of Peebles in imitation of the *Book of Snobs* which he unearthed from an old volume of *Punch*. Afterwards he was greatly surprised to find that his model was " the great Mr. Thackeray." At Peebles he distinguished himself by fighting a duel. No blood was shed, for although the powder was real, the pistols were leadless.

THE BEGINNINGS OF AUTHORSHIP

All these things were but diversions. His real work, his animating ambition became steadily more and more literary. While still a pupil at Thomson's Academy he not only indulged in imitations of Thackeray, but was on the trail of Scott with two Covenanting novels, inspired, it may be taken, by the inimitable Cummy. Neither has survived, and it may be presumed that, though probably more ambitious, they were neither better nor worse than hundreds of their kind produced by eager schoolboys. A libretto, bearing the suggestive title " The Baleful Potato," was also among those juvenile productions.

More important still, there came his first real essay in authorship, *The Pentland Rising : a Page of History*. First designed as a story, it was remodelled at his father's request, and at his father's expense published anonymously, when he was sixteen. The edition consisted of a hundred copies and the price was fourpence per copy, the total cost being £3 15s. It bore the imprint of Andrew Elliot, the well-known bookseller, whose son and successor still carries on a successful business in

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Princes Street.¹ Immediately on publication the tiny edition was "bought in" by Thomas Stevenson. It stands now in the collected edition of its author's works, and to students of literature is an interesting and illuminative example of the faltering, uncertain beginning of one whose name was to become a household word wherever the English language is read or spoken. The tiny booklet of twenty-two pages is a quaint mosaic of Covenanting quotations and juvenile conceits, revised, one is tempted to believe, by the masterful hand of Cummy.

A PATTERN OF IDLENESS

From the seminary of Robert Thomson and a succession of miscellaneous tutors, Louis passed to Edinburgh University, surely as ill-equipped an entrant as ever entered its classic gates. Since Stevenson's day the system of University education in Scotland has been revolutionised. When he became a student there was no preliminary test of fitness, a fact which will explain some apparent anomalies to southern readers. Anyone, however ill prepared, could pay the matriculation fee, and by payment of other fees attend any class or classes he chose. Examinations, too, when they came were easy, almost elementary compared with those of to-day. It is reckoned that a Master of Arts of 1870 would find it hard to pass the present Preliminary, and indeed would not improbably fail. In fact, the Universities then did the work which

¹ As I write the news reaches me that in a London sale-room a copy sold by auction realised £42—or 2,520 times the original figure.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

secondary schools do now; and it may be supposed did it less efficiently.

Nevertheless, Edinburgh University had at that time some distinguished, some illustrious names on its active official roll. Thomas Carlyle was Lord Rector, though his Rectorial address, probably the most famous in all the long annals of such addresses, was delivered a year before Stevenson entered, the year, in fact, which saw the publication and withdrawal of *The Pentland Rising*. The Chair of English was occupied by David Masson, Carlyle's intimate friend and the biographer of Milton. Curious readers will find an illuminative criticism of Masson's huge work in an essay by James Russel Lowell. Tait, the collaborator of Thomson, known to history as Lord Kelvin, was in the Chair of Natural Philosophy. Campbell Fraser taught Logic and Henry Calderwood Moral Philosophy. The occupant of the Latin Chair was William Young Sellar, author of *Roman Poets of the Republic* and other works which are still valued by scholars. In Greek there was the picturesque Blackie, who lectured indifferently on Homer and Egyptian Crocodiles, and appeared in Princes Street in the mixed glory of wide slouch hat and tartan plaid. The Professor of Mathematics was Philip Kelland, of whom his indifferent pupil has left a charming picture. Finally, and most important of all for Stevenson and for us, the Professor of Engineering was Fleeming Jenkin.

From such teachers an ardent student might learn all there was to be known in science and scholarship. But Stevenson was not an ardent student, at any rate along the lines of prescribed academic study. The English class, it might be thought, would have attracted him. In reality he

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

shunned it, on the principle, perhaps, that a mere biographer of Milton could have nothing to teach an aspiring critic and novelist. Two sessions with Mr. Sellar in the Latin class brought no visible result in learning, though there may well have lingered some memories of the reading and exposition of Horace and Virgil. For Greek the fee was paid ; but in the Greek classroom Stevenson was consistently "conspicuous by his absence." At the end of the session it was desirable to procure, Scots fashion, a certificate of attendance. With delightful aplomb he applied for one. Blackie regarded him quizzically :

"I don't seem to remember your face," said the Professor.

"Probably not, sir," was the unabashed response, "but I hope that will not prevent you from giving me a certificate."

And humming a Highland air, Blackie wrote and signed the document as desired.

Professor Jenkin, with whom Stevenson was afterwards to come into such close relations, proved less accommodating. The experience as related by Stevenson himself in his *Memoir of Fleeming Jenkin* may conveniently be mentioned here. As a potential engineer Stevenson was supposed to attend the engineering class. As usual, however, performance lay rather in the breach than the observance of duty. To the self-sufficient student the professors were a joke. Fleeming Jenkin he regarded as "a particularly good joke, perhaps the broadest in the vast pleasantry of my curriculum." Gaily confident, he applied to Jenkin for a certificate. The professor eyed him sternly :

"It is quite useless for *you* to come to me, Mr. Stevenson," the applicant was told. "There may

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

be doubtful cases ; there is no doubt about yours. You simply have *not* attended my class."

Nonplussed but not repulsed, Stevenson argued, pleaded, and finally fell back on casuistry. Jenkin was unmoved.

"You are no fool," he said curtly, "and you chose your own course. To comply," he added severely, "would be to aid in a nefarious attempt to steal a degree."

He was persuaded, however, to examine certain other certificates, Blackie's doubtless among them, as evidence of work performed, and on them, perhaps less for the sake of the pupil than of his father, the engineer, the certificate was reluctantly given.

"I am still ashamed when I think of his shame in giving that paper," Stevenson confessed nearly twenty years later, in writing the biography of his friend. "He made no reproach in speech, but his manner was the more eloquent ; it told me plainly what a dirty business we were in, and I went from his presence, with my certificate indeed in my possession, but with no answerable sense of triumph. That was the beginning of my love for Fleeming Jenkin. I never thought lightly of him afterwards." The surprising thing is that he should ever have thought lightly of such a man. At that stage he could not have been a reader of character.

For Jenkin was probably the most remarkable personality then on the teaching staff of the University. Of Welsh origin or extraction, he had in reality what his flippant pupil sought and affected, genuine Celtic qualities. He was ardent and he was versatile, with gifts by no means superficial, for many things outside the bounds of

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

engineering. He was a *Saturday Reviewer* at a time when the *Saturday Review* was a power and a terror in the land. He corrected Munro, the most learned Latinist of his time, on Lucretius, and Darwin on the origin of species. He wrote on poets and actors with insight and originality, and in one elaborate essay on "Artist and Critic," a paper which should be reprinted in cheap form for popular reading, he gave brilliant proof of a faculty for literary criticism scarcely inferior to any of the time. He had a *flair* for the drama, and wrote at least one play—*Griselda*—which has real dramatic power. Of his scientific achievements his old pupil and assistant, Sir Alfred Ewing, the present distinguished Principal of Edinburgh University, Lord Kelvin, and others have written with enthusiastic appreciation.

All this implies an exceptional range of interest and accomplishment. But remarkable as were Jenkin's intellectual and imaginative endowments, his moral qualities were more remarkable still. His personality, despite the lack of tact with which his biographer charges him, was one of dominating power and charm. He radiated energy and joyousness, as from an inexhaustible store of both, and his ideals were those of the complete gentleman. Of his literary influence there is little evidence in the writings of Stevenson, but on Stevenson the man his influence was profound, and, as we shall see, it fell at a critical, a dangerous time. In Stevenson's early life there were two shaping influences very different if viewed superficially, yet in essentials strangely alike—the nurse Cummy and the professor Fleeming Jenkin. Of both we shall have to take further note.

For the rest the truant student made fitful

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

appearances in the classes of Kelland for mathematics, and of Tait for physics, these with the engineering class being necessary for a Science degree and the profession of engineer. For it was from the first ordained in the domestic circle that Louis should carry on the family tradition as a builder of lighthouses, harbours, and breakwaters. To gain practical knowledge, under his father's direction, he spent summer vacations in his eighteenth and nineteenth years at Anstruther, Wick, and on the small island of Earraid, off Mull, admirable training for the writer of romance whatever it might be for the apprentice engineer. He had already the gift of attracting attention, and in remote parts you may still hear old people talk vaguely of "Tam Stevenson's son who went abroad, am tel't, and wrote a wheen o' books tellin' aboot the Highlands and sailors and redcoats and things." Some will add with a kind of wondering scorn, "It was a daft-like thing for the son o' sic a man to do." Even now there are parts in the land of John Knox where the teller of tales is held in low esteem, even if his name be Scott or Stevenson.

Occasionally, however, Louis's memory is cherished with pride in those scenes of his early wanderings. Thus the house in which he lodged at Anstruther, with one Bailie Brown, a carpenter, bears a bronze tablet with the inscription: "Robert Louis Stevenson lived in this house in the summer of 1868. Not one quick beat of your warm heart; nor thought that came to you apart; pleasure nor pity, love nor pain nor sorrow; has gone by in vain." The date is 1899. He did not like Anstruther. To his mother he called it a "grey, sea-beaten hole" of which he was "sick." His landlady, the bailie's wife, was an excellent

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

woman much afflicted "with her stummick," and hence sympathetic with invalids. But the small beer she provided for dinner gave him the "gripes," and he was reduced to green-ginger pending the arrival of wine from 17 Heriot Row. Nevertheless, he found enjoyment independently of Mrs. Brown and her "chill table beer." In a chamber "scented with dry rose-leaves" he shut himself up and toiled night after night, with fearful if inspiring visions of "death and immortality," the immortality apparently of an everlasting fame. The fruits of those secret labours were a series of dramatic monologues in verse which he called "Voces Fidelium," and part of a Covenanting novel, which was probably a blend of Cummy, Wodrow, and John the vanquisher of Satan, with a dash of Walter Scott. Neither effort has survived; but in view of what is to follow it should be noted that the monologues were in verse.

At Wick he had a thrilling experience in diving, and one letter written from that bleak, malodorous place of herring and fishermen, contains a description of a storm which literary students may profitably compare with the later and famous description of the hurricane in the bay of Apia. On the trip to Earraid, in his nineteenth year, he met Sam Bough, a noted painter of his day and a Bohemian of the old school. From Bough Louis had the first real compliment to his gifts as a talker. "You've such a pleasaht manner, you know," said the artist in his gruff way. "Quite captivated my old woman, you did. She couldn't talk of anything else"—a tribute which Louis recorded with glee.

There was also a visit to Shetland in the Northern Lights steamer *The Pharos*, following

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

the track of Sir Walter Scott and Robert Stevenson. In the light of after events those summer experiences are to be taken rather as steps in the education of the romance-writer than of the engineer, though Thomas Stevenson was not "ill-pleased" with the progress of his pupil. From the visit to Earraid may be dated that sentiment for the Highlands which finds expression in *Kidnapped* and numerous letters and autobiographical fragments; perhaps also of the ambition to establish a Highland ancestry, for already he was beginning to revolt against the lowland type as he found it about him in Edinburgh. What that revolt was to mean we shall see later.

AS OTHERS SAW HIM

As the schoolboy had been, so the University student continued to be—with developments and aggravations. He was solitary and he was eccentric, with an ostentatious taste for the bizarre in appearance and behaviour. One who remembers him well as a fellow-student has given me this picture of him as he appeared to the eyes of his contemporaries :

"At that time Louis Stevenson was the queerest-looking object you could conceive. To begin with he was badly put together, a slithering, loose flail of a fellow, all joints, elbows, and exposed spindle-shanks, his trousers being generally a foot too short in the leg. He was so like a scarecrow that one almost expected him to creak in the wind. And what struck us all was that he seemed to take a pride in aggravating the oddities of nature. When the weather happened to be fine—and I don't

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

remember seeing him when it wasn't—he came in a battered straw hat that his grandfather must have worn and laid aside because it was out-of-date. Under that antiquated headgear his long, lank hair fell straggling to his shoulders, giving him the look of a quack or a gipsy. He wore duck trousers and a black shirt, with loose collar and a tie that might be a strip torn from a cast-away carpet. His jacket was of black velvet, and it was noticeable that it never seemed good or new. We remarked among ourselves that there must be a family trunk full of old clothes which he was wearing out.

“As you may suppose, all this was matter for ridicule which we made no attempt to conceal ; but his airs were even more ridiculous than his clothes. He seemed to make eccentricity a cult. He was always posing, always, as the phrase went, showing off. You know what that means among students. We just laughed at him, dubbing him crank and humbug. He seemed not to care a straw ; in fact, he rather liked being the object of so much attention. The more we jeered and giped the more he posed. Maybe it was defiance : I don't know. But if he had any feeling, he must have been one of the most unhappy men who ever set foot in the old quadrangle. So far as we could tell he was a favourite with nobody. He had no friends that we could see. We simply thought him a fool and expressed that opinion with the freedom of our kind.

“In class, when it pleased him to attend, he was the worst-behaved man of my acquaintance. Not that he made a noise. His way was an offensive, provocative attitude of sneering. How well I remember the smile of disdain on his queer, foreign-looking face ! Once a lecturer turned on him. He did not attempt to hit back as some of the lustier

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

spirits would have done ! No, he just leered and subsided. He seemed to think the whole course of college teaching an elaborate and stupid joke, fit only for asses. And the asses did not take kindly to the idea. Since then some of us have been sorry we did not try to understand him better ; but no one seeing him then could be surprised at our attitude. We were young, and perhaps a bit blind as well and could not foresee what was coming. I must add that to-day we who survive are glad and proud to say we knew him. The queer Louis Stevenson with his queer ways is remembered and admired when the rest of us are forgotten. I think genius is very apt to be misjudged in its beginnings. Some of us would now give more than we can tell for half an hour's intimate talk with the youth we laughed at and despised more than fifty years ago, or even a shake of his hand."

The picture is not flattering, but it is given because it is typical of descriptions by others who joined in the chorus of jeers and gibes at the " daft-like, egotistical " Louis Stevenson. One recalls him as " a bundle of affectations, some of them almost suggesting a touch of insanity." The verdict of another is that " he was so consumed with conceit he could not even walk properly, but must for ever go mincing and posing like a dancing-master." All agree that he went his own way and followed his own tastes and desires with no regard whatever to the opinions of others.

These are candid judgments of student days, but it is fair to say that time has softened their harshness, and that in nearly every instance those who have favoured me with their recollections and reminiscences have added a note of admiration for the later Stevenson. " How," said one who

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

became an ardent Stevensonian, "could we mere lads discern the hero and genius in the guise in which he then appeared? We simply saw nothing in him but absurdity because we were stupid. And our failure, mark you, was the failure of Edinburgh in general. Not until others discovered Robert Louis Stevenson for us did we begin to see what fools we had been. Some are not even yet cured of their blindness. As for the rest of us, it would be no violence to truth to take our present enthusiasm as the measure of our remorse."

Again, as was the case at school, Louis took no part in games. Once only did he make an inglorious appearance in University sport, and the distinction was not of his seeking. Town and college were engaged in a good old-fashioned fight with snowballs, and perhaps something harder than snow. The battle raged in front of Surgeons' Hall, a short distance above the University gates. Louis, a spectator by chance, climbed to some coign of vantage to watch the fray. Suddenly the police appeared, and the watcher descending hurriedly from his perch dropped into the arms of a constable. He protested that he was a mere spectator of the fight, not a participant. The police retorted succinctly they knew "that old yarn," and hustled him off to the police-station. On the way Mrs. Stevenson passed the crowd in a carriage, but did not recognise her son, and some hours passed before he was rescued by his father, on the understanding that the innocent culprit would keep the peace for the future. His own account of the incident is characteristic: "As long as we were on the Bridges I felt ashamed of myself; but as soon as we wheeled round and were marching up the High Street I

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

realised that I was a hero"—a confession which affords an illuminative glimpse of the real Stevenson.

THE "SPEC"

College societies proved more attractive than college classrooms. As an aspiring politician Louis joined the Conservative Club and made speeches, sarcastically or vehemently denouncing Liberals and Liberalism, without impressing even sympathetic audiences by his gifts of oratory. Always a voluble talker, he was never an effective public speaker, a paradox not infrequently illustrated by voluble talkers. But his pet society, the one Edinburgh institution, indeed, with which his fame is indissolubly associated, was the Speculative which figures so frequently and so prominently in his writings. For that society he conceived a life-long affection, and its influence upon him was beyond question. It is therefore appropriate that distant readers should know something of its character and purpose.

As he remarks himself, it is a society of some antiquity, and his biographer may add that he has made it famous far beyond the bounds of Edinburgh and of Scotland. Its constitution is peculiar. Though housed in the University buildings, it enjoys an independent existence which on more than one occasion it has triumphantly defended against the encroachments of the University authorities. To-day it is completely autonomous, managing its own affairs without let or hindrance, as, in fact, it has done for many years and did in Stevenson's time. Readers will remember the affectionate description of the "Spec" in *Memories*

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

and Portraits, and the frequent references in the Letters to the happy hours Stevenson spent within its dingy historic walls. Its ideals have always been high and have been wonderfully sustained.

Founded in 1764 by half a dozen young students for "Improvement in Literary Composition and Public Speaking," it might give the impression of being merely a glorified Young Men's Literary and Debating Society. Its members have certainly been young, and have written essays and conducted debates, as studiously if not always as decorously commonplace, as if they met in a church hall or mechanics' institute. Where it differs from such societies is in the quality of its members and the fame which some of them have later achieved. Creech, the Edinburgh publisher of Burns and afterwards twice Lord Provost of the City, was its first president, and by association may be said to have introduced the element of pure literature. There is no sign that he ever had an opportunity to introduce his illustrious author. As the society developed, however, it became in an especial sense a training-ground for forensic orators, nearly all the legal luminaries of Edinburgh during the past century and a half having been included in its membership. It was as a law student that Stevenson was an active member.

Among the names mentioned by him are those of Brougham, Jeffrey, Horner, "the perfect Whig," as W. E. Henley half-ironically called him, and Emmet, not Robert of tragic glory, but his brother Thomas Addis. Emmet's connection with the society piquantly illustrates the force and permanency of political prejudice. After serving as president for three consecutive years, he incurred the wrath of certain members for being an Irish

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

patriot and daring to correspond with France. Accordingly, on a motion of the secretary, one John Waugh, then or later an Edinburgh bookseller, seconded by "Mr. Henry Brougham," his name was erased from "the list of the Speculative Society." Emmet, whose career struck the imagination of Stevenson, began as a medical student, turned, like his famous and unfortunate brother, to law, emigrated to America and became Attorney-General to the State of New York, in which office, doubtless, he was able to carry on the "Irish Question" with undiminished zeal. One wonders whether he and his distinguished adversary, Mr. Henry Brougham, ever thought of each other when both were great officers of law. For Brougham's literary character the curious may turn to Macaulay's correspondence as given in his *Life* by Trevelyan.

Other eminent members who interested Stevenson were Baron Benjamin Constant de Rebecque, a Swiss who had the distinction of figuring for one wild moment in the mad drama of the French Revolution.¹ The celebrated Sir James Mackintosh, philosopher, jurist, critic, who crossed sword with Edmund Burke, and John Gibson Lockhart were also members. Others, a great multitude in fact, rose to be people of importance in their day and generation—judges, advocates, solicitors, professors, and what not, worthy men worthily pursuing their callings and taking such wages as were going. But to the present generation the vast majority of them are not even names, so swiftly does Oblivion take to herself merely local or professional reputations.

¹ Also one of the many lovers of Madame de Staël and author of a sentimental novel over which half Europe wept its eyes out.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Two names and two only stand out in undimmed, nay, in increasing lustre—Walter Scott and Robert Louis Stevenson. But for them, the Speculative Society, useful and influential as it has been, would have no interest for the world in general. Literature is a hard task-mistress, jealous, exacting, niggardly of her honours, calling many and choosing few, but the laurels she bestows upon the elect outlast all others. As long as the "Spec" endures—and its vitality appears to increase with age—the world will remember to its glory that Scott and Stevenson were once members. Scott served as secretary and librarian, and his ill-spelled minutes and odd little account-books are now the society's most precious possessions. Stevenson, coming two generations later, was even more intimately associated with it; and more than Scott, more than any other member whatsoever, has spread its fame over the habitable globe.

He was admitted to membership on March 2, 1869, and as the historian of the society, Dr. William K. Dickson, records with just pride, "is the most famous man of letters who has belonged to the society since Scott. No more interesting personality has ever been of our number, and no one has in the public eye been more closely identified with the society." Early in the society's career a rule was made that no fiction should be admitted to its library, but an exception is made with the authors of *Waverley* and *Weir of Hermiston*.

Stevenson was twice elected president, in the years 1872-3 and 1873-4, a sufficient testimony to his popularity; and during his entire membership he took an active, sometimes a "riotous part" in

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

the proceedings. The subjects on which he contributed essays are interesting indications of his taste and studies at the time. They included, "The Influence of the Covenanting Persecution on the Scottish Mind" (a suggestive subject), "Notes on Paradise Lost," "Notes on the Nineteenth Century," "Two Questions on the Relation between Christ's Teaching and Modern Christianity," and on "Law and Free Will." In debate he denounced capital punishment pretty much as Archie Weir denounces it in *Weir of Hermiston*. All accounts agree that, despite his brightness and agility, he was a poor debater. Among his particular friends at the "Spec" were James Walter Ferrier, of whom he has written so feelingly; Robert Glasgow Brown, his future editor in *Vanity Fair* and *London*; and, most intimate of all, Charles Baxter, Writer to the Signet, his lifelong helper and devoted agent during the years of exile. These names must inevitably recur in the course of my narrative.

Anticipating a little, I may say that Stevenson's valedictory address, as president, was announced for delivery on March 25, 1873. When the night came, however, he was ill and his paper was read by Charles Baxter, then, I think, secretary. The manuscript was endorsed with the characteristic message, "I am strictly on my back—have not turned on either side since yesterday morning. Very jolly, however.—R. L. S." The copy was preserved, and after his death was found among his papers at Vailima. Now, through the courtesy of Charles Baxter, it is in the possession of the society, reverently deposited in a glass-covered case beside the Scott treasures. It is written on foolscap in a large, boyish, tolerably-clear hand.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Some day, perhaps, the society will print the document in full, and then it will be found that many of the qualities which endear Stevenson to a world of readers were already beginning to appear. In looking back he found a few things to regret, among them "unrepressed loquacities," but on the whole he regretted that the good times were over. As he told his fellow-members, they would find it come strangely to them—"left-handedly, so to speak—when you have to leave this room for the last time and shut the door behind you upon three years of happy life."

The day might come, too, when they would have curious anecdotes to tell "of famous men members of the society, and write to the biographers in a fine, shaky octogenarian hand."

After honouring those who "did not come to the surface in after-life" with a quotation from Walt Whitman, he added; "Yes! if we should have here some budding Scott, or if the new Shakespeare should here be incubating his fine parts, we shall all, gentlemen, have a hand in the finished article. Some thought of ours will have taken hold upon his mind, some seasonable repartee, some happy word, will have fallen into the 'good soil' of his genius and will afterwards bring forth an hundredfold."

Read to-day the passage seems prophetic. Genius, as Ruskin observed, is quite conscious of its own powers, however modest it may be in proclaiming them. Did the young Stevenson dream that he was himself the budding Scott he pictured; that the day would come when his own name would stand second on the society's long roll of honour, and that his memory would be cherished with undying affection and pride by all his successors?

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Some such thought appears to be latent in that valedictory address, with its strange, touching appeal to the future.

The influence of the "Spec" was not confined to its own narrow walls. With three others of its members he founded the *Edinburgh University Magazine*, which, as they hoped, would afford still wider scope for literary experiments. Of the eager enterprising quartette, two were Walter Ferrier and Glasgow Brown. The magazine, which was issued in a yellow cover—"the best part of it," according to Stevenson's account—was priced sixpence and bore the imprint of two brothers named Livingstone, booksellers opposite the University who had been "debauched to play the part of publishers." The first number was exuberantly edited by all four proprietors, not, it may be thought, without hot disputes in passing proofs. The second number was edited by Stevenson and Ferrier, the third by Stevenson alone, the fourth, apparently, by nobody. With the fourth issue the bantling died quietly of inanition—and in debt. Thomas Stevenson paid his son's share of the liabilities, and Louis, cheerfully telling himself that "the time was not yet ripe nor the man ready," turned to other interests. With his usual ability to make "copy" out of his own experiences, he describes the whole enterprise with as much pomp and circumstance as if it were a decisive Waterloo, or at least an epoch-making experiment in magazine production.

His own contributions, some six in number, included papers on "Edinburgh Students of 1824," "The Modern Student Considered Generally," "The Philosophy of Umbrellas," "Debating Societies," and "The Philosophy of Nomenclature," a subject which interested him to the end.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

These attracted no attention either by virtue of their style or matter. But another, "An Old Scots Gardener," after being remodelled and several times rewritten, was reprinted and may be read in his collected works. Other contributors were Professor Blackie and Dr. Joseph Bell, the original, it is understood, of Sir A. Conan Doyle's popular Sherlock Holmes. Mrs. Bancroft the actress, later Lady Bancroft, contributed a poem on "Woman's Rights," then, as ever since, a burning question.

At the same time there were other developments of a more important, or at any rate a more spectacular, kind. Louis, thirsting it may be for sensation, began to have the "religious difficulties" to which there have been so many veiled, "half-concealing, half-revealing" references. But with these and their effects I will deal in a subsequent chapter.

CHAPTER IV

THE SEDULOUS APE

MEANWHILE, unknown to critics and scoffers, he was "learning to write" with an assiduity and determination surely unequalled in the history of literary apprenticeships. Other authors somehow "learn to write," but say nothing of the process. We have to imagine how Shakespeare obtained the secret of those glories of style which make him unapproachable and inimitable. We have to guess how Coleridge came by the style of "Kubla Khan" and "The Ancient Mariner," how Hawthorne got his magic or what ordeals Thackeray underwent before achieving the felicities of *Esmond*. Stevenson, genially garrulous and confidential, preserves no mysterious secrecy. On the contrary, he joyously admits us to his workshop, nay, button-holes us and insists that we shall enter and behold him manipulating his tools. It is an amazing spectacle. The sparks fly from his anvil, filling the air; the chips from his axe, the shavings from his plane litter the floor; the rasping of the file almost sets the teeth on edge. It is smithy and carpenter's shop in one, a literary factory where the neophyte may delight his soul by watching the ardent operator at work, with a joy and determination which are infectious.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

At school and University Stevenson was a consistent and ostentatious idler. In Anstruther, Wick, the Island of Earraid, and elsewhere his engineering studies were little better than a pretence, perfunctorily carried on to please others. But in his self-appointed task of mastering the literary art all his energies, all his faculties were engaged. And he was proud, and justly proud, of the result. "No one," he observes, with pardonable vanity, "ever had such pains to learn a trade as I had ; but I slogged at it day in, day out, and I frankly believe (thanks to my dire industry) I have done more with smaller gifts than almost any other man of letters in the world." It is a well-merited tribute to himself. His gifts were not of the superlatively rich order ; but his industry was prodigious and unflagging. Had the ineffable Smiles known of him, we should have another delectable chapter in that classic of worldly prudence, once the textbook of aspiring youth, *Self-Help*.

Stevenson was pre-eminently a self-helper. If any literary tyro ever read, marked, and inwardly digested it was he, and the rewards of industry were not denied him. We see him at that early stage reading critically, intensively, jotting down words and phrases, weighing them, testing them on his literary palate, fitting them into scraps of imitative description and reflection. His particular models were Montaigne, Hazlitt, Lamb, Sir Thomas Browne, Defoe, Hawthorne, and Wordsworth. It cannot be called a striking list ; but a single author or even a single book digested and assimilated is mentally more nutritive than a whole library cursorily bolted. "Hamlet" or "Macbeth" lovingly studied, mastered, and understood is likely to prove more stimulating, more fruitful of results than a

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

hundred "best-books" vacantly read "twixt sleeping and waking." To his chosen models Stevenson played "the sedulous ape," imitating their turn of phrase, their mode of approach, their use of individual and characteristic words. "I lived with words," he confesses. They became to him not mere acquaintances nor even mere symbols, but intimate companions, living entities, each with a personality and a soul of its own.

Yet it may be doubted whether this method of "living with words" is the best or even the second best for the beginner. One thing, with all his intense study, Stevenson had not yet divined that the great creative writer thinks not in words, but in phrases, in images, in visions that seem independent of the mechanism of composition. With him just then it was nearly all mechanism, so far as alert and dainty discrimination in language can be mechanical. This, I think, partly accounts for the meagreness of matter and the excessive attention to manner in his early writings; and also for his long and arduous apprenticeship. It took him many years to discover that style at its highest and best (and style was the object of his quest) is the product of energy and imagination, not of any fastidious or painful search for mere verbal felicities. It is scarcely necessary to add that these have their place in any style that is worthy of the name; but it is a comparatively low place. Stevenson's mistake—a natural mistake for one of his gifts and temperament—was to elevate them to a place of supreme importance.

Probably most authors, at any rate in these late times, begin with imitations. Even the young Shakespeare echoes Marlowe; and Milton's poetic ancestry has been traced back to Greece and

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Palestine. But the stronger the native talent the quicker is the imitative stage passed. Stevenson lingered in it until late in his career, as though he lacked the sure instinct of genius either for style or subject. There is scarcely a piece of his writing from the early paper on "Roads" to the late *St. Ives*, which is not in essence a conscious and self-conscious exercise in style in the various manners of his various masters. Not till he reached *Weir of Hermiston* did he show a real understanding of the art of arts for the creative writer—a complete forgetfulness of self, a childlike surrender to the impulses and promptings of his own imagination. I emphasise that fact because it poignantly and sadly suggests what Stevenson might have done had he not died at four-and-forty.

Stevenson's, then, was not a quick or facile development. His was not the golden ease of the born stylist, the ease of Burns in poetry and of Newman in prose. As little was it the profuseness of an exuberant, urgent imagination like Scott's. His first real effort as a story-teller, *The New Arabian Nights*, was written when he was twenty-eight, and it was not till he was thirty-three that he made a decisive appearance with *Treasure Island*. At nineteen Congreve, whose style fascinated Stevenson, produced his play *The Old Bachelor*. At twenty Pope had written the *Essay on Criticism*. At the same age Byron wrote "English Bards and Scotch Reviewers," and at twenty-four had published the first two cantos of "Childe Harold." Before he was twenty-five Dickens, who certainly did not "live with words," had written *Sketches by Boz* and *The Pickwick Papers*. At the same age Keats had finished his work and lay in the Protestant cemetery in Rome. At the same age also

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Macaulay wrote that Essay on Milton which dazzled and enchanted Jeffrey. These incidental comparisons are not made in disparagement of Stevenson. Some talents develop rapidly, some slowly. Not the rate of progress, but the result, is ultimately the important thing.

What has to be noted specifically is that Stevenson's, if a slow, was a continuous development from beginnings in which he alone discerned any chance, any prospect of success. And being a slow growth, it is probable, indeed it seems certain, that had he lived the normal span of years he would have gone on producing and progressing when contemporaries who had started more promptly or more brilliantly were fallen silent and exhausted. For his success he fought desperately, and that early persistency in self-training for his chosen calling illustrates a phase of his character which events will more and more emphasise as we proceed—I mean his iron resolution. One who knew and understood him well remarked to me recently, "On the surface Louis Stevenson seemed all frivolity and flippancy ; but beneath he was flint." Flint he was in the sense of following his own ideals and carrying out his own purposes with a resolution that simply did not know how to yield, scarcely even to temporise. It carried him through many a crisis that would have daunted a less courageous man ; at certain critical junctures it made him risk everything, defy, as it seemed to those who loved him, every dictate of prudence and of reason.

For the present we have to note that regarding himself and his powers he was under no delusion, however playfully he might chatter to correspondents. Very early and with decisive clearness he divined the one thing he could hope to do if he were

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

to make a figure in life ; with equal clearness he saw how it was to be done, and he set himself to do it with results which confounded scoffers, objectors, and cavillers.

In the course of his severe and protracted self-training he produced essays, tales, sketches and poems all blindly imitative. He related the story of Robin Hood in verse, precursor, it may be supposed, of *The Black Arrow*, blending, as he fancied, Chaucer and Keats. He wrote *Cain : An Epic* in imitation of Browning, and *Monmouth : A Tragedy* in imitation of Swinburne. In another tragedy, *The King's Pardon*, he was on the track of John Webster, with whose dark and concentrated genius his own has nothing in common.

We cease to grieve, cease to be fortune's slaves,
Nay, cease to die—by dying—

is a flight beyond Stevenson at his highest and best.

The poetic activity here indicated should be noted. There is a general impression even among ardent, well-informed Stevensonians that in trying his prentice hand in literature Stevenson practised almost wholly in prose. That is a mistake for which he was himself partly responsible. In his manifold confidences concerning his manner of "learning to write" he dwells mostly on his imitations of the prose-writers he admired ; and it was chiefly as an artist in prose that he was hailed both by critics and the public. In many quarters of course his poetry, especially *A Child's Garden of Verses*, was read with delight ; but the enthusiasm so roused was insignificant compared with the ardour of admiration excited by his prose writings. Not unnaturally, therefore, he was taken as a

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

prose-writer who deviated incidentally, as it were, into occasional verse.

Moreover, in the preface to a posthumous edition of his poems Mrs. Stevenson stated explicitly that poetry had never been more than a pastime with him, something, we were left to infer, to which he turned aside for relaxation or amusement from severer, more exacting work. The truth, however, is that from the very first Stevenson wrote verse at least as assiduously as he wrote prose, and that at a critical period in his early life he made verse far more than prose a vehicle for self-expression. The discovery of that fact came twenty years after his death ; and it is not the least curious incident in a strange and eventful history. To that subject I shall have to return. Meanwhile, in dealing with Stevenson in his prentice days I emphasise the fact that he was an industrious and consistent writer of verse ; and that he put into it far more of himself, his feelings, emotions, prejudices, and passions than ever he put into prose.

It is more than probable, I think, that in his passionate quest for style Stevenson overdid imitation, as he overrated its value ; and that in playing " the sedulous ape " so long and zealously he was actually hindering, not helping, his own essential talent. But the fact that he persisted in face of almost every species of discouragement illustrates again that tenacity of purpose, which was in reality the foundation of his character.

A CONTEST OF WILLS

One result, one inevitable result of his persistency was domestic disapproval, which as time

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

passed touched the verge of tragedy. Literary ambition made a Science degree impossible, and with the degree went the hope that Lou would carry on and embellish the family tradition. Between father and son it resolved itself into a contest of wills, and in the end the stronger will prevailed, as in the nature of things it must prevail. We have Stevenson's description of his father written in later years, and independent testimony confirms its essential accuracy. In his own way and in his own sphere Thomas Stevenson was emphatically what is called a strong man. He knew the world ; he had faced difficulties and overcome them by virtue of sheer native force. He was stern, dour, "passionately prejudiced," and apt to be arbitrary if opposed or thwarted. His massive character had something of the impressiveness of mountains, and in moments of conflict the hardness of granite. Between him and his son it was Goliath and David over again ; and as in the old story not the giant, but the stripling was victor.

Defeat was embittered by the fact that it came just when success seemed assured. In spite of truancy and indifference, Louis appeared to be making real if tardy progress towards the appointed goal. In the last week of March 1871, when three months past his twentieth birthday, he read a paper to the Royal Society of Arts on "A New Form of Intermittent Light for Lighthouses," which won him a silver medal of the value of £3. Thomas Stevenson, gratified and elated, saw in this success the fulfilment of his hope that Louis would after all adorn the family profession. In less than a fortnight the eager dream was shattered for ever.

The blow fell in the course of a quiet walk along the Cramond Road out towards Queensferry, when

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

the two men were alone. From that walk Thomas Stevenson returned with the definite knowledge that the son in whom all his ambitions were centred would never succeed him as engineer to the Commissioners of Northern Lights. In a rhyming epistle to that body Louis thus expressed his sentiments :

I thocht I'd serve wi' you, sirs, yince,
But I've thocht better of it since :
The maitter I will no wise mince
But tell ye true ;
I'll service wi' some ither prince
An' no' wi' you.

The blow made the strong man reel ; the weakling went his way apparently unaffected. In the home circle his obstinate blindness, his utter stupidity (so it seemed) caused not so much disappointment as consternation. Mrs. Stevenson pleaded with her boy to obey his father : for in that household, so far as she could make it so, Thomas Stevenson's slightest word or wish was sacred. She argued and implored in vain. Louis's decision was immovable. Whatever happened, however adverse the Fates might be elsewhere, he would not be an engineer. He would serve a prince of his own choosing.

'THE IDYLL OF SWANSTON

In that life of conflict, ferment, and ridicule one feature stands out with idyllic softness and beauty. In the spring of 1867, when Louis was in his seventeenth year, Thomas Stevenson, looking about for

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

a summer residence, leased Swanston Cottage, some five miles south of Edinburgh and less than three miles distant from Colinton Manse. It stands embowered in trees in a little green nook facing Caer Ketton, the highest but one of the Pentland Hills. A quarter of a mile or so to the south-east, but hidden from view by a tiny plantation, lies the old-world hamlet of Swanston, a relic, it might seem, of a defunct or forgotten civilisation. In the hollow between stands the farmsteading mentioned by Stevenson, and a little above, like a solitary grey blot on the landscape, the farm dwelling-house. Behind it, hillward, is the cluster of cottages which makes up the isolated, primitive little community. The small thatched cabin of "Roaring John Todd," the Pentland Shepherd, known now to all the world, still stands, but as I saw it in rather a ruffled and decayed condition.

To-day you will find no trace or memory of Stevenson in that hilly seclusion. The good folk of Swanston do not read his books nor cherish his fame. Such as knew him personally are gone, and there was nothing in the lank, idle, "daft-like" youth with the passion for "spcirin' questions" and writing in "wee note-books," that they should tell their children of him. Pilgrims come from far lands—America, Australia, South Africa, and the Isles of the Sea—to do homage, and the bucolic natives learn with a sort of apathetic surprise that "a man ca'ed Steeveson" who "yince" lived there did something or other in which the outside world is interested. Some of them do not conceal their opinion that the visitors might be better employed than in "comin' gapin' an' meddlin' an' hinderin' honest folk at

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

their work." What refreshment and inspiration Stevenson found there readers of his works know.

The scenery above Swanston is picturesque and mildly Highland, a place of hills and heather, of sheep and dogs, of little valleys and streams and springs, with seductive nooks of moss and fern. From the upper heights you look out over the fertile Lothian plain, the richest farming-land in Scotland ; and seaward the view includes the Bass and Berwick Law, the latter for ever associated with the most romantic incident in the career of Scotland's most romantic man, the Great Montrose. In summer weather it is a scene which would have pleased Theocritus, even without the southern sunshine and the "sweet murmur" of the blue Sicilian Sea.

In that charming retreat Stevenson spent some of the happiest of the comparatively few happy days of his nomadic chequered life. "A green spot in the folds of the Pentlands," he calls it himself, and a green spot it remained enshrined in his memory. Of Edinburgh he had harsh, even bitter recollections, though softened in the end by time, distance, and the sentiment of the exiled Scot ; but Swanston, like Colinton, he recalled with the fondness of unbroken, unruffled affection. In every man's heart some scene, some spot hallowed by early or tender association, holds a place of its own. To Stevenson, from first to last, Swanston typified all that was dear and beautiful. The Pentlands were more home to him than the streets and Wynds of Edinburgh. There in the long summer days he breathed the bracing air of the hills, felt the magic of "winds austere and pure." There he heard the "whaups crying," his "heart remembered

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

how " when he knew he could never hear them again. There he made the acquaintance of shepherds, gardeners, ploughmen, and simple farm folk, of dogs and sheep and the elementary things of life. When long afterwards he wrote of quiet places and quiet people with "rosy faces and serene eyes," it was of the Pentland slopes and dells he was thinking.

Moreover, to the imaginative, impressible boy the place was a paradise of romance. It had been the scene of broil and battle, of relentless persecution and relentless revenge. Many of his favourite green nooks had once been crimson with the blood of fighting-men. Covenanters had died there, exulting in their martyrdom, and in a last fierce effort invoking the vengeance of Heaven on the "devil's tools," their slayers. Some of them were still known to "walk " in lonely by-ways, bloody, ghastly, and chattering or screeching curses. When tempests raved, the gifted in such matters could hear their wail blending with the shrieking of the blast. Yet, again, Prince Charlie and his men had been there, leaving many a relic of themselves. Here was stuff to feed the young imagination, and beyond doubt Stevenson was enriched and inspired.

Yet more important, his mother and he were much by themselves ; and there was fostered the mutual understanding, the comradeship which lasted as long as his life. Between Stevenson and his father there were barriers which were never completely broken down, barriers of temperament, ideals, and ambitions ; between Stevenson and his mother there were no barriers, at any rate on her side. From the first she was his partisan, active or passive ; now in the intimate communion of

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Swanston they were drawn together in those bonds which, in the magnificent language of Burke, "though light as air are strong as links of iron." There more than anywhere else he was her own, her exclusive possession to be cherished as something infinitely dear and precious. In Edinburgh, as we shall see, there was much to grieve and wound her, much that was to suffuse even her cheerfulness with gloom, if not despair. At Swanston, in the earlier years at least, all was serenity and sunshine.

And in that delectable atmosphere there came to her, I think, the first clear perception of Louis's exceptional talent, perhaps also of his exceptional destiny. At Swanston she began in earnest to make an album of his writings, as though she had premonitions of his coming celebrity, which she kept as a sacred treasure to the last. At Swanston, too, she first gave him unreservedly the sympathy and encouragement in his literary ambitions which never afterwards faltered, and in many a dark hour proved his best inspiration. What she very specifically became to him at Swanston she continued to be till all was ended in far-distant Samoa. A man, it has been wisely said, is what his mother makes him. For much that is admirable in Robert Louis Stevenson, in some respects for what was best in him, he, and we, are indebted to the slim, fair-haired daughter of Colinton Manse; and it was at Swanston when they were alone together, that, so to speak, she made him unalterably her own.

First and last, Swanston was the summer residence of the Stevensons for fourteen years, and it remained an abiding influence with Louis. It

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

appears and reappears in his essays ; he constantly reverts to it in his letters ; it is conspicuous in almost the last thing he wrote, the unfinished *St. Ives* ; and to it he would fain have returned when return was impossible. To think of the Pentlands is to conjure up a vision of the youthful Stevenson, ardent, curious, stretching out, as it were, with both hands, to seize and test life. In that tranquil, romantic spot, tended, guarded, inspired, loved with the jealousy of doting affection, he talked, read, wrote bad verse and imitative prose, dreamed, planned feats of achievement which his quick imagination alone could see or foresee. There, too, he roamed with John Todd, "the oldest shepherd in the Pentlands," who began by bellowing threats because the inquisitive idler disturbed his sheep, and ended as something more than a friend ; walked beside Adam Ritchie as he ploughed ; and discussed flowers and religion with Robert Young, the pious "old Scots Gardener." To-day they are all remembered because he knew them and chose to make them known.

It was an ideal training for the budding romancer, an ideal mode of storing impressions and filling the imagination with suggestions and images. I have said that Swanston represents one of Stevenson's rare periods of true happiness. It was, in fact, the happiest, in some respects the most vital, period of his life. Never again, save for one brief moment, was he to enjoy in its full perfection the tranquillity which to budding genius is as rain and sun to the seedling. Yet even in that Eden, so sunny, so calm, so beneficently formative, he could not have been wholly at peace with himself. Even then Jekyll and Hyde were secretly in conflict. For

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

there was another side to his life, a side which was not idyllic or charming, but sinister and illicit. The beginnings of that side date roughly from his eighteenth year.

CHAPTER V

A MELODRAMATIC REVOLT

ONCE made, Louis's decision to abandon engineering stood fast. But as a concession to parental feeling, parental prejudice, as he clearly viewed it, he consented to take up the study of the law. There were encouraging precedents. Scott had been a lawyer ; Jeffrey had been a lawyer ; and there were other literary lawyers to serve as examples and exemplars. Besides, law was a real profession, whereas literature was something anomalous and nondescript, hanging on, dubiously enough, to the skirts of respectability, and often, if tradition were to be trusted, lacking a dinner.

Moreover, with the Stevenson connection and influence the law might be made a crutch until, in the Providence of God, it should become a staff. The concession was in the nature of things a compromise, and Stevenson cheerfully took it as such, that is, a compromise on the part of others which left him free and unfettered to pursue his own purpose. Once or twice, indeed, in the course of work with tutors (there were always tutors to help the lame dog over stiles) he professed enthusiasm for his new studies, and even spoke eagerly of making a figure as an advocate. But the zeal was a mere momentary effervescence. Nominally

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

he was a law student ; in reality his true interest, his true concern, lay far outside the bounds of law.

Outwardly his life continued to be what it had been, with the bizarre aspects perhaps a little accentuated. His appearance then, I am informed by one who saw him often, was ridiculed by the wits as a blend of the quack, the gipsy, and the Punch-and-Judy man, with the latter predominating. In dress he was more and more flagrantly, even defiantly, negligent. The long hair tossed by the wind ; the antique straw hat set at an angle meant to be rakish but in reality merely clownish ; the velvet jacket, shapeless with age and use ; the foreign look, assiduously cultivated, as it appeared, the lank, loose, ill-jointed figure, as of an animated skeleton flaunting itself in the face of day ; the general air of quceriness and affectation—all this seemed an outrage, a studied insult, to Edinburgh respectability. In the street people giggled as he passed or stood staring in wonder and derision. Sticklers for convention elevated their eyebrows, resolved not to see or know him. Never was anyone less *persona grata* to his fellow-citizens than this “truest child of Edinburgh,” as later he has been called and claimed. And you are to remember that he was the son of Thomas Stevenson, the very type and pattern of honoured orthodoxy, the grandson of the Rev. Lewis Balfour, a Hebrew of the Hebrews in all that was decent, devout and seemly.

Society, which he affected to disdain, saw little of him, but his rare appearances were characteristic. He went to dinner-parties in velvet jacket, black shirt, tweed trousers, and blue tie, as if to emphasise his contempt for conventional evening-dress.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Gentlemen, he said, should not be a travesty of waiters. Behind his back people tapped their foreheads, significantly whispering suggestive things about "a vacancy in the upper storey." Such incidents recalled to-day are the foibles of genius ; then, however, they were the ebullitions of an insufferable conceit, a blatant, if not actually insane egotism posing in ludicrous originality. There is no sign that he was perturbed or disconcerted, though later references in his letters and reminiscences suggest that he noted and understood. A weaker man, a man less richly dowered with a sustaining self-sufficiency, would have collapsed, or at any rate been shamed or subdued into some show of conformity ; Stevenson actually exulted in his grotesque celebrity. As in the face of opposition, so in the face of derision he took his own way, glad, always glad, if by any means he could attract attention.

As if to make notoriety still more notorious, he began about that time to experience and parade the " religious difficulties " over which good people have murmured so regretfully. In his childhood under the dominance of the masterful Cummy, Lou was, as we have seen, " eminently religious " in the strictly Cummy or Covenanting sense. But the religious tenets of an elderly nurse steeped in superstition, however beautiful in sentiment, however hallowed by tradition, could in no wise suffice for an ardent, independent inquirer bent on searching out wisdom and understanding for himself, and testing the foundations of the universe by the light so obtained. Cummy's teaching was doubtless excellent for the nursery, as that of her mistress was excellent for the drawing-room at 17 Heriot Row ; but both were deplorably out-of-date. The

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

world moves, shifting and obliterating old landmarks.

New occasions teach new duties,
Time makes ancient good uncouth :
They must upward still and onward
Who would keep abreast of truth.

A rousing slogan for the youthful hero out to slay the dragons of superstition.

Nor were incentives and encouragement lacking. Huxley had arisen, and in the face of furious opposition had made the word "Agnostic" fashionable. At the same time Tyndall, in his charmingly lucid style, had explained in terms of matter just how the world was created and of what, hinting it was not such an extraordinarily wonderful piece of work after all. The influence of those two was enormous and had curious effects. It forced the serious-minded to think, and it incited the frivolous-minded to levity. The former might grieve over the assaults on cherished beliefs; but the latter rejoiced, declaring that old-fashioned beliefs were doomed. It was great fun to have the universe in the melting-pot, and hear the Deity criticised like an incompetent architect who had made a hopeless mess of things. The young bloods of intellect whooped ravenously; like Job's war-horse they sniffed the battle and cried "Ha-ha!" burning for the fray. Louis, who had ever a *flair* for the limelight, was seized with the seven devils of scepticism. The faith of Cummy, the prayers of his father and mother, the sermonising of the Rev. Lewis Balfour, the creeds of the whole pious race of Balfours and Stevensons, what were they but old wives' fables?

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Being what he was, he treated the discovery as something new and peculiar in the experience of the race, to be advertised and exploited to the uttermost. What concerned him must necessarily be of immense moment to the world. His master, Montaigne, would reduce the universe to the personal equation ; improving on that method, the disciple would make the personal equation a trumpet for calling the universe to attention. His contemporaries, or at least some of them, took his displays of religious zeal as theatrical parade, part, in fact, of the general scheme of the showman. That seems too harsh a judgment. Youth is eager and impetuous. Huxleyism and Tyndallism were in the air like an epidemic and were proving most frightfully infectious.

Huxley himself, for example, though the most admirable of men and of citizens, was nevertheless a sort of scientific pugilist or prize idol smasher. Single-handed he fought the federated hosts of orthodoxy — Gladstone, the Duke of Argyll, Archbishops, Bishops, eminent divines of all shades and colours of creed. By a stroke of scientific humour he turned the incident of the Gadarene swine into a music-hall jest which sent the whole country into convulsions. He disposed of Biblical inspiration ; he disposed of miracles ; in fact, he knocked out the whole "under-pinning" of old theologies ; and the whole system of orthodoxy, so many believed, collapsed, burying its adherents in the ruins. There is something striking and dramatic in such a clean sweep of cherished faiths. It appeals especially to the theatrical instinct, and Louis was captivated. Moreover, he had been reading Heine, and the arch-mocker taught him to mock. We are still in the realm of imitations ; and

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

indeed, in religion as in literature, it seemed impossible for Stevenson to get away from his models. Just then his one desire was, in Johnson's words, "to be a smart modern thinker."

The consequence was a melodramatic revolt against all his fathers held dear in faith and morals. His progress in the new course was swift. First he was an agnostic ; then a sceptic, then, proceeding by leaps and bounds, he avowed himself a full-blown atheist. Whatever may be thought of his tact or his judgment, there can be no doubt of his courage ; as little can there be doubt of the manner in which it was received or the spirit it roused. When Louis was a child Macaulay visited Edinburgh on political business, and we find this suggestive entry in his journal : " This is Sunday—a Presbyterian Sunday—a Presbyterian Sacrament Sunday. The town is as still as if it were midnight. *Whoever opposed himself to the prevailing humour would run a great risk of being affronted.* There was one person whom Christians generally mention with respect who, I am sure, would not have walked Princes Street with safety."

Louis defied, flouted that religious humour, not timidly or shrinkingly, but with studied ostentation. In a set of verses written at that time, though not published till long afterwards, he addressed the priest as representing the sum total of superstition, thus :

Stand on your putrid ruins—stand,
White-neck-clothed bigot—

and proceeding exclaimed :

Back, Minister of Christ and source of fear,
We cherish freedom—back with thee and thine.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Let it not be supposed, however, that Stevenson alone of all the youths of his time in and around Heriot Row held "views" directly opposed to accepted and established creeds. "We were all in it, we young people," I have been told by one who remembers the time and the circumstances well, "only the rest of us kept our banner of revolt hid, while Louis fastened his exultantly to the chimney-top." That, of course, was Louis. His banner, however it might be blazoned, must always be kept flying from the chimney-top to challenge attention. We are to imagine the fiery atheist vaunting his doctrines in the very sanctuary of Scots Calvinism. That might have gratified David Hume; it horrified and distressed Thomas Stevenson and his wife, and their henchwoman Cummy. Others it partly horrified, partly amused. The consequence was inevitable. Outraged and scandalised in its chosen home, orthodoxy rose in its wrath and cast the blasphemous apostle of free-thought outside the pale. The clown, the *poseur*, bent on making himself ridiculous, might be forgiven or dismissed with sneering pity. It was impossible to forgive the pocket-Voltaire, blatantly and blasphemously doing his little worst to overthrow the Christian religion.

The distress at 17 Heriot Row was pitiable. To his friend, Charles Baxter, Stevenson rather hysterically described the situation. Questions as to belief were put to him, and he answered candidly enough according to his profession. "But," he added, "if I had foreseen the red hell of everything, I think I should have lied as I have lied so often before." He owned it was "rougher than hell" on his father. "But," he asked with a fine air, "can I help it?" How could he help it? Was

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

it not a condition of his being to keep his flag flying from the chimney-top? Thomas Stevenson burned in sullen, half-suppressed rage; his wife was prostrate. With a dramatic touch of pathos Louis owned to Mrs. Sitwell¹ he had probably "damned their happiness." Damned it was if misery and shame can damn. "What the devil am I to do?" he asked, and owned himself an abject idiot, yet found something cheerful to add concerning the felicity of being a fool.

The scandal seemed overwhelming. What had become of the teaching of Colinton Manse, of the prelections of Cummy, of the precept and example of father and mother? What, also, of the sacred traditions which produced the Solemn League and Covenant, with all those glories of martyrdom which were the boast and the pride of his kindred and countrymen? To the onlookers it was as if the rebel, in a fit of insanity, had insulted the Deity by spitting in His face.

It has been said "officially" that the only differences which ever divided Louis and his father were differences over this question of religion. That statement, as we shall see, is inaccurate; but that Thomas Stevenson felt, and felt with poignant bitterness, his son's atheistical vapourings there cannot be the shadow of a doubt. He was himself a man of sincere and heartfelt, if dark and narrow, piety, holding fast to the creed of his fathers. In matters of abstract religion his tastes were Catholic. He read Lactantius, Vossius, and Cardinal Bona. The first, probably because he was eloquent in denunciation of pagan theology, was packed up

¹ Now Lady Colvin, wife of Sir Sidney Colvin. (Lady Colvin died while this book was passing through the press.)

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

and taken on engineering journeys, so that a Father of the Church may be said to have presided at the building of Scottish lighthouses. More pertinently Thomas Stevenson wrote and published "A Layman's Sermon" on the text of Ecclesiastes, "Vanity of Vanities, saith the Preacher," which brought comfort to many readers.

It lies before me as I write, a solemn admonition, as it were, out of the vanished past, uttered in the grave, deep voice of Louis's father. If I have read it without profit, the fault is wholly my own, for plainly it is the utterance of a sincere and genuinely-devout soul with a profound sense of the transitoriness of human life. In effect it is a warning against the insidious intrusion of the spirit of worldliness and the perilous folly of allowing the concerns of this world to obscure or blot out all concern for the next.¹ In a more intimate vein he prepared a small document which he directed should be read at his funeral as a message of hope to the friends he left behind. It affirmed the "sure and certain hope" of the true Christian, and the Divine assurance of reunion in a better land. The beliefs thus expressed he held as irrefragable truths, things as little to be doubted as the lighthouses and breakwaters he built. He could never hold with Rabelais that the immortality of the soul is a "grand peut-être"; and lo! here was his son, the child of his affections, doing worse than the doubting Rabelais, actually denying the very fundamental doctrines of the Christian religion.

It was a stab in the heart. His health, mental and physical, suffered. He grew irritable, lost his

¹ It appeared in *Life and Work*, the official magazine of the Church of Scotland, for May 1879, and bears the initials T. S.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

temper easily, and was at times so much affected he fell downright ill. At that time Louis and his cousin R. A. M. Stevenson were much together. In an outburst of anger Thomas Stevenson charged his nephew with the crime of leading Louis astray ; but, seeing the injustice of the charge, withdrew it and apologised. From Bob, however, he extracted a promise never to mention religion in Louis's presence. Between father and son the relations led to frequent scenes of violence. Financial matters were discussed, and Thomas Stevenson intimated he could never leave his money to a son who held the Tyndall-Huxley doctrines. Louis avowed with spirit that he was right, and that any person taking money in such circumstances was no better than a thief. "And a damned thief, too," was his father's trenchant comment.

To-day and in the light of after-events all this suggests a tempest in a teapot. Had Thomas Stevenson been a better psychologist, he would probably have been less pained and alarmed. For he would have seen that in essence Louis's much-paraded atheism was the mere fermentings of an uneasy egoism bent at all hazards on figuring in the limelight. Neither then nor later had Stevenson any real taste or gift for wrestling and suffering in the deep places of the soul. He was neither a Pascal nor a Newman, far less was he a Shakespeare, a Goethe, or a Carlyle, nay, save in spasms and for effect, he was not even a potential Voltaire.

The man who did more than any other to weed out his so-called "religious difficulties" was Fleeming Jenkin. The beginning of their long and fruitful friendship is worth recalling. When Louis was eighteen, Mrs. Jenkin, then a stranger in

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Edinburgh, returned home after a visit to 17 Heriot Row, declaring she had discovered a new poet, "a young Heine with a Scottish accent." Next day, on her invitation, he called and was introduced to her husband. Thus began a unique and potent influence in the life of Stevenson, in some respects the most potent in his whole career.

GOING HIS OWN WAY

Among their social activities the Jenkins included amateur theatricals. Their house was turned into a private theatre, the host acting as stage-manager, and Stevenson, a professed votary of the drama, was given minor parts in several plays. His histrionic talents were negligible. According to his own account, he never spoke a line of his parts properly; but he was brought into close association with Fleeming Jenkin, a vital fact which compensated all failures as an actor. The Jenkin influence, however, was not immediate. As we have seen, Stevenson, with his usual ostentatious levity, took the Professor of Engineering as a vast joke; it may be presumed that in the beginning he took the stage-manager with an equal lack of seriousness. Not until later, and after some sharp passages in which levity was not triumphant, did the acquaintance ripen into intimacy and friendship.

Meanwhile Louis went his own way, which was as little the way of Fleeming Jenkin as of Thomas Stevenson. He was still the eager imitator; indeed, so constant and consistent were his imitations in those early years, it might seem that nature had denied him all originality—even in his vices. His particular model at that time, in conduct if

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

not in art, was the ill-starred Robert Fergusson, whose broken, frustrated genius drew perhaps a too generous tribute from Burns. Fergusson was the avowed laureate of low life, and according to his biographers died of debauchery at three-and-twenty. By some mental twist, some secret effluence of sympathy and admiration, Stevenson believed himself to be a reincarnation of Fergusson, "a boy so wild," he remarked comparatively late in life. "Of such a mixed strain, so unfortunate, and, as I always felt, so like myself." Such fantasies breed a species of fatalism; and, indeed, we impinge here on the sphere of morbid psychology, that obscure pathological element which, as science is now discovering, actuates or accompanies all forms of mental and moral aberration. Stevenson being (as he believed) a reincarnation of Fergusson, it followed, by all the laws governing such cases, he must, willy-nilly, do as Fergusson did.

And Fergusson lived the life he sang. The scenes in "Johnnie Dowie's Tavern" and elsewhere, which he depicts with a realism and humour not unworthy of Hogarth, were real; so, alas! were "the blinkin'" and "the bleerin'" eyes of the "couthy chields" who enjoyed the revels. Of those "couthy chields" Fergusson himself was one of the most abandoned; and the result was madness and death at twenty-three. Human experience proves that profligacy has charms for multitudes who are not inherently profligate. As Byron shrewdly observed, "Many people have the reputation of being wicked with whom we should be glad to pass our lives." A morbid fascination, the result partly of fancied kinship, partly of other circumstances then malignly at work, incited Stevenson to emulation of his model. The respect-

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

able world about him was censorious and hypocritical. Well! he would prove, at least to himself, how utterly he disdained that world and its opinion. He would taste and test life, as his spiritual and poetic progenitor had tasted and tested it; and he did, with an abandon which that progenitor, in his days of flesh, might have been proud to celebrate. The adventures were, of course, strictly clandestine. It was never his habit to go about seeking counsel; and in present enterprises, it may be supposed, he would have even less disposition than usual to consult parents and friends. Occasionally some fellow-Bohemian, sworn to secrecy, bore him company; but generally he went to his pleasures alone.

In later days at Vailima a member of his family complained, half in jest, half in earnest, that Louis was "very secretive"; and for all his seeming candour, his eternal cagerness to talk of himself and his doings, the judgment is true. He could be secretive, as secretive, in fact, as the proverbial oyster, and sometimes his reticence was deepest when he seemed to pour out the whole contents of his heart unreservedly. But he is not wholly nor even chiefly responsible for the veilings, the distortions and suppressions of the essential facts in that part of his career. Compared with some who have written of him, with a fine air of candour and knowledge, he was ingenuousness itself.

A NEW STEVENSON

Reference has already been made to the recent discovery of a large mass of material which, until it was sprung on the market, was not known to

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

exist. For making that material available for the purposes of biography we are indebted to Mr. George S. Hellman, of New York and the Bibliophile Society of Boston. In a magazine article¹ Mr. Hellman has given a lucid account of the manner in which he came to make the discovery. Stevenson had preserved a large body of work, both in prose and verse ; a great part of it written in his early Edinburgh days and illustrating his mode of life at that time. Much of it, however, was of a character which might seem to challenge or contradict the popular conception of Stevenson as man and writer. Stevenson himself obviously meant it to be published, and even made preparations for publication. But Mrs. Stevenson, who appears to have been very much in control, decided it would be too hazardous a venture to give such matter to the public.

Accordingly for more than twenty years it was kept secret. At Stevenson's death it became the property of his widow ; at her death it passed to her daughter, Mrs. Isobel Strong, later Mrs. Salisbury Field ; and from her hands it found its way into a New York sale-room. By great good fortune the purchaser was Mr. Hellman, who in 1915 edited for the Bibliophile Society, with an introduction and detailed notes, the two volumes of hitherto unpublished Stevenson poems, which have more recently been reissued under the title of *New Poems*, and who, in conjunction with Professor W. P. Trent, of Columbia University, and Mr. H. H. Harper, of Boston, issued in 1921, again for the Bibliophile Society,

¹ *The Century*, December 1922. This was the first important attempt on the part of an American scholar towards full clarification of the Stevenson myth.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

four additional volumes of entirely new material both in verse and in prose. To Mr. Hellman's great courtesy I owe the opportunity of examining those volumes, and to them I am indebted for invaluable information on a period of Stevenson's life which has been zealously obscured and misrepresented. I am further indebted to Mr. Hellman for information regarding matters which the published works do not illustrate or illuminate.

Mrs. Stevenson's motives for concealing so much valuable biographical matter are not beyond conjecture. Mr. Hellman believes she was engaged in "the gentle and genteel art of myth-making." In other words, she was protecting and preserving a reputation. Those intimate and all-too-suggestive effusions might shock the good people who, with all the implicit faith of trusting innocence, had accepted the cherub ideal in all its beautiful and blameless integrity. Especially might it be offended by the evidence of amatory adventures, worthier surely of a Burns or a Byron in his hours of licence, than of the Covenanting Louis Stevenson. He was thought rather to shun than seek the society of women. On that point, indeed, it was reported (and believed) he was so shrinkingly timid that it was with extreme reluctance he admitted a petticoat into his books. The Pope himself could not be more chary of the sex; so that, as an adoring critic was moved to observe, "If his art suffered from his virtue, his character remained the purer." The doctrine that virtue is the enemy of art is wholly exhilarating, though not without its moral and its warning to certain artists, who cannot see that vice *per se* is an essential ingredient in true art.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Mrs. Stevenson knew better than ignorant, purblind worshippers ; but would it be wise, would it be safe, to disturb their doting faith ? Possibly an element of jealousy got mixed with her prudence. Those early loves, those secret disreputable philanderings ! Umph ! One can picture the black brows contracting in a frown and the firm mouth shutting with the decisiveness of a steel trap. But behind all was a sound business reason. When he was alive and producing, Stevenson, being a professional author and not a mere amateur dabbler in letters, had to live by his pen, that is to say, by the suffrages of the public he had so long and ardently wooed and at last won so triumphantly. To outrage the taste of the public to which he had endeared himself by indiscreet disclosures might well seem to his eminently practical wife to be wantonly courting ruin. In his later years, at any rate, he had an expensive establishment to maintain, and it was only by appearing faithful to those who were faithful to him that maintenance was possible. When he died the need of discretion was rather increased than diminished. Mrs. Stevenson, who never lacked a shrewd sense of " the paying proposition," saw all these things clearly and decided for secrecy and suppression. But the result was unfortunate, since it tended to perpetuate the myth described by Mr. Hellman, and as a consequence to obscure, if not actually obliterate, the real Stevenson.

His own plea, as made in his earlier confessions, was that he was forced to keep low company because he could not afford better. " I was always poor," he explains, as though poverty and decency were for ever incompatible. True, his private allowance was not extravagant. Scottish fathers are disposed

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

to be less lavish with pocket-money to their boys than English or American, and Thomas Stevenson kept a thrifty hold on his purse-strings. Louis began with half a crown a week, subsequently increased to £1 per month, that rate continuing till he was three-and-twenty. There were secret raids on his mother, but even with the additions thus secured the total would make an English public-school boy or University student smile in pity. Yet it was larger than the allowance made to many youths of his age and class who did not make meagre pocket-money an excuse for seeking vicious company. "I was the companion of seamen, chimney-sweeps, and thieves," he relates, not without a touch of swagger.

A favourite resort was a "howff," or night-club, close by Calton Hill which was much patronised—in secret—by devotees of pleasure, military and naval officers, sprigs of the law and their avid copyists among the young bloods of Edinburgh. The "howff" enjoyed much police attention, but elaborate precautions were taken against surprise visits. One who remembers it has described to me the small flap in the locked inner door which was utilised for the inspection of any suspected person seeking admittance, and the admirable concord of surprise and indignation from habitués when the law dared to suspect them of nefarious practices.

Louis had other resorts in which the pleasure-seekers were grievously chivied by the police; and everywhere ladies beamed in all the bloom of crude paint, all the jollity of bad liquor. In most of those haunts the *tout ensemble* was perhaps just a grade above that immortalised in Burns's "Jolly Beggars," only with city refinements and

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

sophistications unknown in the circle of "Pousie Nancy." To the gay, dishevelled, disreputable crew Stevenson, as he tells us, was known as "Velvet-coat," and it is easily believed that he was immensely popular. In general society his position was one of "miserable isolation"; but with those boon companions he was as friendly as ever was Tam O' Shanter with Soutar Johnny, and for a similar reason.

Tam lo'ed him like a very brither.
They had been fou for weeks thegither.

Surely the most delicious reason ever given for devoted affection, and, it may be added, one that is typical of Scotland.

"I was distinctly petted," Stevenson recalled with relish, the women in particular being "most kind and gentle." Sometimes, while the fun with others "grew fast and furious," he sat in a corner writing poetry in a copy-book; but it was not as an embryo poet he was made one of the elect. If a novelist must qualify for writing of low life by first living it, then Robert Louis Stevenson must have been one of the most highly qualified novelists of his generation. Burns frankly confessed a "sneaking fondness for the company of blackguards." At that time Stevenson certainly displayed and indulged a similar taste.

To make incongruity more incongruous, the "religious difficulties" continued unabated. Thus, while the people at 17 Heriot Row brooded and grieved over backsliding and infidelity, the backslider and infidel was passing delectable hours with his seamen, chimney-sweeps, thieves, and their kind and gentle womenfolk. There is some-

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

thing grotesquely ironical in the situation ; some may even find in it an unmistakable foretaste of Jekyll and Hyde.

Let me here state explicitly that, in narrating the events of the period we have now reached, I desire to avoid censoriousness, which, as Stevenson himself was to exemplify, is so easy and withal so apt to be unjust. "To know all is to forgive all," says the French proverb ; and I believe there have been few men of letters in recent times to whom that sage and penetrating adage applies with more fitness than to Robert Louis Stevenson. Fortunately for us all, the final question is not how much there is to blame, but how much there may be to praise ; and at the Grand Assize the Supreme Judge's "Well done !" may be bestowed more warmly on some who have been guilty of great sins than on many who have been negatively righteous. My task, at all events, is not to sit in judgment, neither is it to point a moral, though if the facts be truly presented, the moral will not be lacking. To peep and pry into the dark corners of the life of man or woman merely to gratify the prurient-minded is a despicable business and one which in no circumstances whatever would I undertake.

Usually it would not be worth while. In the case of ordinary men, both the good and the evil they do are buried with them and soon forgotten. A kindly Oblivion takes them to herself in eternal forgetfulness. It is otherwise with those who in any way play memorable parts on the world's stage, especially such as leave permanent memorials for the benefit and the pleasure of mankind. One of the penalties of fame is that it destroys privacy. The famous man is public property, and the public,

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

having, so to speak, paid its money, has a natural and legitimate desire to learn the facts of his career and character—in the old phrase, to know what manner of man he is. No reader of sense, certainly none who has any knowledge of the world and human life, will expect him to be perfect. In the end it is the balance of qualities, debit or credit, that matters. If Robert Louis Stevenson in his youth sowed wild oats with a somewhat lavish hand, did not Augustine and certain other eminent saints do the same? Even Wordsworth, as we have lately been discovering, had incidents in his early life which make the moralist blush for the aberrations of human nature, and a little also for its hypocrisies. Yet who is to be the judge? In all such matters—

One part must still be greatly dark.
The moving why they do it?

That momentous “why?” is the grand crux in conduct; and the professed moralist is of all people perhaps least qualified to solve and explain its mystery. In trying to understand Robert Louis Stevenson, several vital influences which do not always operate in men’s lives have to be borne in mind.

Two main factors dominate and determine human destiny—heredity and environment, in other words, “tendency” and the impact of circumstance. The first, being basic, aboriginal, nourishing the roots and setting the springs of temperament and character, is the cardinal and elemental force. In the most literal sense “the dead still rule our spirits from their urns.” The second, while external and seemingly accidental,

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

s nevertheless vitally potent, to shape, control, and even coerce. When by a happy chance the two forces operate with some degree of unison, harmonious development, which in essence is happiness, may be predicated for the individual. When, as so often happens, particularly when there is any special gift, any departure from the normal, they clash and oppose, then there is peril of disaster and tragedy.

We have seen the many contradictory elements which were blended in Stevenson's ancestry, elements of which he was himself unaware, though as agents of fate they moved and worked strongly in his blood. To appreciate their full effect—that is, to see and understand Robert Louis Stevenson as he appeared to his fellow-citizens in Edinburgh while he was still among them—it is necessary to glance briefly at the society into which, as by a satiric freak of destiny, he was cast.

VICTORIAN RELIGIOSITY

The unctuous smugness of the mid-Victorian era has often been remarked. Carlyle in apocalyptic style might cry "woe, woe," might denounce shams and simulacra, invoke the Eternal Verities and point menacingly to Avernus; he was but a voice crying in the wilderness. Matthew Arnold's stall-fed, self-righteous Phillistine possessed the field and pocketed the revenues, with a grand air of patronising High Providence. Church and State were vastly at ease in a Zion of roast beef and port wine, lapsing, though they did not know it, into the lethargy of fatty degeneration. There were

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

little wars in the Crimea, in India, in Africa, but, despite the agitations of Florence Nightingale and others, they were mere splashes or ripples on the calm of a measureless sea of peace. Beyond the Atlantic Lincoln was gloriously fighting the battle of freedom, and England, strangely blind, found the hydra-struggle no more than "the burning of a dirty chimney." As yet there were no premonitions of the Great War, which, like a universal earthquake, was to make havoc of pharasaical creeds and smooth prophecies, by tearing up foundations that were thought to be, like the hills, everlasting. South of the Tweed an inert religion dozed supinely on forms and ceremonies, on Church Congresses, on saccharine assurances of the universal brotherhood of man and the imminent advent of the millennium. Like the master satirists they are, Time and Fate have shown how much those predictions and assurances were worth.

North of the Tweed, where character shares the austerities of nature, an obstinate Calvinism still pervaded the land like an atmosphere. Sunday was a day of high penance, as if the sins of six days were to be expiated in a batch by intensified self-torment on the seventh. "Truly the Pharisaean Sabbath and mode of disarming Almighty wrath by something better than the *sécret pour lui plaire* is getting quite odious to me," wrote Carlyle. All manner of recreation was forbidden, and the family, sternly summoned by its head, devoted itself gloomily to a contemplation of the Wrath to come. Everywhere the Shorter Catechism, that ingeniously-devised metaphysical torture of Scottish youth, was brought forth for the study and recitation of the terrors of eternal punishment. Laugh-

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

ter, joy, gaiety were frowned down as blasphemous indecencies. Saturday night might and did resound with "Willie Brewed a Peck O' Maut," with the exhilarating sentiment "Freedom and whisky gang thegither, tak' aff yer dram," and its inevitable and delicious accompaniment that—

The sweetest hours that e'er I spent
Were spent among the lasses O.

But the Sabbath must be observed with the lowering countenance of doom. Minatory prayers and hour-long sermons, reeking of the pit, crowned the dismal experience. And at last the day of dread ended, sensitive, imaginative children lay down shuddering (if they were not already exhausted by terror) to draw the bedclothes over their heads in order to hide from an angry avenging Deity. In that sulphurous, overcharged atmosphere the God of Love was hardly ever allowed to show His face. It was always the God who said, "Vengeance is Mine, I will repay."

In all this the enlightened reader, living outside the bounds of Scotland, perceives something of black fanaticism, something, it may be, of pharisaical hypocrisy. I beg of him not to judge too hastily, nor forget the binding compelling force of tradition. The spirit of John Knox and the Covenanters was still potent, though mercifully softened by the large humanity of Burns. "The Twa Herds," "The Kirk's Alarm," and similar pieces pricked some portentous bubbles and freed the inhibited, imprisoned spirit of laughter. Still more pointedly "Holy Willie's Prayer" struck at the very roots of Calvinism, satirising it with a deadliness of effect probably unparalleled in literature.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

The snake, however, was scotched, not killed. Lamed and maimed, the stricken creed nevertheless survived to remind all whom it might concern that there was still "a hangman's whip" for the rebel and the backslider. It was never the religion of the heart or the imagination; some critics hold it is not even the religion of reason. But it was fixed in the heart's core of the Scottish people, often driven home by sword or pike, and abode there like a king in his citadel, assailed yet defying assaults.

We peep here into the deep well of psychology which determines the character as well as the conduct of a nation. With a perfervid, often a flaming, love of Liberalism, the Scot is yet an ingrained Conservative; so that Jenny Geddes and her stool become to him a sacred religious symbol. "What!" cried Jenny, or another, in the High Kirk of St. Giles, "say mass at my lug?" And whiz went the stool, marking an epoch in the religious history of Scotland. Jenny had many doughty followers, so many that Calvin remained and remains regnant. Thus it came that, in the mid-time of Victoria, what had been continued in essentials to be. It was, in fact, an era of hard creeds, hard drinking, and amazing laxities, of grim piety, and immoralities so gross that at times the records of the Registrar-General read like summaries of pornographic novels. Into that queer, anomalous element of piety, gloom, drink, and lubricity was thrust the gay, elfish, scoffing, laughing author of *The New Arabian Nights*. The incongruity is glaring. Puck in such a situation could scarcely have been less in his element; and what would certainly have befallen Puck actually did befall Robert Louis Stevenson.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

One effect was a sense of dreadful isolation. He was unutterably, pathetically lonely. In early youth he had not, so far as I can discover, a single friend of real intimacy, that is, one with whom he could unreservedly exchange confidences and be sure of understanding. Hence he was thrown back on himself, made introspective, secretive, and furtive. Besides, there can be little doubt he was beginning to be conscious of what Cleopatra in the crisis of her fate calls "immortal longings," the longings, in his case, of a vague, uneasy, but very real ambition, and a curiosity regarding things which had not yet "swum within his ken."

One of his favourite diversions was to hang about the North Bridge to watch the southern-bound trains and picture to himself the land of romance, of sunshine, of wonder and bustle whither they were bound. Other imaginative boys have done the same, and taking heart from the faculty of self-help, have gone forth into that wonderland. He was fond, also, of going off by himself to the Calton Cemetery and there brooding and moping miserably. There is no reason whatever to doubt that those moods and yearnings were perfectly genuine, and, being so, they may be taken as deeply symptomatic. There was something, something shadowy, ill-defined even to himself, which Edinburgh could not and did not give him, and he was miserable. Morally, at least, it would have been good for him just then had he been compelled to earn his living by sheer hard, practical work, as other youths, other authors have had to do. But he had long hours of idleness and vacancy, with the boredom, the *ennui*, the temptations which are the inevitable result. Edinburgh was dull, uncongenial, censorious in

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

its methods, and as he thought, hypocritical in its practice. He bore for a little while and then openly revolted.

The immediate effect was to make his isolation in society more decisive and desolate. Even such friends and acquaintances as he had forsook him—with one notable exception. It is related that the prudes and Holy Willies of Dumfries passed Burns in the street with uplifted noses and averted eyes, because he was not as they were. In his native Edinburgh, Robert Louis Stevenson had the same humiliating experience. Some old people who clearly remember the circumstances inform me that he was regarded as a social pariah. Charity might suppose him mad and therefore irresponsible; but puritanic convention could not condone his conduct. In plain language he was ostracised. "People just turned their backs on him," one informant told me. "Not that they were squeamish, but they had their own reputations to think of." Their own reputations to think of! Has prudence ever shone with a more celestial light? To be seen with Louis Stevenson was to be suspect, nay, to be already defiled by touching pitch. Some of his characteristic outbursts, and especially certain passages in his famous *Damien* letter are to be traced back to his own bitter experiences at that time and the cankering thoughts they left. Like corrosive acid they burned into his very soul, leaving a fierce hatred of sanctimonious hypocrisy, a fierce contempt for the cautious, calculating self-interest which does the seemingly right, not because it is beautiful or virtuous, but solely because it pays. It was in that spirit of scorn he stigmatised Respectability as "the deadliest gag and wet-blanket that can be laid on a

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

man," as in a yet bitterer spirit of both scorn and revolt he wrote :

O fine, religious, decent folk
In virtues flaunting gold and scarlet,
I sneer between two puffs of smoke,
Give me the publican and harlot.

Meanwhile condemnation, derision, desertion, acting not as deterrents but as irritants and incentives, sent him the more swiftly along the downward slopes of the primrose path. Puritanical Edinburgh, affecting virtues it did not possess, might elevate its eyebrows and shake its sapient head in horror. He did not care. He would go his own way, and he did, with an exhilarating air of disdain and defiance.

THE HIGHLAND LASSIE

In their love-affairs men of genius are very much as ordinary mortals—save in one important particular. The genius may, and often does, confer immortality on his mistress ; and thereby unfolds and illustrates his own character. Catullus has made Lesbia immortal, and in so doing has revealed himself. Burns's Jean, Mary, and Peggy will live as long as literature, and serve as a perpetual glass in which the world may behold their lover. Stevenson, somewhat more reticent or, it may be, less gifted than some of his predecessors in the amatory art, has not conferred a like brilliant distinction either on his " Claire " or others that followed her, so that they do not serve so effectually as a mirror in which posterity may see their lover. Some who pretend to unfold his intimate

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

life take no note either of "Claire" or of certain successors, an omission due perhaps to ignorance, perhaps to something else; others pass them by with a murmur of mingled astonishment and disapproval and a childish reference to "innocent Bohemianism," while some would deny their very existence. Such questionable persons must always be a disconcerting fact in the history of a saint, or at any rate one posed as a model for ingenuous youth.

Unfortunately for the myth-makers, Stevenson himself is a witness against them. As has already been noted, it was only by chance that even he was allowed to speak and reveal something of his real life and emotions at a time of stress and passion. But he has spoken, and the graven image of the idolaters is not merely defeatured, it is shivered to atoms. Henley was right; their Stevenson is not the Stevenson of reality at all. After all the evasions, distortions, suppressions, and mawkish insincerities, the fresh material rescued by Mr. Hellman and made accessible by the Bibliophile Society of Boston comes like a searchlight disclosing a mass of sedulously-hidden truths. I may say that several people still alive knew a great deal about the youthful Stevenson's escapades, his unhappiness in Edinburgh and its causes, but for most part either remained silent or merely hinted their knowledge. To them recent revelations have been no surprise; indeed, to some of them the question was, how long would disclosures be delayed? Now they feel at liberty to speak more freely, and to them I am indebted for many particulars not included even in the newly-discovered matter, yet harmonising with and supplementing it. In no case has there been contradiction. That

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

matter is a most illuminative guide to the realities of Stevenson's student days, when he was thought by innocent people to have been wholly engrossed in religion. It is all valuable ; but, as Mr. Hellman justly remarks, it is " especially in the lyrics of tempestuous youth that the poet speaks to, as well as out of, his own heart." The whole is a priceless piece of self-revelation.

Several of Stevenson's early loves are mirrored there. " Claire," the first and perhaps the chief of them, appears to-day a dim, shrouded figure, hovering ghost-like on the edge of the vanished past, but refusing, as it were, to go. In the early seventies, however, she walked the streets of Edinburgh a creature of indubitable flesh and blood ; and for Stevenson a very vital, very passionate reality. Mr. Hellman thinks we shall never know positively who she was.¹ Her identity, indeed, her looks, her manner, her warm, breathing essential self we cannot now recover. Time has swallowed her, gently, compassionately, obliterating alike her failings and virtues. Yet because of him certain memories of her remain. It may be stated with certainty that she did not appear at church meetings nor in polite drawing-rooms, and was in no way whatever *persona grata* to that superior, respectable section of society which Stevenson, largely for her sake, defied and contemned.

Her name, I have been able to discover was not " Claire," that being in the most literal sense a *nom de guerre*. She was a Highland girl and her name was Highland, Kate Drummond. Have

¹ Since writing his article on " The Stevenson Myth " he has " been informed on good authority that ' Claire ' was the daughter of a blacksmith." As we shall see, however, Mr. Hellman's authority has misled him.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

we here a possible and partial explanation of Stevenson's love for the Highlands and his eagerness to establish a Highland ancestry? It is not at all unlikely. The acquaintance began dubiously enough in the purlieu of Calton Hill and Leith Street, a notorious quarter in those days. An eminent Scottish judge has recently described the changes which have taken place in Edinburgh within his memory. "People of the present day can hardly realise," he writes, "what I quite well remember, that fifty years ago there was open vice in Edinburgh flaunted in the public gaze. There were certain streets within two hundred yards of Princes Street in which a number of houses were as openly and distinctly houses of ill-fame as certain shops in Lady Lawson Street are now old-furniture shops."¹ That was the Edinburgh that in holy rage judged and condemned Robert Louis Stevenson for loose living.

How "Claire" drifted into its disreputable haunts from the purity of the Highlands may be conjectured, but is not known. Probably hers was the old story of a beautiful girlhood, a betrayal of innocence, and a tragic end. That she brought with her into those noisome dens something of the charm of her race, something of the pure air and wholesomeness of her native hills, there is every reason to believe. In all likelihood she had little or nothing in common with those about her, those with whom she was forced to associate—except misfortune. She was very young, and is reported to have been noted for her beauty. She has been described to me by one who saw her as slim and dark, very trim and neat, with jet-black hair and a complexion that needed no cosmetics to make it

¹ Lord Sands in the *Juridical Review*, June 1923.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

rosy and alluring. Stevenson was scarcely twenty at the time of their meeting—which was as casual as such meetings are apt to be. The result was a passionate love-romance, as passionate, perhaps, as anything in the annals of literature. In his famous sonnet, now threadbare by much repetition, W. E. Henley, who knew the young Stevenson to the core, wrote of “the lover and the sensualist.” The description is not untrue. Yet it would be an utter mistake to suppose that the attraction for Louis just then in the Edinburgh underworld was wholly or mainly physical and sensual.

What quality, what feminine grace and charm in “Claire” caught and held his roving and rather volatile affection? In those sordid resorts there were other girls, unblushing “daughters of Venus,” ready enough with their appeal to primitive man, and some of them did Stevenson a lasting injury. But “Claire” alone inspired and kept his love. What did he find in her? Was she clever? Did she alone understand and appreciate him? Did she alone give him the sympathy which is more than wine to the weary and meat to the starving? Had she the indefinable *something* which his questing, dissatisfied heart craved? When others were contemptuous and disparaging or downright hostile, when his father scowled and his mother shed tears of despair over him, did he fly to the arms of “Claire” as to a sure refuge? Certainly he went to her arms. She may well have been his “chum,” his confidante, his inspirer, for just then he had no other.

Possibly, too, she told him Highland stories, with the quaint, rich turns of phrase and the soft musical cadence which are the heritage of the Gael—stories of Highland clans, of lost causes and impossible

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

loyalties, of love, daring, and adventure, which both melted and fired. And she may also have sung to him (for they were much together) some of the haunting songs of her girlhood, to be echoed later in "Over the Sea to Skye" and other pieces. A notable characteristic of genius is its extreme sensitiveness to impressions and its extraordinary eagerness of response when impressed. Moreover, there were doubtless many hours when, like Scott's romantic outlaw, she purposely forgot what once she was nor thought what she was now, and that then she rose into real comradeship; or, what is perhaps more likely, she may have been just soft and clinging, with an infinite capacity for admiration and hero-worship. Whatever her qualities, graces, and disposition, she touched a deep responsive chord in her lover's heart. Some of the poems which he was so assiduously writing in copy-books were addressed to her or commemorated the happiness she gave him. In one significant piece there are allusions to a child which was never born, and in fact, if "Claire" did not set him beside Burns and Byron in the "Poetica Erotica" of his country, she gave him many hours of ardent, headlong passion.

Let me repeat a warning against misconception and injustice. Because the surroundings were sordid and degrading, it would be an entire error to conclude that the relations of Louis and "Claire" were necessarily of the same character. There is clear evidence, indeed, to the contrary. "Claire" was doubtless an "unfortunate," a "poor windle straw on the roaring pool of time"; but in misfortune she must have preserved something of native sweetness and goodness, something peculiar to herself and in no way part of her environment.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

It is possible she even saved her lover from worse things—from the fate, for instance, which overtook his model Fergusson—that, discerning something of his gifts and his better nature, she set herself in that murky atmosphere to protect him. A woman's love and devotion are capable of such things. Possibly, too, she thought that by clinging to him she could save herself, escape from the polluting influences under which she had fallen. There are not wanting signs that she still kept some of the ideals of her girlhood in the Highlands, and in her heart adored the purity she had lost. Such things happen.

Happily, human nature is never so corrupt or debased that it does not cherish somewhere in its heart of hearts a sincere reverence for the good and beautiful. "Claire" had tripped, and was paying the penalty which falls so heavily on a woman; but it is clear that her better nature, sustained, perhaps, by memories of home and girlhood, struggled on. That she gave her heart to Stevenson with the abandon of an all-possessing passion is, beyond doubt, a fact which in itself furnishes proof that her innate goodness had not perished. For his sake she offered to give up the life she was living. I have been told that she was many times scolded by "the head of her establishment" for wasting so much time in his company, and at last actually beaten. The house in which the chastisement is said to have been given was pointed out to me by one who is well acquainted with Stevenson's early history.

And on his part Stevenson was at least equally passionate. He proposed to marry "Claire"; but unluckily he had no money, and the door of 17 Heriot Row was inexorably shut against her.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Inevitably it had to be so. After all, a man be he ever so sincere and chivalrous, can scarcely go out into the street and pick up a bride as he might pick up a lost and soiled pearl. The experience burned into Stevenson's heart and for a little threatened to make havoc of his life. With a heartbroken "My God!" Claire went her own way and Louis went his. To the novelist, looking back and thinking of what had been, it must often have seemed that here was a "human document," a page, so to speak, of life in the raw, which might very effectively be utilised for the purposes of his art. And, indeed, there is some evidence, on the authority of Henry James, that he did so utilise it, though, for reasons on which I have already touched, the result never saw the light of publication.

Meanwhile to those at 17 Heriot Row the revelation of those illicit associations came as a stunning, shattering disaster. The religious apostasy had seemed a grave enough scandal, had caused, in fact, excruciating anguish, but this unequivocal piece of "loose living" was the last straw in a burden too grievous to be borne. Probably nothing but the peculiar circumstances of the case saved the offender. He was an only son, an only child; he was in feeble health; he was the apple of his mother's eye—his mother, indeed, must have pleaded for him piteously; finally, and perhaps most important of all in influencing the decision, there was the very potent fear that if thrust out-of-doors he would go headlong to Avernus. Thomas Stevenson's forbearance in that crisis was a triumph of self-control, of affection, and, let it be added, of practical Christianity. "Thou shalt forgive thy brother, not seven times, but seventy times seven." And if thy brother, how much more thine only son?

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

To the couple at 17 Heriot Row the expulsion of Louis would have been as the tearing-out and casting-away of their own lacerated hearts. The matter was smoothed over, as such family quarrels are. But it may be said that Stevenson's absences from home about that time are not to be explained by religious differences or ill health. Neither was the poverty which then and later astonished innocent people due to paternal parsimony. It was very specifically due to paternal discipline. In previous disagreements and disappointments Thomas Stevenson had yielded, partly from affection and the desire to please, partly for the sake of appearances. But his patience and his generosity were both exhausted. With an arbitrariness which is not at all surprising, he refused to contribute to "a rake's progress."

In Stevenson the reaction was acute and prostrating. He sank into a mood of deep depression. The world had lost all its sunshine and he had lost all that was worth winning. In that tragic mood we get a glimpse of him in the little poem which he calls "The Vanquished Knight":

I have left all upon the shameful field,
Honour and Hope, My God! and all but life.

And since life was valueless, he prayed that it too might be taken. As he grew a little calmer, realising, in his own words, that he had "lived and loved and closed the door," he wrote, in a little paper discovered after his death, that he could see his future life flowing stiller and stiller year by year. He had even some hope of quiet content, though the dreams of glory and happiness had vanished. "As I am glad to say," he recorded

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

sadly, " that I do now recognise that I shall never be a great man, I may set myself peacefully on a smaller journey, not without hope of coming to the inn before nightfall." The date of that little document is April 1873, when he was four months past his twenty-second birthday.

By that time " Claire " had passed out of his life for ever. But his heart mourned and he could ask pitifully—

The relic taken, what avails the shrine ?

Later in his dreams he was to see his old love coming to meet him " in the dawning and the dew," and his heart sprang up at the vision. " Claire " was gone, rather she was thrust away, torn from him in the height of his passion and hers. It was impossible he should forget her, and he did not forget her any more than Burns forgot Clarinda.

CHAPTER VI

NEW ASSOCIATIONS

WHILE these and other adventures yet to be described were in progress Stevenson was nominally a law student. For the sake of appearances he made a pretence of covering the usual course. He attended law lectures intermittently and as it suited him, rubbed up his neglected Latin with tutors, dipped into legal textbooks, and even gained a second-class certificate for an essay in the class of political economy. But from the first he must have had a lurking consciousness that the law was not to be his profession. At any rate his real work, his real interest, lay in the severe self-imposed training in literary craftsmanship. There his zeal and energy never abated—even in the time of "Claire." He still continued to "live with words." Looking back years afterwards, he perceived radical defects in his system. It taught him, as he came to see, merely "the lower and less intellectual elements of the literary art; the choice of the essential note and the right word, things that to a happier constitution had perhaps come by nature." As regards training, he recognised in it one grave defect, that it set him no standard of achievement. That was an after-discovery. At the time his zeal as a "sedulous ape" blinded him to any defects in his system. It gave him "practice in rhythm, in harmony and

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

the co-ordination of parts," but it scarcely touched the higher elements of his art. He had still to discover the great secret that in creative work everything ultimately depends on imagination, a master-faculty in which Stevenson was not richly endowed. In his early efforts, indeed, it is almost entirely lacking. But in technique—and without technique there can be no real art—he was making steady progress, though then and for a considerable time afterwards his style was vitiated by an affected quaintness, an inordinate desire to be pretty and decorative.

It helped him that he was moving a little out of his "miserable isolation" and making friends. Among those who came to cheer him then were his cousin "Bob" (R. A. M. Stevenson) and Charles Baxter, both considerable influences in his life. Bob had been his playmate in childhood, but had gone off to the Continent to prepare for the career of an artist. Now he returned bringing with him, as Thomas Stevenson in a moment of exasperation thought, a taint or more than a taint of French atheism. To Louis he came as an avatar of liberty. "The mere return of Bob," Stevenson tells in a fragment of autobiography written when he was thirty, "changed at once and for ever the course of my life. I can give you an idea of my relief by saying that I was at last able to breathe." He describes his previous condition as one of "astounding misery." But with the exuberant Bob as companion and confidant something like real boyish joy came to him. His heart was "like a bird's" and he was "done with the sullens for good."

According to the accounts of his friends, R. A. M. Stevenson was a striking personality, with a genius for true Bohemianism which his cousin Louis never

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

had. Educated in England, first at Windermere School and then at Sidney Sussex (Oliver Cromwell's old college) at Cambridge, he subsequently studied painting at Antwerp, Paris, and elsewhere in France, and for a short time was Professor of Fine Art in Liverpool University. He was ardent, copious, captious, ingenuous, intolerant, yet courteous and well-bred. Henley describes him as an "exorbitant and amazing person," but one ever making for what was best both in art and in morals. I have myself come upon traces of his work and influence in London which confirm the judgments of both Stevenson and Henley. In talk he dominated Louis; in practice he taught him much of the ways of the world and joined him heart and soul in deriding Edinburgh, with its smug conceits and benighted parochialism. Moreover, he more than any other brought Louis under the French influences which were to have so deep an effect both on his work and his character.

The second friend, Charles Baxter, was, as has already been mentioned, a lawyer, a Writer to the Signet, which in Scotland is a solicitor of superior professional standing. There are three grades. Writer to the Signet, Solicitor to the Supreme Court, and plain solicitor, distinctions which pertinently illustrate the Scottish pride in precedence and prestige. Baxter knew Stevenson more intimately and thoroughly than anyone else, with the single exception, perhaps, of W. E. Henley; and the letters addressed to him are the best in the whole Stevenson collection, because they are by far the frankest. Reserve, evasion, suppression, with Charles Baxter would have been too much of a jest.

It is customary for intending advocates at the

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Scottish Bar to take a practical course in a solicitor's office. In 1871, in accordance with that custom, Stevenson entered the office of Skene, Edwards, and Bilton, Writers to the Signet, where he attended with his usual irregularity till 1873. The firm still survives and flourishes, though in other premises, but of Stevenson's work with it no relic or trace is discoverable. It is remembered he was there ; that is all. The chief partner, W. F. Skene, was and is well known as the author of *Celtic Scotland*, a work which is still valued by students of Scottish history. But of his pupil, who was also interested in the Highlands, he appears to have seen little or nothing, nor in that pupil's Celtic researches is there any trace of his influence. The two worked and lived under the same roof ; but otherwise they were strangers to each other. When Stevenson became famous, Mr. Skene regretted he had not seen more of the young law student whose tastes in some directions were so similar to his own ; but by that time Stevenson had left Edinburgh and Scotland for ever.

The law did not displace authorship, and a scientific paper on " The Thermal Influences of Forests " belongs to that period. It was printed in the *Proceedings of the Royal Scottish Society of Arts*, and has been considered of sufficient interest to be included in his collected works. While President of the Speculative Society in 1872 he spent part of March and April at Dunblane, and from there wrote one of his most amusing letters to Charles Baxter, who as secretary was plaguing him with business matters connected with that office. The " Spec " and its secretary could go " hang. " " The affair," he adds gaily, " is in the hands of the police. Do you hear that, you evildoer ? " He

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

ends with an invitation, "Come hither, come hither, come hither"; and gives orders concerning the purchase of books and tobacco.

In July he was seized with a desire to take a course at a German University with Sir Walter Simpson, son of the famous Sir James, the discoverer of chloroform. At his mother's request, however, the project was abandoned and the two friends went off by themselves to Brussels and Frankfort. The trip included for Stevenson a visit to Baden-Baden with his parents and a walking tour in the Black Forest. He was then learning German, and for a little while was enthusiastic over Goethe, whom later he disparaged with little enough sense or understanding. In September he was at Boulogne on his way home, and there wrote an exceedingly clever rhyming epistle to Charles Baxter, somewhat in the spirit and manner of Burns.

All the while his ardour for literature and the literary calling grew with ever-increasing intensity. That ardour was all the more remarkable since the atmosphere in which he strove and experimented was not one to quicken the sensibilities or fire the imagination. In the eighteenth century Edinburgh had won for herself the proud title of the "Modern Athens." Her philosophers and men of letters enjoyed European reputations. But when Stevenson was serving his ardent apprenticeship, the glory of Hume and Robertson had long departed. Their successors, Jeffrey, Brougham, Lockhart, the men of the *Edinburgh Review* and *Maga*, had "ta'en their wages" and gone home. The burly, boisterous Christopher North of what have been called "the drunken, blustering Noctes Ambrosianæ" had passed on his resounding way into the Eternal

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Silence. His son-in-law, the gifted, versatile Aytoun, memorable as the author of "The Lays of the Scottish Cavaliers," followed soon. Hugh Miller, ex-stonemason and bank-clerk of Cromarty, deranged by sectarian controversies, had also departed tragically. The ever-beloved John Brown of *Pet Marjorie* fame, the friend of Thackeray and Ruskin, survived till Stevenson was thirty-two, a familiar figure in Princes Street with his dogs and his old-world courtesies. But he too belonged to the past.

Carlyle, greatest by far of them all, had long been in London, famous and honoured as the head of British literature. He also had tried Edinburgh and found it dreary and dispiriting. "A great stupidity reigns in this place," he notes in his diary under date 1833. The men are described as "a barren set," and Edinburgh "continues one of the dullest and poorest and on the whole paltriest of places for me. I cannot remember that I have heard one sentence with true meaning in it uttered since I came hither. The very power of thought seems to have forsaken this Athenian City." He complains, perhaps in an aggravated fit of dyspepsia, that his ears "are bewildered by the inane chatter of the people"; but adds pityingly he does not blame them, since "what sense is in them they no doubt honestly exhibit." That was the judgment of the most penetrating intellect then in Britain, less than twenty years before Stevenson was born.

There remains the peculiar glory of Edinburgh, the splendid and arresting figure of Scott. But when Stevenson was a schoolboy Scott was already a generation dead, a tradition, but no longer an active, living influence in his "own romantic town." Another Scott would have been too great a

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

boon from nature or fortune ; but even the others I have named had no successors. There were no more Jefferys and Broughams, no more Wilsons and Aytouns, though Blackie was still bustling in his erratic, sporadic way. The pulpit, it is true, resounded to the thunders of old-fashioned eloquence, but its lights were not literary. Often, indeed, they broke into lurid denunciation of works of imagination as subtle devices of the devil for seducing and ensnaring the souls of the unwary. Even now there are good people in Scotland who resolutely refuse to glance inside the covers of a work of fiction. They were more numerous then ; and Edinburgh church circles had a plenteous share of them. From such there could be neither sympathy nor help, neither encouragement nor inspiration for the young devotee of letters with his dreams of achievement in imaginative art. In the seventies Edinburgh, in fact, ran much to sermons, as it still does. It had ceased to "cultivate literature on a little oatmeal" or on anything else. As a centre of literary production its vogue was over. It is striking to note that of Stevenson's early associates, those who were natives of the "metropolis of the North" or bred within its precincts, not one came to literary eminence.

The youthful aspirant therefore lacked the stimulus of an active, eager literary tradition inciting to emulation and rivalry, the stimulus which London so abundantly supplies and Edinburgh supplied in an earlier generation. And Stevenson himself, like those who came after him, had to turn elsewhere for the interest and encouragement without which the finest literary talent droops and dies. To-day his native city is proud, and justly proud, of his fame ; but it must be remarked that

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

when she had the opportunity she did little enough to foster and aid his genius.

A welcome change and a momentous influence came to him at an opportune moment. In July 1873 he paid a second visit, after an interval of three years, to his cousin, a granddaughter of the Rev. Lewis Balfour who had married the Rev. Churchill Babington, a Cambridge Don and then rector of Cockfield, near Bury St. Edmunds, a quaint old town inimitably described in Carlyle's *Past and Present*. Another guest was Mrs. Sitwell, who later became Mrs. (and Lady) Sidney Colvin. Like Mrs. Fleeming Jenkin five years earlier, she was surprised and charmed by the "young Heine with the Scotch accent." Her future husband, then newly appointed Slade Professor of Fine Art in Cambridge University, was also to visit the rectory, and she wrote telling him of her discovery and urging him to hasten his arrival. He did so and was captivated in turn. To the dual friendship then begun Stevenson was indebted for counsel and help through all his subsequent career. In Mrs. Sitwell he found "an inspirer, consoler, and guide," and in Mr. (now Sir Sidney) Colvin a rarely appreciative critic and practical helper.

For a month he was joyously happy in the cultured kindly society of Cockfield Rectory. With his new friends he made excursions into the surrounding country, and then got his first impressions of "the hopeless gulf there is between England and Scotland and English and Scotch" as described in *The Foreigner at Home*. After a hurried visit to his home he returned South and spent a few days with Mr. Colvin at Norwood, in the south of London; then he went to Swanston, refreshed, invigorated, vibrating with new hope

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

and simmering with new ideas. But the old trouble at home was revived, and he was soon writing to Mrs. Sitwell, "Oh, dear God! this is bad work." He did not, could not tell her everything; but of his religious troubles, his hopes, aspirations, disappointments, and course of life in general he told her much. Sometimes he permitted himself a sneer at religion, or at any rate at religious exercises as he saw them in his home. Thus, in speaking of his trials in an atmosphere of Calvinism he refers to "my father on his knees and that kind of thing." He acknowledges that he is killing his father and alienating his mother, but it does not occur to him that he may be wrong and they may be right.

He did not alienate his mother; his worst follies, his most obstinate opposition, could not do that, but there were times when her heart, for all her brave show of lightness, was racked and tortured very near to the breaking-point, because her sense of right forced her to condemn the son who was more to her than life itself. At that time 17 Heriot Row was perhaps the unhappiest home in Edinburgh, though not wholly for the reasons given to Mrs. Sitwell. Louis could exclaim tragically over his miseries, but in the midst of them he could still be light-hearted. "It is impossible to depress me," he reports, a piece of self-criticism which bears the stamp of absolute veracity. Just then he was reading "Werther," and though he despised that once popular hero, he nevertheless liked him because he "wrote the most delightful letters in the world." Some of his own letters are manifestly the result of a sharp attack of Wertherism speedily relieved, however, by a cheerfulness that even Mark Tapley could scarcely have excelled. "Were'na my heart licht I wad dee," he repeated, justifying

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

the levity which was so often his shield and buckler in time of trouble.

Edinburgh became not less but more distasteful. He returned to it from the Suffolk rectory and London with regret, and within a fortnight of his arrival home he was off again, this time with his father on a flying visit to the Burns country. They saw the poet's house at Dumfries, a sight which filled Louis with melancholy ; they wandered by the ruins of Lincluden Abbey and the Nith, names and haunts for ever dear to the Scottish Muse ; and extended their tour to the little kirkyard of Irongray where lies Helen Walker, the original of Jeanie Deans, nobly commemorated by a tribute in the form of monument and inscription by the author of *Waverley*. Had they pushed a few miles farther up among the moors, they would have reached Craigenputtock, also a shrine consecrated by genius.

The year 1872 saw nothing from the pen of Louis, at any rate nothing that has survived, but in 1873 he opened his real career as an author with the paper on " Roads." It was sent to the *Saturday Review* and rejected. Ultimately, his good angel Mr. Colvin aiding, it appeared in the *Portfolio*, edited by P. G. Hamerton, art critic and biographer of Turner, over the signature L. S. Stoneven.

It has to be noted that, throughout his whole career as a writer, Stevenson was especially fortunate in having friends at every turn to do him service. Where other young authors have had to make their own way, fight their own battles, and succeed or fail without help offered or given, he found volunteers eager and able to aid. In the end, of course, an author must be his own best friend. No man, it has been said, was ever written down except by himself. Assuredly no man ever was

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

or can be written up except by himself. But in the beginning, well-considered, effective help means more than the outsider may guess, and Stevenson more than any recent writer may be said to have been nursed into authorship. How brilliantly he justified the faith of his friends the world knows.

The little paper on "Roads" gave a fillip to his ambition, and he proceeded to more important work. It was then that he began to sketch the article on Walt Whitman, who, as he says, "tumbled his world upside down." Whitman's "blood-beats of song" became, in fact, the blood-beats of much of Stevenson's philosophy. Here are sentiments which seem to colour and inspire some of the most familiar and characteristic passages in the Essays: "Who troubles himself about his ornaments is lost. This is what you shall do. Love the earth and sun and the animals; despise riches; give alms to every one that asks; stand up for the stupid and crazy; devote your income and labours to others; hate tyrants . . . have patience and indulgence towards the people; take off your hat to nothing known or unknown or to any man or number of men; go freely with powerful uneducated persons; re-examine all you have been told at school or church; dismiss whatever insults your own soul." The germ of much that has been taken as pure Stevenson lies, I think, in that passage.

Autumn, and perhaps secret and domestic trouble, brought a prostrating attack of fever and rheumatism, with threatened pleurisy and other complications. But, as then and always he showed an undaunted spirit. His father's friend, the Lord Advocate of the day, suggested that he should go to the English, not the Scots, Bar. The idea

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

pleased him and, ill as he was, he insisted on hurrying off to enter his name forthwith at one of the Inns of Court. But on reaching London he collapsed. An eminent physician, Sir Andrew Clark, was called in, and his diagnosis put the English Bar out of the question. He found complete nervous prostration, with alarming symptoms of phthisis. The medical verdict was that the patient must go off at once to the Riviera, or at any rate to a warmer climate than that of England, and that he had better go alone. Accordingly, early in November his parents saw him off to Mentone, whither he travelled by easy stages. At Sens he had the experience of buying poems from a blind poet out in the streets hawking his own wares. More to his taste was a volume of Essays by Sainte-Beuve, whom Matthew Arnold was then popularising in England. At Avignon and by the Rhone he would fain have lingered, but a nervous, feverish restlessness drove him on. Mentone was a paradise of brightness and sunshine; but he was too ill physically and perhaps mentally to enjoy the soft Southern landscape, and pined for the Braids and the Pentlands. His condition was indeed pitiable. He was weary with the weariness of one who has lost all zest and relish of life. "I am a man of seventy," he wrote to Mrs. Sitwell. "Oh! Medea, kill me or make me young again"—a tragic cry from three-and-twenty. "I have not made a joke upon my living soul since I left London," he told Charles Baxter. Stevenson unable to joke must have been a pathetic figure.

To gain what Poe calls "surcease of sorrow" he tried opium, and found the happiness and the pleasure terrifying. At intervals of depression—and he had more of them than the public imagines—

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

he resorted to opium to the very end ; but luckily he was not enslaved by it, as were Coleridge and De Quincey and later Wilkie Collins. Something better than opium was at hand—the companionship of a friend who never failed to act as a tonic. Towards the end of December Mr. Colvin joined him at Monaco, where they spent a few days together, and a few more in a quiet hotel at Monte Carlo. As all the world knows, the Casino at Monte Carlo is the centre of life and excitement to that gay community. Stevenson, ever eager for new experiences, new sensations, wished to “take a hand in the game,” but appeared in such an extraordinary dress that he was refused admittance. Thereupon in revenge he proposed to write a series of papers upon gambling-hells and their evils, a proposal which fortunately came to nothing. From Monte Carlo the two friends moved on to Mentone. There, at the old Hotel Mirabeau, now no more, Mr. Colvin, having business in Paris, left him, but returned after a brief absence.

In the meantime Louis had recovered his spirits, the “Oh ! Medea ” mood having passed like a summer cloud. The reason for this rebound, at any rate in part, was the presence of two Russian ladies of position and culture—Madame Zassetzka and her sister, Madame Garschine, both his seniors in age by some fifteen or twenty years. Sir Sidney Colvin, who met them then, describes them in his charming volume *Memories and Notes* as “brilliantly accomplished and cultivated women.” Madame Zassetzka, a dashing, daring woman of the world, had written comedies and tried life in many ways that were not comic. She was the type of woman that Tolstoi has drawn with so masterly a hand, and like his Anna was just then indulging herself

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

with a lover or love-affair somewhere in Poland. Presumably, therefore, she had no eyes for the young Scot. But Madame Garschine, who was gentle, invalidish, romantic, and unattached, immediately began to evince a tender interest in him. She may have thought that the poor lonely boy needed a mother; she may have pitied his "bashfulness and blushfulness," for he seems to have had a most uncharacteristic fit of timidity; but the impressible Stevenson promptly took her sentiments as something more than maternal. Indeed, he could scarcely have been mistaken.

Russians of that period (as of this) practised a freedom of speech and behaviour which had nothing of the reserve of the "douce" folk of Edinburgh. Madame Garschine made no secret of her feelings, and Louis trembled like a girl on the verge of a proposal wondering how to take it. To his confidante Mrs. Sitwell he confessed that he was "damnable embarrassed"; but the greater the embarrassment the greater the interest. He did not repulse Madame Garschine; he only hoped she would not make a fool of herself or of him. The daily incidents and variations in the little affair were noted and reported with a minuteness worthy of a Jane Austen heroine. Indeed, his intimate letters at that time read like barometrical records of his feelings, which rose and fell with every movement, almost with every look and gesture, of Madame Garschine. In his published letters the child Nelitchka occupies much space, but in reality he found her a nuisance, as she doubtless was in such a situation. A poet without love, it has been said, were a physical and metaphysical impossibility. Certainly many famous poets have shown a marvellous faculty for falling in love. Louis was

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

at once too much the gallant and too much the poet not to follow the glorious examples, nor did he fail to express the rapture of the dominant passion. The *New Poems*, so happily saved by Mr. Hellman, include a poem addressed to the two sisters in "guid braid Scots," and a more intimate little piece meant for Madame Garschine alone in which feeling reference is made to "constancy and love."

Such things are not to be taken too seriously. The little flutter of sentiment was but a sort of wayside episode that passed and faded quickly into the background of memory. But it is interesting for the light it sheds on the mind and temperament of Robert Louis Stevenson, and in particular on the characteristic little vanities which lay so near the surface and were so easily stirred and inflamed. We may readily believe that Madame Garschine had more than a mere maternal fondness for the engaging youth who could talk to her with such fluency and sprightliness on all manner of subjects, and modulate his tone so well in the intimacies of private conversation. Moreover, there was the attraction of youth. It is not an uncommon thing for forty to fall in love with twenty, and in such cases the older love is apt to burn with much more intensity than the younger. Stevenson was invited to visit the ladies at their home in Poland, but the visit was never paid and Madame Garschine dropped out of his story. What became of her afterwards is unknown.

But gallantry did not occupy all his time even then. He read George Sand, Balzac, and other French authors, and he wrote as ardently and indefatigably as ever. Writing, as Henley truly observed, was the very breath of life to him. Death alone could quench that steadfast passion. In a

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

fit of dissatisfaction he had laid aside the paper on Walt Whitman; now he took it up again with renewed ardour. At that time, too, he wrote "Ordered South," the most pathetic and touching of his Essays, which he describes as "scrupulously correct." It appeared, again through the good offices of Mr. Colvin, in *Macmillan's Magazine* for May 1874. As we proceed it becomes increasingly clear that but for the constant aid of his father and friends Stevenson would never have reached the stage of making an income from literature. The magazine success gave a fillip to his ambition; but his spirits were again drooping. His chief solace were the letters to Mrs. Sitwell, to whom on many points he opened his heart. In response she gave him sympathy, encouragement, wise counsel, and above all, intelligent, womanly understanding which proved most excellent medicine.

Despite chagrin and disappointment, his father was liberal with money, and being, as he thought, about to die, he became morbidly anxious regarding the repayment of what he considered a loan. Under a slight disguise he tells in *Lay Morals* how the situation affected him. While oppressed by the thought that he was dying, he used the money in his possession like a miser, denying himself all but bare necessities. When recovery seemed assured, however, he allowed himself to spend more freely, trusting "to the future to lend a help to mankind," as he had been helped by the hand of his father, a fantastic idea due, perhaps, to an enfeebled state of mind.

During that visit to the Riviera he met Andrew Lang, to whom he was introduced by Mr. Colvin. On both sides first impressions were doubtful. Lang described Louis as girlish and hectic, with

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

long hair. "Clad in a long blue cloak, he looked nothing less than English except Scotch." On his part Louis found Lang good-looking, but smacking offensively of Oxford pedantry and snobbery abroad to sneer at a world devoid of culture. The contrast was at once striking and amusing. In both men there was a superficial element of flippancy; but the flippancy of the Oxford common-room was not as the flippancy of Bohemian Edinburgh. Lang, airy, cynical, polished, thin, and inclined to be screechy of voice, was disposed to mock, and in Lang's mockery there was something bitingly acidulous; Stevenson, also airy and cynical, but *outré*, outlandish, felt and resented the airs of superiority. The meeting, in fact, was in the nature of a collision. Nevertheless the two became fast friends, and soon after Stevenson complained of the effects of some "blarsted champagne" drunk in some little jollification with "Pretty-Well Lang."

Later "Andrew of the brindled hair" of Stevenson's verse was conspicuous in the band of literary men in London who, as it seemed to others, were engaged in a gentle conspiracy to "write up" the author of *Treasure Island*. From personal knowledge of their efforts towards the close of Stevenson's career I can testify to their zeal and assiduity. There have been many organised "booms" in literature, but few authors of any time ever had more loyal or zealous friends than R. L. S.

The blue cloak mentioned by Lang was a Paris purchase by Mr. Colvin, necessitated because his protégé lacked a proper overcoat. It pleased the wearer mightily, because it gave him a picturesque "piratical look" which made the people of Mentone and Monte Carlo turn and stare, as the Edinburgh people had stared at earlier

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

eccentricities in dress. By choice rather than necessity Stevenson was then financially on very short commons. He was shabby and down-at-heel, partly from lack of cash, partly from an incurable liking for a vagabond appearance, deliberately cultivated for its striking effects.

But though hampered and at times distressed by poverty, he was not depressed, neither was his literary work interrupted. In the summer of 1874 he wrote his little criticism of Lytton's *Fables of Song* for the *Fortnightly Review*, then edited by John Morley, the "honest John" of politics, the Lord Morley of later fame. Yet more important, his article on "Victor Hugo's Romances" appeared in the August number of the *Cornhill*, under the editorship of Leslie Stephen, another friend who rendered him signal service. His severe apprenticeship was at last beginning to bear fruit; he was steadily mastering "the means or instrument of the literary art," and he was filled with the elation of success. While, however, discerning editors were beginning to appreciate his work, those early essays made no appeal whatever to the general reader.

The assumption, so often made, that with Stevenson's first contributions to magazines the public instantly recognised a new star in the firmament of letters is entirely erroneous. When he became popular as a story-teller, readers went back to his Essays and found them charming; but on their first appearance they attracted no attention. Several years were to pass before their author was "discovered"; and, indeed, it may be said that Stevenson's approach to popularity even with his stories was extraordinarily slow and difficult. And when at last popular recognition came, it came not

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

from London or Edinburgh, but from the young eager world beyond the Atlantic. To America belongs the credit of "discovering" Stevenson, as to America in an earlier generation belonged the credit of discovering Carlyle; and to the end Stevenson's readers in the States far outnumbered his readers in Britain.

But in 1874 he was getting his foot definitely planted on the literary ladder and was elated. Moreover, there were other circumstances to hearten him. His father, his generous, much-enduring father, increased his allowance to £7 per month—£84 a year, or, as Louis whimsically put it, "for dignity's sake two thousand one hundred francs." In good heart and much-improved health he left Mentone in April and joined his cousin R. A. M. Stevenson in Paris. There he was introduced to the Latin Quarter and French Bohemian life, as lived in the circle and haunts of artists. By May he was back at Swanston; but a month later he was again with Mr. Colvin at Hampstead, London. During that visit he was elected a member of the Savile Club, his sponsors being Mr. Colvin and Andrew Lang; and there for some years he became a tolerably-familiar figure. In the club and at the house of Leslie Stephen he met some literary and journalistic notabilities, among them Miss Thackeray (Lady Richmond Ritchie), Dr. Appleton, of the *Academy*, then a flourishing journal, now defunct, and Walter Herries Pollock, editor of the *Saturday Review*, who, presumably, had declined his paper on "Roads." There is no sign that any of them estimated his work highly or that such of them as were editors showed any eagerness to enroll him as a contributor.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

He was eager to meet Carlyle ; and Leslie Stephen, who knew the sage, undertook to be intermediary, mentioning as a sort of peace-offering that the young hero-worshipper was busy on a study of John Knox. Carlyle responded with a growl that he was sick of visitors, and desired to hear nothing more about Knox, though if his would-be visitor ever became articulate on the subject he might repeat his application. The application does not appear to have been repeated. One regrets to-day that the meeting did not take place. It would be interesting and illuminative to have Carlyle's candid opinion of Stevenson, and perhaps Stevenson's of Carlyle. There might be a pungent paragraph in *The Reminiscences* or a picturesque page in *Memories and Portraits*, and either or both would to-day be read eagerly. Carlyle was in truth much afflicted by the curious and voluble. Then, or a little earlier, a visitor with better claims than Stevenson's called ostensibly to worship, and stayed to instruct in the omniscient Oxford manner. Carlyle endured in grim impatience ; but at parting he delivered his shot. "Good-bye," he said in good Annandale Scots ; "I tolerated ye because I kenned yer mither. But I hope never to set eyes on ye again." On the whole, perhaps, the sprig!tly Stevenson had a lucky escape.

In July he returned to Edinburgh, but almost immediately he was off once more, this time on a cruise round the west coast of Scotland in a small sixteen-ton schooner, the *Heron*. His companions were Sir Walter Simpson and Mr. T. Barclay. At the end of a fortnight of wholesome roughing he appeared at Swanston, bronzed, vigorous, unkempt as a tramp and ebulliently cheerful. He had lost

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

his portmanteau containing what was written of his article on Whitman, with many notes ; but the loss was nothing in his gain of vitality. " My health is a miracle," he reported ; and indeed, despite his consumptive delicacy, his colds, fevers, and hæmorrhages, his resilience then and always was amazing. He found his parents preparing for a tour by Chester to Barmouth and Llandudno, and he joined their expedition, extending his holiday by a walk into Buckinghamshire. The result of the walk was the paper on " An Autumn Effect " which appeared in the *Portfolio* for April and May 1875.

To most writers such incessant runnings to and fro would be a fatal interruption of work ; to Stevenson they were a stimulus. In trains, on steamers, in odd corners of hotels and boarding-houses, he wrote, wrote, wrote as with a nervous dread of missing a single opportunity. This excessive activity is partly explained by his eagerness, his sheer delight in his craft ; but fundamentally it was due to a febrile constitution, an inability to rest and be quiet, in fact to want of inertia which, as Carlyle remarks, is so common and withal so needful. Great minds, great imaginations, enjoy periods of repose, of fallowness to replenish the exhausted cells. From first to last Stevenson was always at high pitch, always, as it were, at full stretch in the chase. In the end he paid the penalty ; and there can be no doubt that his work suffered, but his " dire industry " was such as may shame many a strong practitioner.

In the flush of new-found strength he once more took up his paper on Walt Whitman (first and last it cost him much trouble), but concentrated more especially on a study then lying very near his heart

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

—"John Knox and His Relations to Women," privately dubbed "Knox and His Females." That relation he appears to have viewed almost with envy. "John Knox had a better time of it with his godly females than I have," he told Mrs. Sitwell, in deploring his own lack of agreeable society. The picture of the fierce, relentless moralist, author of *The Monstrous Regiment of Women*, comforting himself, like David, in old age with a young wife, may have tickled his sense of humour; certainly Knox fascinated him. In his enthusiasm he planned a full-dress biography of the Scottish Reformer. Had he carried out his intention, the result, we may be sure, would be an improvement in liveliness on the "Life" by the Rev. Thomas McCrie which we possess, and would probably be a valuable delineation of character. His essay, as finally written, appeared a year later in *Macmillan's Magazine*, after being tried experimentally on the members of the Speculative Society, and was included in the volume *Familiar Studies of Men and Books*.

A VITAL INFLUENCE

Throughout the vital years 1871-5 he was in intimate touch with his old teacher and friend Fleeceing Jenkin, and gradually surrendered to the force and charm of that puissant and versatile personality. As has already been noted, their first real contact was in the nature of a conflict. Stevenson, in his airy way, began with flippancy and effrontery, and Jenkin was trenchant in rebuke. Of such a beginning a lasting antagonism might naturally be predicted. It is a tribute to the native worth of both men that precisely the reverse was the fact, and that

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

long before the end they were linked in mutual respect and esteem. The Jenkins, as we have seen, made a social feature of dramatic entertainments given at their house, first in Fettes Row and then at 3 Great Stuart Street. Mrs. Jenkin, a woman of charm and accomplishment, was a talented actress, and her husband an enthusiastic, indefatigable stage-manager. They gathered round them a band of ardent amateurs, Stevenson among the number, though in the stage sense he was no actor. The private theatricals were excellent fun ; sometimes they attained the dignity of serious performances. To Stevenson, promoted from being a mere prompter, or "super," they afford the chance to figure in fancy dress and indulge an inherent taste for display and make-believe. But their value to him and their interest to-day lie wholly in the fact that they brought him into a real intimacy with Jenkin. One characteristic incident arising out of those dramatic activities is described by Stevenson in the "Memoir" of his friend. Salvini had played "Macbeth" in Edinburgh, and Stevenson, with all the cocksureness of the amateur, sent a notice of the performance to the *Academy*—and on its appearance took the paper to his own stage-manager. Jenkin read part of the criticism and flung the paper contemptuously on the floor. "That won't do," he told the astonished critic. "You were thinking of yourself, not of Salvini." Stevenson protests that the judgment was unfair, that he was not thinking of himself, but merely bungling a trade he had not mastered. The probability, however, is that Jenkin, having detected the egoism which was a radical defect of Stevenson's character, seized the opportunity to give a salutary lesson.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

He hated shams, and his glib, sparkling young friend was flamboyantly advertising the faults of a pretender. His own sincerity was absolute, and his courage was at least equal to his sincerity. Perhaps in all Edinburgh there was not another so well qualified to save "the atheistical youth," who came to him full of levity and scorn for sacred things in religion and in life. His plan was to meet scepticism with scepticism, edged with sarcasm, after the manner of Job. If one side was wrong, what proof was there that the other was right? Had the Almighty confided the secrets of the universe to the mockers Voltaire and Heine, or the agnostics Huxley and Tyndall? It might be they were the people and that wisdom would die with them. Well, well! granting as much, meanwhile here was life, many-coloured and tumultuous, a battle-field in which men must fight whatever their beliefs and whether they understood or not what they were fighting for. What was Stevenson himself fighting for? A little food, a little raiment, something to fill the empty belly and cover the bare back? Was that all? Just a craven fear of cold and hunger? To say that was to say that men were idiots, that God had blundered, and that the universe which Mr. Tyndall and his friends understood so well was without meaning.

Once, when Stevenson consulted him on a point of conduct, his answer was, "How do you suppose Christ would advise you?" Stevenson admitted He would not counsel anything unkind or cowardly.

"No," said Jenkin decisively, "nor anything amusing." The thrust told because behind it there was not only the strength of a fierce sincerity, but an exquisite understanding founded on sympathy, which was cruel only to be kind.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Stevenson's own testimony is unequivocal. "Far on in middle life," he says in the *Memoir* already mentioned, "when men begin to lie down with the bestial goddesses Comfort and Respectability, the strings of his nature still sounded as high a note as a young man's. He loved the harsh voice of duty like a call to battle. He loved courage, enterprise, brave natures, a brave word, an ugly virtue; everything that lifts us above the table where we eat or the bed we sleep upon."

He admired and praised David, and men like David, not because they were perfect or saintly, but because they bore themselves valiantly in the battle of life, because they were inspired by great ideals, and in spite of lapses and failures enriched humanity with noble examples of heroism. He hated pettiness, prudery, meanness, deceit, insincerity, and set in his own conduct a standard of transparent, almost quixotic, honesty and fidelity. The benefit to Stevenson of such a friend and counsellor at that juncture can scarcely be overestimated, and, indeed, the friendship may well have saved him to literature. Jenkin in effect took the vapouring "atheistical youth" and, so to speak, shook at least the worst of his absurdities out of him. Nor did the service end with the correction of false doctrine or the eradication of ludicrous conceits; it penetrated downward to the underlying principles of conduct. It would be an exaggeration to say that Jenkin taught Stevenson honour, but it is no exaggeration to say he taught him reverence and many things besides. I emphasise that point. For I believe that, of the manifold influences which moulded and inspired Robert Louis Stevenson, that of Fleeming Jenkin was one of the most profound, as it certainly was

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

one of the most beneficent. From others he learned the art that was to delight a world ; from Jenkin he learned the beauty of sincerity and simplicity, the folly of theatrical displays of presumption, the vulgarity of cant, the inexorable need of obedience to Higher Powers, and not least—

What man may learn, what man may do
Of right or wrong, of false or true.

It was a great lesson and it was not lost on the pupil. When we admire, as admire we must, the brave, blithe spirit of Stevenson, when we are refreshed and exhilarated by his joyous philosophy, fortified by his fortitude, animated by his courage, we should not forget his debt to his old master, the Professor of Engineering. The spirit that Jenkin infused lives and breathes in many a passage of Stevenson that has charmed and braced millions of readers. And to his deep and vital influence were added the sympathy, the understanding of Mrs. Jenkin, and the rare domestic charm that made 3 Great Stuart Street an oasis in a desert of dreariness, a haven of refuge from a censorious or persecuting world. When other doors were shut against him that door was always open, and within was the welcome and the appreciation which, as he remarked himself at the time, bring out what is best in a man.

Whether Jenkin knew much or little or nothing at all of the clandestine joys of St. James's Square, Leith Street, and other dear resorts does not appear. That quidnuncs and gossips must have "whispered and muttered and murmured" darkly in his ear seems inevitable, and doubtless he was

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

perfectly well aware of the outraged feelings of the obstreperous Mrs. Grundy. Yet there is no sign that he ever made private knowledge a text or pretext for preaching, a forbearance which at least proves him an astute psychologist.

REMORSE AND DEPRESSION

Stevenson, however, was far too much Stevenson to turn at once or wholly from his own ways. He might sit with immense satisfaction at the feet of Gamaliel, might admire, even adore, but it did not follow that he was bound by Gamaliel's theories of life and its pleasures. As the Jenkin influence developed, or at any rate in the period of its duration, he had more frequent lapses into seriousness, displayed a growing tendency to self-analysis and self-criticism. That tendency, however, is not to be attributed entirely, nor perhaps even largely, to Jenkin. Other influences, other teachers, were at work. Long ago Ovid wrote of knowing the right and pursuing the wrong, and Stevenson knew right from wrong at least as well as Ovid. That he so often "stepped aside," took, so to speak, the left-hand turning well aware he should take the right, brought, in moments of reflection and introspection, a feeling of regret at times deepening to remorse. For Stevenson was not all lightness, nor always the defiant, callous, sneering sceptic.

To picture him with a perpetual grin of levity were to misjudge him and deceive ourselves. He had his moods of revolt, of frivolity, as a good-natured man has fits of anger or envy. But the groundwork of his character was seriousness, however ostentatiously the Voltaire-Heine spirit

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

might at times play on the surface. He had, moreover, what the poet, the creative artist, always has and must have—an infinite capacity for deep and poignant emotion; and when that emotion, quickened by a Covenanting conscience, turned inward on himself, he suffered exquisitely. Signs of the inherent sadness which underlay his gaiety appear at an early date. In his intimate self-communings he was not gay nor frivolous. “I know,” he sang, in an unpublished poem written in a college notebook—

I know, O heart of mine. O weary heart
That in the fatal tenor of thy days
Much thou hast learned¹ in many evil ways.

The confession is like a confession of St. Augustine, and is no less sincere than the saint’s remorseful outpourings over early follies.

Another early piece, suggestively entitled “All Influences were in vain,” is yet more deeply touched with regret. “All day,” says the lonely wanderer by the sea—

All day the sea was on one hand,
The long beach shone with sun and wet—
We walked in trio on the sand,
My shadow, I and my regret.

Yet it was the same Stevenson who with equal sincerity and about the same time sang :

Who talks to me of reason now ?
It would be more delight
To have died in Cleopatra’s arms
Than be alive to-night.

“Mark Antony,” said Henley, in a flash of insight. With a Cleopatra to lure and charm, the Scots

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Presbyterian was no less susceptible, no less ready to become passion's slave, than was the noble Roman who never heard of John Calvin or John Knox. The duality of man's nature, so fruitful a theme with moralists, so forcibly and dramatically illustrated by Stevenson the novelist, was in Stevenson the man abnormally complex and confused. No man's life is all of a piece. There is no such thing as a straight path from the cradle to the grave. The progress is often sideways, with many slippings and turnings, now up, now down, now through thorny jungles, now among "snares and gins and pitfalls," and Stevenson's course was more devious, more broken and twisted and tangled than most. No doubt the cause lay chiefly in himself.

The fault, dear Brutus, is not in our stars,
But in ourselves.

Had Stevenson in those years taken "Inconsistency and Volatility" for his motto, the choice might appear well made. Variableness, erratic change of sentiment and behaviour, contradictions so sharp and bewildering they stagger belief, such just then might seem to be his rule of life. One night he was ardently extolling the ideal and the beautiful at 3 Great Stuart Street; the next with equal ardour, in a tavern in Advocate's Close, he was drinking with glorious profanity to a draggled goddess of Freedom, and spouting rank red republicanism of the kind affected by Swinburne in his hot, Hugo-inspired youth.

In that tavern in Advocate's Close a mysterious society known as the L.J.R. held its meetings and promulgated doctrines apparently imbibed direct

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

from Rousseau. The membership was limited to six, and Stevenson appears to have been the directing animating spirit. The mystic brotherhood was devoted to Liberty, Equality, Fraternity, a creed joyously interpreted by the members as the right to think, speak, and act according to their sovereign pleasure. Some syllabus or document grandiloquently setting forth its aims fell into the hands of Thomas Stevenson, producing yet another domestic earthquake. For politically its tenets were as nauseous to the redoubtable Tory, as religiously were the atheistical doctrines of John Tyndall and his kind to the unbending Covenanters. The society came to a sudden end and, I believe, Thomas Stevenson played a wrathful and decisive part in its inglorious extinction.

Simultaneously, as though to give the essential spice to life, there were various love-affairs, little romances, incidental and by the way, for the lover was ever in evidence, crest up. One such passing romance was taking a serious turn when it was peremptorily extinguished by the lady's father. In such matters fathers are so apt to forget they were once young themselves, and ready, perhaps, to throw prudence to the winds and count the world well lost for love. Experience teaches wisdom even in the indulgence of absorbing and romantic sentiment. The song "I Dreamed of Forest Alleys Fair" celebrates the sweet hours spent with "Jenny," a little sadly and in retrospect, the bliss being over. With some "charming fair," too, the impressible Louis skated on Duddingston Loch, body to body, her hand "held fast" in his, so that he was able to exclaim rapturously—

I swear had we been drowned that day,
We had been drowned in love.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

An enviable death, it may be supposed, to a poet in the ecstasies of passion. For winter recreation there were also the "Spec" and the Jenkin theatricals, both in their different ways absorbing.

In summer, after business hours in the office of Skene, Edwards, and Bilton, there were long walks to Swanston by "Buckstone, Fairmilehead, and Braid"; and out to Glencorse and Cauldstane Slap, the latter a name now for ever associated with "the Four Black Brothers" in *Weir of Hermiston*. Those walks and scenes lived in his memory, perhaps more fondly and fragrantly, and certainly more fruitfully, than did the fleeting wayside romances. Long afterwards the exile revisited in his dreams those beloved haunts of his boyhood and youth, and dreaming he gazed again—

From Halkerside, from topmost Allermuir
Or steep Caerketton.

In the last months in Samoa there was scarcely a day, and absolutely no night, in which his thoughts did not wander back to those once familiar scenes. "Oh, that I were the lad I once was!" he wrote to the late S. R. Crockett. He could never, he said, take the old walk by the Fisher's Tryst and Glencorse, never again set foot on the heather or behold Auld Reekie shimmering in the sun through its haze of smoke. "Do you know," he asked in one of the most touching passages he ever wrote—"do you know where the road crosses the burn under Glencorse Church? Go there and say a prayer for me. Sec it is a sunny day. I would like it to be Sunday . . . And stand on the right bank just where the road goes down into the water, and shut your eyes:—and if I don't appear to you!" Doubtless he did appear to the mind's eye, and his

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

spirit still haunts the Pentlands. He travelled far to new and strange lands—yet—

We shall find him when we seek him.
In an older home—
By the hills and streams of childhood
'Tis his weird to roam.

These occupations and distractions might seem sufficient to engage his whole energies. Yet in the midst of them all his literary industry continued unabated. "From the smoothness and spontaneity of Stevenson's style," says a discriminating American editor, Mr. H. H. Harper, "one may be led to suppose that his works fell from his pen with unlaboured ease." Nothing could be farther from the truth. As Mr. Harper shows in the fragments he has edited with so much success and profit to all students of Stevenson, the "unlaboured ease" was the result of sleepless ardour and incessant practice. If, indeed, genius be an infinite capacity for taking pains, then Stevenson, even in his irregular youth, must have been the first genius in the land. He wrote, rewrote, destroyed, wrote again, and yet again revised and altered with a patience and perseverance that put most other writers to shame. And let it always be remembered that he strove thus in the face of constant discouragement and opposition.

Of those juvenile productions, many are lost irrecoverably in the files of local newspapers or were destroyed by their author. Some good judges, among them Principal Tulloch of St. Andrews, were much struck by their freshness and beauty; and the early work recovered and made accessible by the Bibliophile Society of Boston justifies the judgment. In verse especially, even from the very

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

first, there is something more than promise ; there is real performance, as in the boyish piece " The Mill-house ; a Sick-bed Fancy," written when its author was sixteen, and " The Well-Head," written three years later. The former seems to show the youthful poet revelling in the spirit of Keats, a favourite to the end. Here is a little picture deftly drawn that sticks in the mind and shows a clearly-awakened faculty of observation :

There was no noise at all about the mill,
And the slope-garden like a dream was still,
There came no sound at all into the glade,
Save when the white sack-laden waggons made
Wheel creaking in the shadowy slanting road
And the great horses strained against the load.

With less zest, yet with a sort of intermittent regularity, the law studies progressed. Professors were still to the cynical, derisive student a " huge joke " ; and he practised his lampooning talents on them with point and cleverness. Thus, in a college notebook designed for grave principles of law he drew caricatures of one who, like Gadgrind fed on facts and was " big with statistics." The accompanying inscription ends neatly :

Do you know this whiskered absurdity
With pince-nez and clerical tie ?
Poor fellow, he's blind of a sympathy !
I'd rather be blind of an eye.

The studies, however, were so far successful that at last, in his twenty-fifth year, Stevenson passed his final examination and was " called " to the Scottish Bar.¹ Just before the final ordeal, as he

¹ In Stevenson's time the Faculty Examinations were a very simple matter and in Law presented little difficulty. Nowadays the Examination is much more thorough, while the range is much extended. The " Public Examination " at which the entrant is actually admitted to the Faculty has long been of a purely formal character. An Arts degree of any British University exempts a Candidate from examination in General Scholarship ; but Stevenson had no degree.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

waited with other candidates in all the discomfort of evening-dress, someone told him he looked "like a drunken Irishman returning from a funeral," which brought the prompt response, "I wish I was that Irishman returning from that funeral."

He was called, but can scarcely be said to have been chosen. In his account of Edinburgh he himself gives an amusing description of "the *salle des pas perdus* of the Scottish Bar," where idle youths by a "ferocious custom" parade, bréathing "dust and bombazine" as they exhibit themselves in vain to potential patrons with briefs to bestow. As advocate Robert Louis Stevenson put up a professional brass plate on the door of 17 Heriot Row, engaged the "partial services" of a clerk, and made some perfunctory appearances in the Parliament House, the Law Courts of Edinburgh. But clients were shy. Either three or four briefs were all that reached the young advocate, and they came from personal friends. His total earnings at the Bar scarcely exceeded a five-pound note.

CHAPTER VII

W. E. HENLEY

THE early winter of 1875 marks the beginning of a momentous epoch in Stevenson's life and development. On an evening in the middle of February, Leslie Stephen, editor of the *Cornhill Magazine*, lectured at the Philosophical Institution, Edinburgh. The following day he called on his young contributor and took him to see another *Cornhill* contributor, then lying in the Edinburgh infirmary. That second contributor was W. E. Henley, with whom Stevenson was to become more closely, more intimately associated than with any other friend early or late. After his death his wife remarked that Louis had few really intimate friends, and she was right. For all his exuberant egotism, his persistent, irrepressible itch to talk of himself, he had the Scottish reserve which is chary of confidences, especially in regard to matters of conduct or deep feeling. From this new comrade of many years he had few secrets, and none relating to the various phases of "Bohemianism" which then or later were part of his life.

The career of Henley is a story of hardship and courage scarcely, if at all, inferior to Stevenson's own. After many disappointments in the south he went to Edinburgh as a sort of forlorn hope to put himself under the care of Lister, then in the

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

zenith of his reputation for antiseptic discoveries. He went as a poor man without influence or introduction. On the appointed day he appeared at the hospital, hobbling on crutches at the tail end of a procession of patients, all of the poorer classes. The meeting with the great surgeon was characteristic, at least of Henley.

"Why do you come to me?" Lister asked, after hearing the history of the case.

"Because," was the reply, "others have failed. I was told *you* were no good, so I thought you might be able to do something for me." Lister smiled, one may suppose a trifle grimly.

"Rather an odd reason," he remarked dryly; "but we shall see what can be done."

In the event much was done; and surgeon and poet admired each other, as original men generally do when they come to know each other well.

At the time of that first meeting with Stevenson, Henley had been eighteen months under treatment for the tubercular disease of the foot from which he suffered. There was progress, but it was slow and unspeakably tedious, and he hailed the advent of the sprightly Louis as a godsend. On his part Stevenson was instantly attracted, and to be attracted was to be enthusiastic. Here was a crippled genius, bludgeoned, beaten down by circumstance, yet valiantly resolved to be the "master of his fate, the captain of his soul." Stevenson's heart went out to him in pity, in sympathy, and very much in admiration. There was yet another attraction. Duller eyes than Stevenson's would have discerned in this new acquaintance a Bohemian of rare gifts, untouched, unhampered by any local prejudice or creed, one who brought a keen breath of the brave, free outer

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

world even into the drugged atmosphere of a hospital.

The scene was as depressing as scene could well be. The visitors found the patient in a dreary little room, with two beds and a couple of sick children in the second bed. The poet's feelings are expressed with heart-gripping poignancy in *Hospital Verses*, in which poetry and realism are blended as genius alone can blend them. While the visitors were there a girl came in to visit the sick children and played dominoes with them on the counterpane—a scene for Hogarth or Wilkie. "Stephen and I," Louis reported to Mrs. Sitwell, 'sat on a couple of chairs, and the poor fellow sat up in his bed with his hair and beard all tangled and talked as cheerfully as if he were in a king's palace or the Great King's palace of the blue air.' Those who knew him will remember that Henley's hair and beard always were tangled, and that it was a jest whether or not he ever condescended to use brush and comb. "I shall try to be useful to him," Stevenson wrote with a too-anxious regard for his "shalls" and "wills"; and he was as good as his word. Henley pined for books, and Stevenson brought them in piles—"big yellow books, quite impudently French," as related in one of the hospital poems. Nor were books all. Friends, too, were brought to cheer the invalid, in particular Charles Baxter, who was thus inducted into the enchanted circle of three.

When spring came Louis provided a carriage and took his protégé—often half carrying him up and down stairs—for drives round Edinburgh, to Cramond, to the Forth Bridge, to Portobello, and even seaward to North Berwick, or, better still, through Morningside by Craiglockhart and the

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Braids to the Pentlands and Swanston Cottage at the green foot of Cacer Ketton. In spring and summer the scenery in those southern environs of Edinburgh is delightful, hilly and heathy enough to suggest the Highlands, and yet set in the midst of a wide expanse of fertile land, dotted with prosperous farmsteads suggesting corn and fat cattle. After one of those country outings Stevenson reported of Henley that "the look in his face was wine to me." Nor did his services stop with books and carriage-drives. One day an acquaintance met him hurrying from 17 Heriot Row with an inverted chair on his head, like a huge enveloping four-spiked helmet.

"What on earth are you doing now?" he was asked in amazement.

"Taking this chair to the hospital for a friend," replied Stevenson, and hurried on.

Most memorable, most exhilarating of all, however, were the long, eager talks with his new friend. For the first time in his native city Stevenson found a kindred spirit, one who shared his ideals in literature and treated the Ten Commandments with a freedom that was enchanting. Henley's attitude to life was not squeamish or puritanic, nor had he in him the least taint of the Pharisee. For the smug, self-sufficient, narrow, arrogant, often brutal orthodoxies of certain sections of Edinburgh society his contempt was at least as fierce as Stevenson's, and more, far more than Stevenson, he had the gift of biting, blistering expression. His masterly essay and pungent notes in the Centenary Edition of Burns show how thoroughly he grasped the Scottish character, and how absolutely fearless he was in criticism. His closest friend would never have ventured the opinion that humility was at any

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

stage or in any way one of his besetting virtues, or hypocrisy one of his besetting sins.

The two discussed most things in heaven and earth ; above all, they discussed literature in all its aspects, and literary projects in all their romantic glamour. One important fact deserves particular attention. Henley was already master of a style, both in prose and verse, far surer, far more supple and incisive, than Stevenson's. Henley immediately recognised in his new friend a remarkable and engaging talent and was zealous in encouragement. But he also detected in him a vein of fantasy, a streak of falsity, of unreality incompatible with high and enduring achievement in art ; and he criticised bluntly. Stevenson in return disputed hotly and ingeniously ; but he profited. As regards sanity, grasp, and precision of style, the curious may discern a great leap forward, dating from the beginning of the Henley association. " My dear fellow," Henley would insist, " clarify, strain. Get out of moonlit clouds, get away from imitations. Reality's the thing. Keep your eye on the object. You want beauty. Very well. Truth is beauty. Your preceptor Keats should have taught you that. And incidentally observe the practice of Shakespeare and Burns—both considerable artists, eh ? " *Per contra*, Stevenson found some of Henley's poetry " slack and unequal " ; but he was generously ready to praise, ready too to take a hint or a lesson from this amazing " elder brother in the Muses."

From 1875 onward Stevenson, I think, wrote more and more with his eye on the object, surely the golden rule in all true writing. He was still a long way from the reality of the great masters ; still a long way from the reality of *Weir of Hermiston* ; but in some of the best scenes and passages in the

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

intermediate works—*Kidnapped*, *The Master of Ballantrae*, *Underwoods*, and the rest—the influence of Henley's robust, uncompromising common sense may easily be traced. In view of later happenings and their consequences with which I shall have to deal, that circumstance should be noted and borne in mind.

Yet another service rendered by Louis a little later was to introduce Henley to Fleeming Jenkin, and through him to a small but interesting coterie of enthusiasts in art and music. The Jenkin association lasted pleasantly for two years, with hot disputes and verbal quarrels which with most men would have meant separation; but with Henley and Jenkin merely cemented the friendship more firmly.

Under the fresh stimulus of argument and discussion Stevenson's literary activity increased, if increase were possible. Two sketches, *Movements of Young Children* and *On the Enjoyment of Unpleasant Places*—a suggestive subject—were printed in the *Portfolio* for August and November of that year, 1875, and earlier in the same year, almost on the very day of his meeting with Henley, indeed, appeared his pamphlet *An Appeal to the Clergy of the Church of Scotland*, bearing the imprint of W. Blackwood & Son. These slight contributions by no means represented the total of his "output," for at that time he was producing much which his better judgment condemned to the flames.

The *Appeal* is a plea for religious tolerance and unity, the unity, in fact, which has since become a question of urgent policy with the Scottish Churches; but at the time of its appearance the tiny brochure of eleven pages received no attention whatever. To-day it is well worth reading

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

for its catholicity, its good sense, and its prescient insight. The year 1875 also saw the production of his paper on Béranger for the *Encyclopædia Britannica*, as firstfruits of his studies in French literature. The curious in such matters may profitably compare it with Renan's article on the same subject, and mark the difference between a neophyte striving uncertainly to express judgments not yet clarified in his own mind, and one of the most accomplished and acutest critics of the age and an all but unrivalled master of style. In the comparison Stevenson appears very much the apprentice.

There were other articles for the *Britannica* written or projected, one especially, on Burns, for which the young author was paid five guineas, though the contribution was never used. In the course of a correspondence which followed its rejection Stevenson was obliged to confess, "I believe you are right in saying I had not said enough of what was highest and best in him. . . . The feet of clay are easier dealt with than the golden head." As we shall see, he reverted to the "feet of clay" again and omitted "the golden head" in a study almost as unworthy of him as it is of the genius of Robert Burns. His poem "Ille Terrarum," printed in *Underwoods*, and certain rather elaborate experiments in French forms of verse, of which Mr. Hellman and Professor Trent in the recovered and rescued fragments give several interesting examples, belong to that time.

EXPERIMENTS IN FICTION

But just then his real strength went into fiction, though as yet without any decisive or, indeed, very

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

promising results. He talked much of a "long short story," called with a characteristic touch of cynicism, "When the Devil was Well." Scene and characters were Italian of a picturesquely-remote age—the fifteenth century, to be exact—and the ingredients, meant to be the essence of passion and romance, were a poet, a painter, a sculptor, and a beautiful duchess. He was much in love with it, though Henley and others found it unsatisfactory and advised him to commit it to the flames. That advice, however, was not taken. The manuscript was preserved, and in 1921 the story in its complete form was privately printed by the Bibliophile Society of Boston, with an introduction by Professor Trent, based on notes furnished by Mr. George S. Hellman. To-day it has a special interest as Stevenson's first extant work in fiction.

Two short stories, "King Matthias's Hunting Horn" and "The Two Falconers of Cairnstone," which were designed as part of a series of at least a dozen, were destroyed. The waste of effort is amazing, and indicates that Stevenson's gifts as a story-teller developed with exceeding slowness and difficulty. He complained that the creative effort, though not as yet in any way exceptional, exhausted him. Nor is this surprising. An essay, a sketch, are, comparatively speaking, easy things. A work of creative art, a work that breathes of life and presents humanity, as it were, in the act, that exhibits the forces of destiny at play, making or marring human lives—such a work is and always must be supremely difficult and exhausting. In the "fine frenzy" of creation, the novelist writes with his heart's blood, and the more intense his imaginative effort, the more he con-

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

centrates and vitalises his characters, the more he exhausts his own essential vitality. For it is only when virtue passes out of him that his characters begin to live.

As yet Stevenson, the engaging discursive essayist, lacked the power necessary for a sustained work of fiction. He was to progress splendidly, in the end he was to take a bounding leap as of a sudden access of gathered strength. That is why in force and sweep of imagination—and in great literature that is the final and decisive test—the Stevenson of *Weir of Hermiston* is as far above and beyond the Stevenson of *Memories and Portraits* as Shakespeare is above and beyond Montaigne, or Scott is above and beyond Hazlitt.

But meanwhile he was experimenting zealously if not very forcibly. Two hours of story-telling left him "shaky and crying," with a backache from sheer emotional strain. That is a significant confession, for in his mature work emotional intensity is nowhere a distinguishing quality. But of that I shall have something to say later.

Domestic relations were now running so smoothly that when he "passed advocate" he was to receive £1,000 from his father, a glittering prospect to the impecunious young author. The gift was meant to support him during the lean years at the Bar; but Louis appears to have taken the promise of such riches as an incentive to persevere in his chosen career. While others were talking law and picturing him as advocate and judge, he was offering Appleton of the *Academy* a series of papers on some French writers—de Banville, Coppée, and other moderns. The offer was not accepted, but Appleton allowed him to review J. H. Ingram's edition of the works of Poe, an article which led to

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

an acrimonious correspondence between reviewed and reviewer.

He was still, too, a traveller. In the beginning of April he was off to join his cousin, Bob Stevenson, at Fontainebleau, the first of many visits to a place which was destined to play a fateful part in his life. A year later, in May 1876, his impressions were given in the *Cornhill* under the title of "Forest Notes," a delightful sketch written in his brightest early manner. It was a flying visit. By mid-April he was again in Scotland, in Edinburgh, then at Bridge of Allan with his father; and a few days later at Swanston with Charles Baxter and Walter Simpson. Towards the end of the month he made his final appearance in the Fleeming Jenkin theatricals, as Orsino in "Twelfth Night," playing the character with all the glory of Solomon in raiment "heavy with gold and stage jewellery." In mid-July came the call to the Bar, as already described. Parliament House had scant enough interest in literature; but it had heard of the eccentric Louis Stevenson, and once as he appeared someone, parodying Wordsworth, laughed sarcastically, "Here comes the marvellous boy." Though cut to the quick, the victim of this pleasantry could find no retort. As Henley observed, though fluent enough in talk he was never ready or apt in repartee. Later, in lampooning an obnoxious member of the Savile Club who had rudely repulsed his advances, he made the offender confess—

I am a kind of farthing dip,
Unfriendly to the nose and eyes—

an achievement in satire which scarcely marks its author for a place beside Pope or Burns.

By the end of July he was off once more, this

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

time with Sir Walter Simpson to Fontainebleau, tramping vigorously and enjoying the scenery and open air to the immense advantage of his health. One excursion up the valley of the Loing ended ignominiously for Louis in a prison cell at Châtillon-sur-Loing, where he proved a little too Bohemian even for the French police. They flatly declined to believe that so disreputable-looking a person could possibly be what he claimed to be—a reputable British citizen taking a holiday. He was a pedlar, an imposter bent on some nefarious scheme. Therefore, declining to hear his protests, or at any rate declining to heed them, they incontinently clapped him in jail, pending investigation. Not even the palpable, solid British respectability of his companion saved him.

Other adventures due to similar causes were to follow; but Louis, though often angry and disgusted, was not cured of his Bohemianism. Liberated after some formalities, he shook the dust of Loing off his feet, met his parents at Wiesbaden, and with them finished his holiday at Homburg and Mantz. Inevitably the Châtillon episode provided him with the chance of making picturesque "copy"; for he had the journalistic faculty for turning all experiences and adventures to account. "How do journalists fetch up their drivel?" he wrote long afterwards, when groaning in the agonies of composition. He ought to have known, for much of his own work, both early and late, is journalism, ornate and highly wrought, but unmistakably journalism. This is no disparagement. Thackeray and Dickens were both journalists, only they did not speak loftily of "fetching up drivel." His efforts just then, indeed, were mostly confined to journalistic work for the

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Academy and *Vanity Fair*. Not all he proposed or wrote was accepted, but to *Vanity Fair* in December 1875 he contributed a slashing review of Browning's "Inn Album," which caused him much gloating exultation. He praised the matter; but the manner he found a subject for boisterous mirth. "I have slated R. B. pretty handsomely," was his own judgment, the inference being that R. B. did not understand the art of poetry, or at any rate form in poetry, as R. L. S. understood it. Later, at the house of Mr. Sidney Colvin, the poet and his reviewer met, and there is no sign that Browning remembered or resented the attack. The chances are that it was entirely unknown to him.

A feverish restlessness still possessed Louis, making it a species of torture to remain long in one place. In January 1876 he undertook a tour, mostly on foot, by Ayr, Girvan, Maybole, Ballantrae (where he slept a night), Stranraer, and Wigton, as usual with the journalist's eye to "copy." The result was "A Winter's Walk in Carrick and Galloway," which appeared in a summer number of the *Illustrated London News*. Returning home as "fit as a fiddle," he plunged into literary work with renewed zest. In April came the *Academy* article on Salvini's "Macbeth" which roused the ire of Fleeming Jenkin and brought the charge of egotism already noted. In June his paper on "Walking Tours" was printed in the *Cornhill*. More important still, the August number of that magazine contained Part I of "Virginibus Puerisque," the paper on Charles of Orleans following in the December number. These contributions owed much to the sympathetic, but not always flattering, criticism of Leslie Stephen. In those leisurely days editors had time to enter

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

into long, detailed correspondence with contributors, an editorial practice which has almost completely gone out of fashion, very much, one fears, to the detriment of periodical literature.

In spring Stevenson paid yet another flying visit to the Fontainebleau region—Barbizon, Grez, Montigny—where he spent a few weeks with a colony of artists of various nationalities, recently migrated from Paris for better opportunity to work. But in July he was in Edinburgh and at Swanston, discussing play-writing and other literary projects with Henley. Part of August he spent with the Jenkins in the neighbourhood of Loch Carron, imbibing the Highland spirit which permeates so much of his work and pursuing the illusion of a Celtic ancestry, an illusion that, as we know, remained with him to the end. From the Highlands he returned to Edinburgh; as it proved, to plunge suddenly back into the old life, the old modes of gaiety, which had caused so much distress, censure, and acerbity. A bewildering spirit of recklessness appears to have seized him. The old haunts were revisited, the old pleasures, euphemistically called Bohemian, were renewed with an abandon of self-indulgence which might well inspire the moralist to pungent homilies on the eccentricities of human folly. An independent but warmly-sympathetic critic has truthfully remarked that Stevenson "was never, in his early life at least, ostracised by his friends for his spotless and unworldly purity."

One contemporary witness has borne incontrovertible testimony to the incidents of that period. Henley had by that time left the hospital, and was in private quarters where he was able to receive his friends with the robust and joyous hospitality which

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

always characterised him. He saw much of Louis, and knew, as no other person then alive, the secrets of his life. It was to that time he referred in his famous article when he wrote of nursing Stevenson "in secret [at 21 Lothian Street] hard by the old Bristo Port till he could make shift to paddle the *Arethusa*."¹ Moreover, among Stevenson's papers there was recently found a fragment, "The Story of a Recluse," which, though apparently written some ten years later, contains clear autobiographic touches bearing on the events of the late summer of 1876.

"THE ETERNAL WOMAN BY THE WAYSIDE"

Happily the aberration was brief, and Louis, sufficiently restored to health, crossed to Antwerp to prepare for the canoeing expedition with Sir Walter Simpson described with picturesque detail in *An Inland Voyage*. Before undertaking it, however, he surprised his friend Mr. Will H. Low, the well-known American artist, by appearing in Paris avid for news of Barbizon and Grez. What he heard filled him with a comical horror. Grez, the chief artistic centre of the moment, had hitherto been an Eveless Eden. Now a woman had dared to set foot on ground sacred to man alone, and had settled there serenely as one who had a right to dwell where she pleased. Stevenson listened dolefully to the tale of this invasion by a petticoat. "It is the beginning of the end," he remarked tragically—"the beginning of the end."

¹ He was "taken in" by Henley because he had in effect been turned out-of-doors by his father. On another occasion, and for a similar reason, he shared Henley's room for three months.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Perturbed and excited, he hastened to Montigny, which lies some two miles distant from Grez. There finding the disquieting tidings confirmed, he dispatched his cousin, Bob Stevenson, a member of the artistic community, to reconnoitre and report. Bob did not return, and Simpson, recently arrived on the spot, was sent to find him. As he too tarried, the impatient Louis set off by himself to investigate, incited, doubtless, by the element of mystery and adventure. It was almost as good as stalking imaginary Indians in the garden of Colinton Manse or chasing imaginary pirates on an imaginary Spanish Main. As he reached the little inn where the intruder was quartered night was falling. The weather being soft and warm, the windows were wide open. As Louis approached, treading cautiously as a hunter tracking down game, the sound of voices in gay and animated talk floated out on the still air.

Next minute in the soft lamplight he caught sight of those within. He paused to take note. There were two women, one in the maturity of early middle age, the other a girl in her teens, besides a small boy of ten and the defaulting Bob and Simpson, with some other diners. Stevenson gazed, all his senses in his eyes, his gaze resting especially on the elder woman, sitting quietly, dressed in black. She was Fanny Van de Grift Osbourne, and Stevenson confessed that with him it was a case of love at the first glimpse through an open window. Vibrating with excitement, he entered abruptly, almost like a character in transpontine melodrama. In the familiar old story a certain man came to curse and stayed to bless. The dramatic allegory was repeated in the experience of Stevenson. He forgot his indignation over the

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

sacrilege of feminine intrusion. The "eternal woman waiting by the wayside" of whom he had sung was here, waiting, as it turned out, for him, and he surrendered at sight.

Mrs. Osbourne, living apart from her husband, had come to France partly for peace, partly to study art and educate her children—a daughter of seventeen and two boys. The younger of the boys, Hervey, aged five, had recently died in Paris, and his mother's grief was still green. But the advent of the lively, talkative Scot with the ingratiating manner gave life a new and romantic zest. The gallant had "a way with him"; the lady was lonely and depressed. Here were all the elements of romance, with obstacles that seemed insurmountable added for piquancy.

Mrs. Osbourne had been married at seventeen to a youth of twenty with good looks and an all-too-easy disposition. She was now in her thirty-seventh year, while Louis was in his twenty-sixth, but the difference in age was apparently rather an incentive than a hindrance. At any rate, the acquaintance speedily developed into friendship, the friendship into something more romantic and glowing. In character Mrs. Osbourne was a woman of much force, and her gifts both as artist and writer were considerable. In physique she was small, square, and compact of figure, with black hair and dusky complexion of what may roughly be called the gipsy type. Her eyes too were dark and at least as ready to flash in anger as melt in pity. Her chin was a pattern of firmness, and her mouth in moments of displeasure could shut with traplike decisiveness. She appears to have been of Swedish-Dutch extraction, but her progenitors on both sides had for generations been American.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

It has been stated "officially" that Stevenson first met her on his return from the canoeing trip with Sir Walter Simpson. The statement is wrong. The meeting took place before, not after, that trip, which the now ardent Stevenson, indeed, was disposed to regard as a disagreeable interruption of his love-making. Of the expedition itself and the exploits of *Cigarette* and *Arethusa* his own account may be read in *An Inland Voyage*. The descriptions have touches of vivid reality, for Stevenson had not forgotten Henley's admonition to keep his "eye on the object"; but the work lacks ease and freedom of movement. It is on the whole self-conscious and somewhat too strenuously and laboriously light, with spasms of the fantastic which reveal the still-unconquered impishness of the juvenile Stevenson. Readers may trace in it the influence of *A Sentimental Journey*, with something of the *Reisebilder*, though the arch, irresponsible whimsicality of Sterne and the clear Grecian charm of Heine were as yet equally beyond its author. His own opinion was that "it is not badly written, thin, mildly cheery and strained," a critical self-judgment which no impartial reader will be likely to dispute.

In the Loing Valley walking-trip Stevenson's disreputable, tramp-like appearance caused trouble, and one of the most amusing passages in the *Voyage* is the account of his treatment by the disgusted, irate hostess of La Fêre, who was every whit as sure of his evil character and intentions as the police superintendent at Châtillon. In other respects the experiences of the canoeists were neither comic nor exhilarating, though Stevenson, with his habitual cheerfulness, made light of them. The weather was execrable, there were difficulties

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

and discomforts with lodgings, and once, in colliding with a fallen tree in the swollen Oise, Louis narrowly escaped drowning by clambering, drenched and shaken, on to the half-submerged trunk. "I have fought it through in the worst weather I ever saw in France," he reported to Henley. The outdoor life, however, was wholesome and bracing, and despite hardships his health benefited. Every morning he was awake at six, and generally he was asleep by half-past nine in the evening. "If that isn't healthy," he exclaimed, "egad! I wonder what is."

Healthy it was, and to bodily well-being was added a delectable expectancy yet more exhilarating. Mrs. Osbourne was waiting for him at Grez, and to her he hastened with an impatient ardour which his conventional, phlegmatic, slow-moving companion, Walter Simpson, found somewhat embarrassing. At that moment there was little enough of the Shorter Catechist, little enough of the Calvinist or Covenanter, in the eager, enraptured Louis. Then and always he pursued the desire of his heart as if it were the one thing that mattered, as, in fact, it was to him. Despite legal obstacles which most men would have thought insurmountable, he appeared frankly in the character of a hero of romance, a sort of young Lochinvar who scoffed at difficulties and conventions; and at no point does he seem to have suffered the mortification of a repulse. The bereaved mother, the aggrieved and dejected wife, gradually forgot her grief, her wrecked happiness, and joined in the general life of the gay, hearty, companionable little community.

A favourite resort was the leafy, fragrant inn garden. There in the soft evenings under a

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

spreading tree Mrs. Osbourne would swing bewitchingly in a hammock, "looking prettier and prettier," while Louis, in duck-trousers, frayed velvet jacket, and tasselled smoking-cap, sat close by reading aloud, extolling Walt Whitman or chipping in with boats and voyages to Simpson, who fanned himself patiently and listened and looked in wondering silence.

Possibly he was thinking what Heriot Row would say to this new business. But Heriot Row was not told of it; for, knowing too well what its judgment would be, Louis diplomatically bound his friends to secrecy. So that, contrary to Shakespeare's opinion, the course of true love ran smoothly, deliciously. If there were moments of doubt, of anxiety, they do not appear to have troubled Louis, who was perhaps too deeply engrossed to look or think beyond the passing moment.

The present moment is our ain.
The next we never saw—

sang the Poet of Scotland; and Louis was content to have it so. "The seasons crimsoned all things with their roses. Apollo sang to his lyre, while a little Pan prattled on his reeds; and Venus danced very sweetly to soft music," as in the ancient tale.

Sports and pastimes enlivened and invigorated the gaieties. There were canoeing contests on the river, somewhat on the model of "bumping" competitions on the Cam at Cambridge; there were water-excursions to Nemours and elsewhere, with studies of French peasant life and manners which the novelist providently stored away for future use. In hall there were improvised dances, and occasionally, when strolling players chanced to

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

come along, there were theatrical entertainments of a kind which would scarcely have passed muster at 3 Great Stuart Street. One such incident pleasantly illustrates a notable phase of Stevenson's character. One evening two vagrant players, a man and his wife, appeared at the inn, ragged, hungry, forlorn, business having fallen to zero. Touched by their plight, Louis exerted himself, and a liberal purse was made up for them. In return they related their experiences and misfortunes on the road, recitals which Stevenson afterwards worked up into the short story "Providence and the Guitar." When two years later the story was printed and paid for, he sent the couple the whole amount received to help in educating their little hunchback daughter in Paris.

Nor were strolling players his only beneficiaries. If he had funds, no friend of his was allowed to suffer the hardship of empty pockets, for with quixotic chivalry he held it to be a crime against humanity to withhold aid in time of need. His ready munificence explains many of his financial straits both earlier and later. Froude remarks that, even when faced with starvation, Carlyle had something to spare for his own family. Stevenson's family needed no aid; but his purse was constantly open to others, a privilege of which some did not hesitate to take free advantage. A striking example of his sensitiveness on this point may here be mentioned. After reading some of Dickens's Christmas stories he felt so good, so generous, that he wished to go forth at once and do something for somebody in distress. "I shall never listen," he told Mrs. Sitwell, "to the nonsense they tell one about not giving money. I *shall* give money, not that I haven't done so always; but I shall do it

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

now with a high hand." In the same vein he pleaded with God to grant the people bread.

Enough of bread for all—
That through the famished town
Cold hunger may lie down
With none to-night.

If he had a thousand faults, the one great virtue of generosity was his in a measure that has rarely been surpassed.

In those early days he jested much about "the dibbs." Usually the "dibbs" were lamentably scarce, but during part at least of that time in France his pockets overflowed, the £1,000 promised to him "on passing advocate" having been paid. To have cash was to spend it as if he had but to dip his hand into a Fortunatus-purse, for, save under pressure of sheer necessity, he was rather markedly deficient in the Scottish virtue of thrift. His personal expenses, indeed, were extremely modest, for as with many another man of genius his wants were simple and easily supplied. He admired and imitated Dumas; but he did not imitate the vauntful Alexandre's taste for showy extravagance in personal adornment. Whereas the author of *Monte Cristo* professed to be at his best in impeccable evening-dress, frilled, perfumed, and pomaded, Stevenson was most himself in the easy, negligent attire of a tramp. 'Tailors' and hatters' bills, high living at fashionable hotels, were almost negligible items in his expenditure. Nor were his pleasures really of the costly kind. Yet in France then and for some time afterwards his capital diminished with a rapidity which clearly denotes large acts of generosity. It was his delight to play Prince

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Bountiful; and had he been thwarted he had probably been offended.

In his earlier visits to France, such time as he did not spend in Paris was spent mostly at Barbizon, which enchanted him by its quiet, quaint old-world charm. There in the picturesque Siron's inn, "that excellent artists' barrack," he enjoyed the freedom he loved, coming and going as he pleased at any hour of the day or night, and even helping himself from larder and cellar at his pleasure. For the Siron, unlike most of their successors in the great business of hotel-keeping, were innocent and trustful. Once a week they made a general computation, and the gross sum due was divided by the number of guests, who paid each his equal share without question. It was a delectable communal system, recalling the golden age when honesty and honour were never suspect, and men had the faith and the courage to be brothers. One easily believes it had a unique and particular charm for Stevenson. The Siron certainly lost nothing by their trust in human nature. There were other joys and advantages. Stevenson found it delightful, for instance, to wake in the morning breathing the wet odour of the forest. More delightful still, perhaps, was it to wander in the forest itself, drinking in its influences, to lie under a tree with a book, or lounge on the grass, watching and criticising his friends as they painted.

As in Edinburgh, he was accounted an idler, and in appearance he was idle, but in appearance only. Imagination was actively gathering impressions, devising, projecting, building airy castles, some of which were to materialise, to his own profit and the delight of mankind. Among the groves of Barbizon he enjoyed "glories of exhilaration," as

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

he told his mother ; dreamed great dreams of works " that Shakespeare himself might be proud to have conceived " ; such dreams and raptures, in fact, as with the creative artist must precede the actual work of creation. According to Horace a man does not change his nature by crossing the sea. The Stevenson of Barbizon, of Grez, of Montigny, of Paris, was precisely the Stevenson of Edinburgh and Swanston. What he wished to do he did, what he wished to have he took ; and through all and in spite of all distractions he was steadfast in pursuing the great purpose of his life. " I am consistent in my schemes," he said of himself, and under all apparent idleness or aberration he was consistent with the consistency of iron.

FRENCH STUDIES

Various tender interests kept him mostly at Grez throughout the late summer and early autumn of 1876. But he was frequently in Paris with his cousin Bob Stevenson, Will Low, and other members of the congenial, easy-going artistic set. Paris had always for him the charm of a boundless urbanity and catholicity. It was not censorious like Edinburgh ; it knew nothing of the woes and terrors of the Shorter Catechism, and did not lose any sleep over the Ten Commandments. Moreover, in the great duty of happiness, as he understood and expounded it, the French were the artists of Europe. Even the sordid and squalid they touched with a sentiment of romance, or at any rate of gaiety and good breeding. They eschewed long faces, and did not lose their voices " singing anthems." Instinctively Stevenson was attracted. Not for

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

nothing had there come to him the Gallic heritage of which he was unaware, save by its impelling impulses in his blood. He had in truth two souls, in themselves strangely contradictory, one northern and Covenanting, the other southern and sensuously gay, and in certain characteristic moods the southern was dominant. Often it happened that he was as eager to escape from the frigid, numbing, moral atmosphere of his native city as from its sullen skies and blighting east winds. In Paris he found the sunshine that set his temperament in a glow.

And he made the most of his visits. He consoorted with all sorts of people, put up in all sorts of lodgings, according to his humour or the state of his purse: sometimes in cheap hotels; sometimes in an attic with a chair, a bed, and a bare deal table for furniture; sometimes with roistering students in the Latin Quarter. Often he and his companions foraged in back streets and cheap markets for food, which they carried home and cooked themselves. To the vagabond disposition it was delightful to lead a nomad life in a populous city, to be Arabs and even Ishmaelites, at the very heart of civilisation. Occasionally the Lenten fare was varied by bursts of luxury with lobster mayonnaise, kidneys, "lots of Carton," and other breakfast delicacies. Nor were adventures lacking to spice the brimming cup of Bohemianism. One illuminative incident was described by Andrew Lang. In a café one day a blustering Frenchman remarked sneeringly that the English were cowards. Stevenson, who sat close by, instantly sprang to his feet and hit the traducer across the face.

"Monsieur, vous m'avez frappé," roared the infuriated Frenchman.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

"A ce qu'il paraît," was the cool response. Friends intervened, and, fortunately perhaps for the fragile but undaunted Scot, the matter ended there.

A more amusing incident occurred one night as Stevenson was leaving the Théâtre Français after a performance of the *Demi Monde* by the younger Dumas, then a popular idol in Paris. He had come forth in a fury of indignation with the piece, and in his blind haste tramped on the toes of an old gentleman. He turned to apologise, but repented in the act. "No," he said truculently; "you are one of the *lâches* who have been applauding that play." The retort was a delicious lesson in manners. "The old gentleman," Stevenson related later, "laid his hand on my arm and said, with a smile that was truly heavenly in its temperance, irony, and good nature, 'Ah! monsieur, vous êtes bien jeune.'"

But these things were, so to speak, mere incidentals. To Stevenson the real interest, the real business, was the intensive study of French life, character, and literature. He had already written with insight and appreciation of Victor Hugo. Part of his present studies were to bear fruit in his essay on Villon, and yet more vividly in *A Lodging for the Night*, in which Villon again appears in all the lustre of unredeemed villainy. In *The Wrecker* and some other works, scenes and personal experiences of that time in Paris are reproduced with remarkable fidelity; for Stevenson had this in common with Byron, that he could not help dropping into autobiography.

He tried to read in public libraries, but the attempt was a failure. "In public offices of all kinds," he confessed, "I feel like Esther before

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Ahasuerus." Finding the libraries impossible, he made a habit of stealing off alone to the second-hand bookstalls on the Quai Voltaire and similar places by the Seine, and return panting under a burden of books, meant not for light reading but for strenuous study. French influences were then, in fact, moulding his middle style, the style which lies midway between that of the early essays, when he was almost wholly imitative, and that of the later romances, when he was passing beyond imitation. From the first Montaigne and Dumas had been his models. To them with varying degrees of effect were added Molière, Voltaire, Rochefoucauld, Michelet, Baudelaire, De Musset, Sainte-Beuve, Flaubert, Daudet, the earlier writings of Bourget, Anatole France, and others. Even "the troughs of Zolaism" were not neglected. And being still imitative, though with growing discrimination, still seeking examples and suggestions in the literary art, he read intensely, critically, with every faculty on the alert, noting the apt word, the telling phrase, the exquisite harmony, urbanity, and precision in which French prose at its best excels.

Flaubert, the most arduous and anxious cultivator of style in a nation of stylists, might and did reveal to him a passion even more absorbing, more intense than his own for the *mot juste*, the exact and only word; and whereas he had hitherto been a mere dilettante preoccupied with the fripperies, the externals or petty details of his craft, Flaubert's torturing anxiety was to secure literal accuracy of presentation; in other words, so to purge and clarify form that it should mirror with absolute truth the contents of his own mind or imagination as he wished them to be seen or known. According

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

to his theory, for every idea there is the one peculiar word or phrase, and his own practice resolved itself into a painful, often a morbid, search for the severe accuracy which that theory imposes. Hence a scrupulous sincerity in communicating to the reader his own vision or image of things, and a conviction, frequently expressed in his letters, that success in that delicate and difficult task is the last triumph of style. Banality, vagueness, flabbiness, the facile second-hand expression; the foppiness of euphemism for its own sake, were to him equal crimes against art and truth. For he was of Fuller's mind, that "to clothe low-creeping matter with high-flown language is not a fine fancy, but a flat foolery. It rather loads than raises a wren to fasten the feathers of an ostrich to her wings."

Stevenson, it may be thought, found some of his own pet theories demolished, but he was far too sincere a student, far too acute a critic, far too intent on his life's purpose, to ignore the lesson or its import. Lowell notes how "fame's great antiseptic, Style," makes for immortality in literature. Flaubert, perhaps more than any other, taught Stevenson, as he taught many another young writer, that while style is the best preservative to make it effective, there must be something to preserve. Macaulay, in defending his own style against some strictures by Napier, editor of the *Edinburgh Review*, remarked pertinently, "The first rule of all writing—that rule to which every other is subordinate—is that the words used by the writer shall be such as most fully and precisely convey his meaning to the great body of his readers. All considerations about dignity and purity of style ought to bend to this consideration."

As a result of his new studies Stevenson was

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

seized with an enthusiasm for vividness, for making the reader, willy-nilly, see and feel by sheer force of presentation (as with Hugo), the effort to woo him by subtlety and charm of style being tedious and uncertain. He was, in fact, making the discovery which sooner or later comes to every artist in letters filled with illusions of beauty, that the public is blindly indifferent to style, and indeed is rather puzzled than pleased by any unusual display of dexterity in the manipulation of language. It reads to be amused, thrilled, melted, to laugh and weep, to wallow in sentiment or scream over farce. Only an eccentric few, and those in moments of aberration, read to think or to gratify the æsthetic sense; and since appreciation of style involves a certain mental tension or alertness, the exercise is rarely popular. Of nothing is the general reader more chary than of thought, which he, and more specially she, dismisses disdainfully as dry and dull.

Stevenson, being an artist in grain, learned much from Flaubert, and this in particular, that the right word is inevitably the vivid word, since it best expresses or describes reality. Flaubert, then, did much for the ardent student, and to precept he added example. He wrote *Madame Bovary*, a brilliant book which triumphantly illustrated all his own principles of composition, yet for all its brilliancy appeared strangely cramped and constipated. Stevenson saw the master's defect. With all his splendid qualities, his devotion and enthusiasm, the great Frenchman lacked just the one thing needful—a large and generous freedom. Others had it and prospered gloriously. The great romancers Scott, Dumas, Hugo, were universally popular, not because they were stylists, but because they realised the vividness of life and set themselves

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

with glowing imaginations to reproduce it. What they did he would do.

To be the darling of a coterie, to be relished by fastidious eclectics as a writer of exquisite taste and skill, was sweet, but sweeter still was the thought of winning the suffrages of the immense promiscuous crowd, the genial Philistines who buy books with no regard whatever to their æsthetic beauty or value. Several years were to pass before success came to him; but his real start as a writer of romantic fiction dates from the French influences of that time. "If a thing is meant to be read," he remarked, in his new-found zeal, "it is just as well to make it readable." The sentiment marks a new departure, a new ideal of his craft. The essayist was disappearing, the novelist coming into view.

Summer passed into autumn. In mid-October he left Mrs. Osbourne and the congenial artistic fraternity at Grez and returned to Edinburgh, with some vague, half-implied intention to take up practice at the Bar. His father was not yet reconciled to the idea of literature as a career, indeed, he continued to protest vehemently that Louis was wasting his time and ruining his prospects. Law was at least respectable, and a potential judge in the family was a more heartening object than a nondescript author struggling for a foothold. Besides, success as an advocate would in some measure atone for failure as an engineer. But solicitors were miserly with briefs, and Louis had the excuse that nobody desired to employ him, not even in the interest of picturesque criminals who might provide rich material for fiction. To placate the paternal conscience, there were perfunctory attendances at Parliament House, but soon they

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

dwindled and ceased, and wig and gown were discarded for ever.

Fortunately Henley was still in Edinburgh, and with him, Fleeming Jenkin, and Charles Baxter the old intimacies were revived. In the house in Great Stuart Street, Henley and Jenkin disputed hotly but amicably over the right use of the English language, Louis in his sprite-like way chiming in with quip and paradox to keep the argument lively. In January he was again in London associating with old friends and making new ones, mostly at the Savile Club. There, one day, Mr. Colvin introduced him to Mr. Edmund W. Gosse, the critic and poet. Six years before they had met casually as fellow-passengers on a West Highland steamer southward bound from Portree in Skye, met and parted as tourists do. The second meeting marked the beginning of a friendship which lasted as long as Stevenson's life ; and few contemporaries have written of his work both in prose and verse with more insight and appreciation than has Mr. Gosse. Louis's liveliness and gaiety enchanted his new acquaintance. "A childlike mirth leaped and danced in him," wrote Mr. Gosse, in describing the meeting. "He seemed to skip on the hills of life." Louis just then had an inordinate fondness for joking ; but it is significant of the quality of his jokes that they appear to have been forgotten almost as soon as heard. The truth is, he was in one of his highly-febrile, half-hysterical moods that made repose or self-possession impossible.

Being in funds, he crossed from London to France, hurrying on to Grez, where Mrs. Osbourne was still pursuing her art-studies. He was soon back in Edinburgh, where he passed the spring of

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

1877, again seeing much of Henley, Fleeming Jenkin, and Charles Baxter.

In May, the French influences being active, he was deep in a novel, *The Hair Trunk ; or, the Ideal Commonwealth*. The scene was laid in the Navigator Islands, where a company of Cambridge student-adventurers founded a new society which apparently was to set an example of freedom and happiness to a world suffering from too much civilisation. The adventures were wild and weird, and some of the " comic business " appealed to Henley ; but the general judgment was that it would not do, and it was destroyed. Meanwhile its author had adventures of his own on hand, and for part of June and July he was again at Grez, the attraction there being irresistible.

A second canoeing trip with Sir Walter Simpson had been planned some time previously, the course to be by the Loing, the Loire, and the Rhone to the Mediterranean. It was, however, abandoned for a more ambitious and romantic scheme evolved by the ingenious brain of Bob Stevenson. This was nothing less than a leisurely vagabond pilgrimage among the canals and lesser rivers of Europe in a travelling houseboat. Simpson, the financier of the droll little society, proposed a joint-stock company in which all should take equal shares. Under his direction, and mainly out of his own pocket, funds were raised, a barge was purchased and with noble generosity christened *The Eleven Thousand Virgins of Cologne*. It was a common little river cargo-boat, but it was to be transformed into a floating palace of delight, with cosy rooms and elaborate decorations, as Bob suggested, " of pink Cupids rolling on pink clouds and that sort of ruck," also with books in the cabins, well-filled

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

tobacco-jars, old Burgundy and other pleasurable commodities, something perhaps less regal than Cleopatra's gorgeous barge, but in exquisite harmony with the tastes and aspirations of its owners. The beauty-to-be was taken to Moret, a village near Grez at the junction of the Loing and the Seine, and moored in the river for reconstruction. The result is amusingly described by Stevenson himself, how for a little there was immense enthusiasm with "emulous labour" and a free flow of champagne. But, alas! finances went awry and the *Eleven Thousand Virgins* "rotted in the stream where she was beautified." In the end she was seized and sold by the contractor; and with her went the *Arethusa* and the *Cigarette*. So dissolved in bankruptcy a beautiful and romantic dream of vagabond adventure.

The alluring project of a canal and river pilgrimage having evaporated ignominiously, Stevenson reluctantly returned to Edinburgh; but in August he was off once more, this time to Penzance with his parents. After a short stay duty called Thomas Stevenson home, and Louis and his mother went on to the Scilly Isles. He found Cornwall bleak—bleaker than the bleakest parts of Scotland. But luckily he had resources within himself, resources which kept his pen ceaselessly busy. More and more French influences were telling both in style and choice of theme.

His vivid, and in some respects repulsive, Villon story, "A Lodging for the Night," appeared in the October number of *Temple Bar*; and in the following January "The Sire de Malétroit's Door" was printed in the same magazine, both with warm editorial commendation. He was also happily busy for the *Cornhill*, where the guiding

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

hand of Leslie Stephen was proving invaluable. His "half-revealing, half-concealing" little sketch "On Falling in Love" appeared in the number for February 1877; and in July followed "An Apology for Idlers," one of the most characteristic, as it is one of the most charming, of his minor pieces, though it had been declined by George Grove for *Macmillan's*. In the next number came "Francis Villon: Student, Poet, and House-breaker," a character-study done with rare zest and penetration.

Not all he wrote, however, was accepted. The well-known essay "Some Portraits by Raeburn," written then, went a round of the Press in vain. Leslie Stephen felt obliged to decline it for the *Cornhill*, and it was rejected in turn by the *Pall Mall Gazette* and *Blackwood's Magazine*. In Edinburgh there are two popular periodicals, *Blackwood's* and *Chambers's Journal*, yet to neither was Stevenson ever a contributor.

From Cornwall he hastened back to France, where he passed the next three months in a state of high tension, flitting to and fro between Paris, Barbizon, and Grez. More than ever he was the gallant and the Prince Bountiful. Like his own Florizel (in whom we may trace lineaments of his creator), he was distinguished by a courtly grace and a royal, open-handed generosity. Hawthorne has ventured the opinion that a man of genius can always be a man of affairs if he cares to take the trouble. Shakespeare and Voltaire are instances in point, the one as an actor-manager, the other as an army contractor.

But Stevenson was not born with a talent for business. In particular the money-sense, with which his countrymen are thought to be super-

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

abundantly endowed, was denied him. Though he might know what thrift should be, he never really knew what it was. Money, in his judgment, was meant to be spent, not hoarded or set out to usury. Consequently, being able to put his theories into practice during those visits to France, he spent gaily, prodigally, as if the miracle of the widow's cruse of oil were a commonplace to be repeated at will in daily experience. In Paris it was his delight to entertain small companies of friends at some noted restaurant with a reputation for cuisine and wines. He bought pictures, too, not for his own gratification, but solely to help needy artists. Equally to the purpose he induced the good-natured, diffident, easy-going Simpson to follow his example.

"A heavy purse," says the proverb, "makes a light heart." Money, however, was not the only nor the chief incentive to gaiety—his health, comparatively speaking, was excellent. Yet even then, when the world seemed at last to be smiling upon him in more ways than one, he had moments of utter weariness and depression as if there were nothing left worth living for. At times he was weary even of love. In a little piece written about that time, and given by Mr. Hellman in one of the Bibliophile Society's volumes, this mood finds touching expression :

The rain is over and done :
I am aweary, dear, of love.

And love's so slow and time so long,
And hearts and eyes so blindly wrong,
I am half weary of my love,
And pray that life were done.

They understand little of Robert Louis Stevenson who picture him as a creature all fire and air,

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

revelling Puck-like in perpetual levity and light-heartedness. No man of his gifts and craft ever did or ever can so revel ; for unbroken, unruffled gaiety would be an impossible contradiction of the creative spirit. Every imaginative artist, whether he be painter or writer, has his moments of crushing gloom. For if imagination excites and exhilarates to raptures unknown to the stolid and phlegmatic, it also sinks to depths which, happily for themselves, they never plumb. A wise man has said that for every gift a price must be paid ; and imagination, the highest of all human faculties, takes heavy, often cruel, toll of its possessors. Stevenson, like other gifted men, had the defects of his qualities. If his mercurial temperament leaped up in the sun, it plunged as quickly to zero in the shade. In public before men's eyes he was most strenuously cheerful, for, like an actor on the stage, he had a part to play. But alone with himself, and looking before and after, he was a different man. Then, indeed, he justified Henley's "of Hamlet most of all" Yes! of Hamlet most of all. And the Hamlet moods were paralysing.

In his present situation there was much to cause mental tumult and confusion. He was, in fact, as one struggling in the very grip of Fate. He had met the woman he desired above all other women in the world, and she belonged to another. It was not in his nature to give in or give up. The poet might sing, half jauntily, "Let Love Go." The man could not accommodate himself so easily to the sentiment. The great question was, What should he do? The counsel of friends was not sought ; and volunteered, it would have been an impertinence. To those at home he dared not so much as breathe a word of what was in his heart.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

The novelist dealing impersonally with such a situation would have turned it to dramatic use, extracting elements that would fascinate and thrill the reader. But Fate is not a novelist, creating difficulties in order that she may deal out poetic justice to her creatures. Between Stevenson and the desire of his heart stood the frowning, formidable figure of the law ; and behind the law were certain other figures still more formidable. And at home there were other complications to which fuller reference will be made later. The agitation, the feverish alternations of delirious hope and numbing gloom affected his literary activities, his only work of importance then being the completion of his account of the canoeing trip made a year before.

In November he returned to Edinburgh, but found the place unbearably dreary. The weather was of the worst Edinburgh sort—wet, sleety, squally, and piercingly cold. Compelled to be much indoors, he amused himself in his room at 17 Heriot Row with the boyish game of building with toy-bricks, and had passing dreams of being an architect. His friend Henley, who had helped to make Edinburgh tolerable, was gone, or was leaving to take up a journalistic career in London ; and his departure seemed to emphasise the general dreariness. “ Not again,” he said to himself, thinking of the sunshine he had left—“ not again, Auld Reekie, if I can help it.” And, indeed, so far as residence in his native city went, that autumn marked the beginning of the end.

One charming experience, however, came to him just then. It is a red-letter day in the career of a young author when he receives his first real letter of appreciation from a stranger, with words that

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

affect like wine. To Stevenson it came from far-off Melbourne, the writer being Patchett Martin, later well known to English and Australian readers as a critic and poet. He had been reading the "Virginibus Puerisque" papers in the *Cornhill*, and in return for the delight so derived sent Stevenson a small volume of his own verse, *A Sweet Girl Graduate, and other Poems*. Pleased and flattered, Stevenson responded cordially, praising some of the poems, as well as certain critical articles which accompanied them, advising his correspondent to read *Clarissa Harlowe*, and ending up with a characteristic little eulogy on egotism.

That was in December 1877. On the 1st of January 1878 he was at Dieppe on his way to Paris, where he lodged at various addresses, with frequent absences at Grez. He was finishing *An Inland Voyage*, which appeared in the following May with the imprint of Kegan, Paul & Co. It is interesting and significant to recall that the price paid to him for the copyright of the book was £20, and that the publishers were by no means elated over their bargain. Considerable excisions were made in the original manuscript, part of the opening chapter being omitted, as well as one or two autobiographical touches which came so naturally to the author. One of the suppressed parts was a detailed and amusing description of a dispute with Customs officials at Antwerp regarding dues on the two canoes, the *Arethusa* and the *Cigarette*; the other an account of an angry scene caused by an official demand for a passport. Stevenson, it will be remembered, was often in difficulties with foreign officials because of his queer, un-British appearance. "If he goes without his passport he is cast into noisome dungeons," he wrote of

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

himself. "He is a born British subject, yet he has never succeeded in persuading a single official of his nationality." The official incredulity is not surprising, for anything less like the typical John Bull than Robert Louis Stevenson could scarcely be imagined.

In the present instance he vowed it was an insult to be asked for a passport, and, as an independent Briton standing fast on his dignity, flatly refused to show it. The consequence was that he was placed behind bars. Simpson (Cigarette) counselled compliance.

"But, man, show them and be done with it," he said, no doubt feeling the absurdity of the situation.

"I'll be damned if I do," was the defiant answer. 'What's the good of treaties? You have no Union Jackery about you. And, mind you, it's a fundamental part of my character.' In the end, however, the irate Arethusa handed over his passport with a "Voilà, monsieur, mais remarquez bien je proteste," and in "glances of contemptuous enmity" on both sides the incident closed.

When the book appeared, one or two reviewers said some consoling things about "promise," but for the most part they were callously indifferent. On his own part Stevenson seems to have treated the whole matter as a joke. When the work was finished and sold he wrote lightheartedly, as a sort of half-sarcastic epilogue—

Who would think herein to look.
That from these exiguous bounds
I have dug a printed book,
And a cheque for twenty pounds
Thus do those who trust the Lord
Go rejoicing on their way.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

The public shared the indifference of the critics. Part of the small first edition was "remaindered," a fate which has befallen many famous books at the outset of their careers. To-day the chief interest of the work lies in the fact that it was Stevenson's first definite, deliberate appeal for the suffrages of the larger public which extends its reading beyond magazines and newspapers. These are popular, but to the artist in letters they do not make for reputation. "The book's the thing"; but though the book in this case found its way into eclectic circles, it left the great public untouched. Stevenson affected to be pleased, but not intoxicated. He had taken the plunge, run the gauntlet and survived. The effect of such criticism as there was, was to quicken ambition and stiffen the resolution to conquer. More resolutely than ever he could trumpet the comrade's call—

Come—where the great have trod,
The great shall lead—
Come, elbow through the press,
Pluck Fortune by the dress—
By God, we must—by God,
We shall succeed.

If the grammar is not impeccable, the sentiment is rousing, and represents the settled determination of its author.

There were grateful successes to keep the flame burning. In the January number of the *Cornhill* was printed "Will o' the Mill." He was prepared for rejection by Leslie Stephen, but, to his delight, the story was not only accepted but elicited warm editorial appreciation. Of all his early stories, "Will o' the Mill" was Stevenson's own chief

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

favourite, and many good judges share his partiality. Written with a drugged, dreamy softness of style and imagery, the fable makes a vague haunting appeal to the imagination which fascinates many readers. The model, the inspiration, at least in part, was, I think, Landor, a writer whom Stevenson undoubtedly read for his classic qualities of style. Here is a passage from *The Pentameron* which seems to anticipate, indeed to breathe, the very spirit of Will : "The milder and calmer Genius (Death), the third, in proportion as I took courage to contemplate him, regarded me with more and more complacency. He held neither flower nor arrow, as the others did ; but, throwing back the cluster of dark curls that overshadowed his countenance, he presented to me his hand, openly and benignly. I shrank on looking at him so near, and yet I sighed to love him. He smiled, not without an expression of pity, at perceiving my diffidence, my timidity ; for I remembered how soft was the hand of Sleep, how warm and entrancing was Love's. By degrees I became ashamed of my ingratitude ; and, turning my face away, I held out my arms and felt my neck within his. Composure strewed and allayed all the throbbings of my bosom ; the coolness of freshest morning breathed around ; the heavens seemed to open above me, while the beautiful cheek of my deliverer rested on my head."

In a preface meant for *The Merry Men*, but for some inexplicable reason not printed in the volume so entitled, Stevenson wrote, "I hope I should admire 'Will o' the Mill' and 'Markheim' as much if they had been written by someone else ; but I am glad no one else wrote them." Later, however, when he had found himself, he hotly

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

repudiated the philosophy of "Will o' the Mill," which certainly inclines to the "sloppy" and enervating. As already mentioned, the scenery of the story is partly that of the Brenner Pass in Tyrol and the Murgthal in Baden, visited by Stevenson as a boy of twelve.

His magazine-work continued with increasing encouragement from editors, though the public was still indifferent. Throughout the year the series of papers ultimately published as *Virginibus Puerisque* ran their course, partly in the *Cornhill*, partly in *London*, a weekly review founded and edited by Stevenson's old friend of college days, Robert Glasgow Brown. Two of the sketches, "Pan's Pipes" and "El Dorado," appeared in May under the editorship of Brown. In December that gentleman retired owing to ill health, and was succeeded by W. E. Henley. Stevenson then became a regular contributor with Grant Allen, Andrew Lang, and others then and since well known.

To Henley, Stevenson owed his introduction as a popular story-writer. "The New Arabian Nights" ran serially in *London* from June to October of that year (1878). The series owed much to the editorial suggestions of Henley, and still more to the wild, lurid invention of Bob Stevenson, the idea of the grim, ghastly "Suicide Club" being, I believe, wholly his. In serial form the series was an almost complete failure. Nor, as we shall see, did Stevenson ever really succeed in capturing the vast, heedless heterogeneous public which subsists (mentally) on the cream-tarts of literature; that is, its serial stories. In the case of "The New Arabian Nights," the work, for all its brilliancy of execution, was too remote from ordinary experience, too wildly fantastic even for popular consumption.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Poe would have made it convincing by a myriad familiar, scarcely-perceptible touches of reality. But Stevenson had not Poe's superhuman gift of gravity in dealing with the bizarre and the impossible, and investing them with an air of almost common-place actuality.

Henley was probably the only editor in Britain with sufficient courage to print the stories, and he paid the price of his temerity ; for it appears certain they did much to shorten the troubled, chequered life of *London*. And when the series was complete, publishers were so shy it lay four years unpublished. Even to-day, though devotees are not lacking, *The New Arabian Nights* remains one of the least popular of its author's works.

But he was not disheartened, nor did his energies abate. To the *New Quarterly Magazine* for October he contributed "The Gospel According to Walt Whitman," now included in *Familiar Studies of Men and Books*. As we have seen, the article was long in hand. It cost Stevenson perhaps more pains than any other critical paper he wrote, and in its final form it is certainly one of his happiest, most effective efforts in appreciation. A public nurtured on the musk and lavender of Tennyson, and the facile sweetness of Longfellow, could see nothing in Whitman but an inchoate, amorphous egotist, swollen with vanity and wholly devoid of the instincts of a true artist. Stevenson shows him as a great natural force, a superb original genius grappling with elemental human nature and the fundamental principles of life. If the expositor and eulogist did not succeed in making his hero popular, at least he made him intelligible ; and many of us owe our first real appreciation of Whitman to Stevenson's illuminative study. At

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

the same time he was busy with *Picturesque Notes on Edinburgh*, which ran serially for six months—June to December—in the *Portfolio*, and was immediately published in bookform by Seeley & Co. through the good offices of P. G. Hamerton.

EDINBURGH

Since that slight and pleasant book was written Stevenson's native town has suffered some inevitable changes. As the saying goes, it has marched with the times, though perhaps neither so fast nor so far as some of its ardent citizens imagine. It has widened its boundaries so as to double its population. Leith and Portobello are now part of the modern city, and the municipal tentacles have stretched and grasped in other directions. The sedan-chair, which Stevenson's baby eyes must have beheld, has vanished save as a curious relic in museums of antiquities. Electric standards lift their heads brazenly in Princes Street, and electric cars give it an air of modernity and bustle. All day long motor-buses fare forth from the Mound, hard by the National Gallery, for a wide radius of towns, villages, and points of historic or scenic interest. The automobile and motor-cycle possess the streets, though "noddies," as horse-cabs were known, draw out a meagre lingering existence around Waverley and Princes Street stations. To-morrow they may be gone. Sunday, so gloomy and terrible in Stevenson's youth, has been ameliorated almost out of recognition, has, in fact, been turned from a holy day to a holiday. In summer Queensferry, Cramond, Roslin, Colinton, Glencorse are clamorous with Sunday-trippers ;

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

and innumerable golf-courses are inconveniently crowded with Sunday golfers.

All that marks an immense change. Yet in essentials the old spirit survives. At heart Edinburgh is what it was. It still disputes hotly over religion, still consumes vast quantities of whisky, is still (in certain sections) pleasantly intellectual and bookish, still bears itself, as in Stevenson's day, with "conscious moral rectitude," and as the metropolis of Scotland is disposed to regard its neighbours and rivals with the eye of patronage.¹ Nor has the "eccentric appearance" on which Stevenson dwells altered. The hills, crags, chasms, Wynds, closes, and castle, all the picturesque details, remain as they were in his day.

The general aspect as you approach from the south, or more immediately from the east by the London train, is apt to be bleak even in summer, and in winter is sure to be dismal—a grey landscape, grey dykes, grey houses clambering in serried ridges to a grey sky. "Few places, if any," remarks Stevenson, "offer a more barbaric display of contrasts to the eye." Viewed from Princes Street—"the most picturesque street in Europe," according to the fond local fancy—the upward prospect, with its "cliffs of masonry," presents a "profusion of eccentricities" which suggest a convulsion of nature that first upheaved the buildings and then flung them together in haphazard yet amazingly romantic disarray. They may have been designed and grouped with some dim motive of poetic grace. At any rate, the

¹ "We [Edinburgh people] are a queer mixture of bigotry and paroxysmal gaiety with a great amount of what is called 'Godly hatred of each other.'"—John Brown, M.D., author of *Rob and His Friends*.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

dizzy irregularities of outline are the pride of the inhabitants. Nowhere else on earth, they will tell you, can such a sight be seen ; and probably they are right. The houses, holding giddily to the face of the fundamental rock, clamber one above another to the ridge-crest, where at last they plant themselves like an army of invasion perilously establishing foothold. But if you care to climb to the crag-perched castle (as all visitors should), you will be gratified by one of the finest views in the kingdom. Northward you can see the Fife hills, with hazy glimpses and suggestions of other hills beyond. Southward, close by, is Blackford Hill ; behind it are the Braids, once beloved of Sir Walter Scott ; and farther off and slightly to the left the Pentlands, holding in their green folds Colinton and Swanston, now for ever haunted by the spirit of Robert Louis Stevenson.

The Old Town, the real Auld Reekie of song and legend, stretches down from the castle height to Holyrood, as Carlyle, with his matchless gift of description, pictures it—"A sloping high-street and many side-lanes, covering, like some wrought tissue of stone and mortar, like some rhinoceros-skin with many a gnarled embossment, church steeple, chimney-head and other ornament and indispensability, back and ribs of the slope." Included in that downward slope is "The Royal Mile," now the paradise of the local antiquary. The houses, for most part, are tall, gaunt, hungry-looking, and at close quarters often unspeakably squalid. Certain streets are so sunk that they seem mere built-in chasms, gullies of masonry cut sheer into the hill-side. Naturally they are both sunless and smoky. Almost within bowshot of Princes Street are huddled darkly some of the

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

most sordid slums in Britain or anywhere else. To peep into the hovels of Candlemaker Row and the purlieus of the Grassmarket is to have a lively realisation of what the lives of our ancestral cave-men must have been. Even Holyrood, the home of ancient Royalty, the fountain-head of Scottish romance, stands in a quarter of slums, smelling rankly of breweries and gasworks.

For the rest, Edinburgh is a city of handsome suburbs, of churches, schools, libraries, taverns, spires, and statues, these mostly commemorating celebrities whose names are strange to the visitor. Burns and Scott are honoured, the latter by what is probably the handsomest monument ever erected to a man of letters ; but the honour to Stevenson lingers.

Its situation on " the slope and summit of three hills " exposes Edinburgh to all the violent fluctuations of Scottish weather. Hurricanes descend upon it suddenly. Squalls and whirlwinds, coming as suddenly from nowhere, scoop up its superabundant dust, filling the air with grit, and with ash as well as grit. For it is the pleasant mediæval custom of its inhabitants to set their uncovered, heaped-up ash-buckets in the open street for the wind or dustman, as chance may determine. The wind in that quarter, being an early riser, commonly arrives first, with this consequence, that the morning pedestrian makes his way through grey, scudding clouds that reek, as may be imagined, somewhat too thickly of the dustbin. In spring, cold, soggy, clinging mists, locally called " haars," come up from the sea, enveloping everything in a clammy vapour, as of soapsuds blown from fields of ice. Stevenson found the climate " one of the vilest under heaven," and was of opinion that " to none but those who have

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

themselves suffered the thing in the body can the gloom and depression of our Edinburgh winters be brought home." And, indeed, such an experience, abbreviated even to a single month, say January for choice, will sufficiently explain why he had to flee for his life.

In his book Stevenson touched lightly and not unkindly on the foibles and absurdities of his fellow-townsmen. Yet his geniality did not save him from censure and resentment. What was picturesque, romantic, or laudatory was right and proper, but what was critical or touched with satire, what let in light revealing the dark places of bigotry or intolerance, was furiously repudiated. Some outraged citizens even construed the book as an act of vindictiveness. Stevenson had been snubbed, slighted, ostracised; here was his revenge. The circumstance that the work happened to be written abroad turned suspicion to certainty. The author took refuge in France in order to disparage and libel the city of his birth, struck, so to speak, from the safety of distance. It is scarcely necessary to say that the charge is untrue and absurd. Yet the spirit of resentment lingers. There are still worthy people who resent *Picturesque Notes* as a subtly-calculated slander, just as there are still worthy people who regard the author as a mental and moral freak. *Nemo me impune lacessit.*

MEETING WITH GEORGE MEREDITH

With the exception of ten or twelve days, Stevenson was absent from Scotland for the whole of the year (1878). But he was several times in London and Cambridge with Henley, Leslie Stephen, and

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Mr. Colvin. His parents, anxious and impatient to see him, chose Burford Bridge as a meeting-place, and there in March he joined them at the little inn, the Burford Arms, hard by the foot of Box Hill, a place destined to be for ever famous in the history of English literature. As usual, he carried his work with him, which just then happened to be the later of *The New Arabian Nights* series. The visit, casually planned as a matter of convenience, proved an event of outstanding interest and importance in the life of Stevenson. It chanced that a young couple, friends of George Meredith, Mr. and Mrs. J. E. H. Gordon, were then living at Pixholm, in that delightful neighbourhood. At the instigation, it is said, of an interested publisher, they sought out Louis Stevenson and introduced him to Meredith, one sunny afternoon in their garden. From afar he had long admired Meredith as one of the supreme masters of British fiction, one whose creations stand just a little lower than those of Shakespeare. Now he approached in the spirit of a disciple come to do homage.

Meredith, whom it was my privilege to know some years after Stevenson's death, was one of the most puissant, compelling personalities of his time. His own struggle to gain a place in literature had been long and bitter ; for the great British public is chary of originality, especially when touched in a style which makes no concessions to the popular vice of sleepy-mindedness. But neglect had neither soured nor depressed his robust, buoyant, even boyish temperament. To young authors who, in his judgment, showed real merit or promise he was extraordinarily sympathetic and encouraging, though he could be, and often was, piercing in criticism. To his prompt, generous appreciation I can

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

testify from personal experience. He read my early novel, *The Minister of State* (a title, by the way, taken from one of his own novels), and immediately wrote in terms which filled the young author with pride and gratitude. "Come and see me," he said; and I went. I can still recall the thrill, half of awe, half of exultation, with which I approached Flint Cottage and climbed to the famous two-roomed chalet or summer-house at the top of his steep garden.

There, as all the world now knows, he produced some of his best work, both in fiction and poetry. There, too, he liked to receive and entertain his friends with such talk as could be heard nowhere else in England. I have known most of the brilliant talkers of my time, and Meredith was easily king of them all. For, in my judgment, he talked even better than he wrote. In writing his style is often so condensed, so charged with subtle, half-expressed or merely suggested meaning as to be cryptic to the general reader. The difficulty, the obscurity with which, like Browning, he has been charged arose from sheer excess of riches, the desire, as it were, to squeeze a gallon into a quart bottle. It is not a popular method. The British mind is conservative and methodic, and likes its gallons and its quarts in proper measure. But his talk had the ease, grace, flexibility, freedom, blitheness, and even more than the brilliancy of Congreve. I have seen him hold a company of men of letters, all critical and mostly cynical, hanging on his speech enchanted as children listening to fairy-tales. The range and variety of his talk were amazing; more amazing still was its quality. But it was in the give and take of intimate conversation—the witty remark, the flashing

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

epigram, the winged repartee, the riotous, sometimes grotesque, humour, as of a Rabelais in his easy-chair, and above all the explosive Homeric laughter which often ended an argument, that he was most himself.

Intellectually, imaginatively, temperamentally, he was of the race of giants. It has been remarked by Carlyle that the voice is wonderfully physiognomic. It certainly was so with Meredith. In its compass, richness, and variety his voice seemed the ideal instrument for expressing his whole virile, vibrant personality. In appearance, too, he looked the genius he was. The noble head poised with a clear suggestion of high-bred pride; the fine, Shakespearean forehead, with its suggestions of creative power, overhung by an affluence of silvery hair; the shrewd grey eyes, keen and clear as an eagle's; the sensitive, delicately-moulded mouth, fit vehicle for beautiful or flaming speech—all combined to give an indefinable impression of genius. It was sometimes said he loved to hear himself talk. Certainly he dominated any company in which he happened to be, a contrast in that respect to some other men of genius, both past and present.

Stevenson was himself a voluble talker; but in the presence of Meredith, at any rate in the early days of acquaintance, he was subdued into silence, doubtless awed and charmed by that dominating intellect. Meredith loved a good listener, and Louis was immediately admitted to the inner circle of his friends. In later years he did not speak much of Stevenson, but when he did it was with admiration and affection. "A brave spirit" he said once in such a reference, with unwonted emotion—"a brave spirit." And then, remem-

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

bering Shelley, "A pard-like spirit—beautiful and swift." It was the man he admired, the indomitable fighter who had "won his wager and recovered his glove." With Stevenson the writer, the pretty essayist, the producer of popular romances, I do not think he was ever greatly impressed, at all events until *Weir of Hermiston* revealed the tragedy of unsuspected powers and unrealised ideals.

The memorable and delightful visit to Burford Bridge lasted some three weeks. At the end of that time Louis returned to France, leaving his parents to return to Edinburgh by themselves. A sharp recurrence of lung-trouble necessitated a hurried flight to southern France, but the attack was soon over; and for most of the summer he was in Paris acting as secretary to Fleeming Jenkin, who was serving as British Juror at the International Exposition of that year. With Jenkin in their later relations Stevenson was always happy. Almost better than any other of his friends, Jenkin knew how to bring out the best that was in him. Their duties as juror and secretary left them ample leisure for recreation. A favourite pastime was the theatre. They saw Salvini again, and were enchanted with Sarah Bernhardt, then only beginning to be known in England as the foremost actress of her age. In his *Memoir of Fleeming Jenkin* Stevenson gives several charming glimpses of their life together in Paris. One characteristic incident deserves to be cited. Having Welsh, that is to say, Celtic, blood in his veins, Jenkin easily gave way to emotion. At a performance of *The Marquis de Villemer*, that "blameless play, he had his fill of weeping; and when the piece was at an end, in front of a café in

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

the mild midnight air we had our fill of talk about the art of acting."

His jurorship ended, Jenkin returned to Scotland leaving his friend and secretary behind. Stevenson's position then was, if possible, more delicate and precarious than ever. Mrs. Osbourne was still in France, alternating uncertainly between Paris and Grez, but had decided to return in the early autumn to the United States with her son and daughter. To Stevenson her departure was as the challenge of Fate, daring him to put fortune, career, everything to the hazard. I have said that he not only wrote romance, but lived romance. He was living it then with an all-engrossing intensity and passion. In the old days he would have come gallantly clanking his bridle-rein, and the lady would have had but to smile assent to be up on the crupper and riding for dear love. His ancestress who had helped to found the family of Pilrig had so ridden and had prospered. But times were changed. The prosaic nineteenth century put a heavy premium on prudence. Moreover, the greater part of his £1,000 was gone, and for further supplies he was almost wholly dependent on his father, his own earnings being less than those of a common labourer. Mrs. Osbourne was not at all the woman to encourage headlong imprudence. Discretion was the better part of love as well as of valour. It was enough that they understood each other as they did very clearly. They could bide their time; in fact, they must bide till the law, with its wearisome red tape, made her a free woman. By that time funds might be more plentiful.

Accordingly Mrs. Osbourne left for California, and Stevenson turned to his interrupted work, fired

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

by a great new resolution ; the resolution to force the door of fortune, in other words, to make an independent income and make it speedily. "What a man truly wants, that he will get or he will be changed in trying," he wrote, thinking, as usual, of himself. The door of fortune seemed very securely bolted against him ; but he was neither dismayed nor dispirited. When Mrs. Osbourne left he retired to Monastier, among the hills above the Loire, and there, by three weeks of intense, concentrated toil, finished *The New Arabian Nights* and other work he had on hand. By the beginning of September he was "a free man," but freedom was now irksome. He could not rest. It was little enough in his nature to rest at any time. The blessed gift of inertia which conserves brain and nerve and almost makes sloth a virtue was never his, save in moments of overpowering lassitude and by compulsion. Just then, with his thoughts in a turmoil, his heart torn between love and duty, his natural restlessness was not likely to be diminished.

He had no fresh work planned ; but he must do something, find some distraction. In that mood he bought a donkey, the little "mouse-coloured" creature, scarcely bigger than "a Newfoundland dog," which he called Modestine. The price was "sixty-five francs and a glass of brandy," a transaction that seems to transport us back to the golden age. On September 22 he started on the solitary journey through the Cevennes, which he described with Sterne-like charm in *Travels with a Donkey*. The trip lasted eleven days and furnished Stevenson with some delightful "copy." Heart and mind, however, were far away from Modestine and the Cevennes. The lover waiting in a torment of bliss and doubt was at least as much alive as the tourist

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

sedulously taking notes. The intimate parts of the book—and there are many of them—were addressed not to potential readers among the public, but to “F.” In one of his bewitching prefaces Hawthorne confesses that he always wrote for one particular reader—the reader who understands and appreciates without explanation. In *Travels with a Donkey* there was many a cipher message to Fanny Van de Grift Osbourne. She would read between the lines and understand, not without deep throbs of emotion, “how the world gives and takes away, and brings sweethearts near only to separate them into distant and strange lands: but to love is the great amulet which makes the world a garden; and hope, ‘which comes to all,’ outwears the accidents of life and reaches with tremulous hand beyond the grave and death. Easy to say: yes, but, by God’s mercy, both easy and grateful to believe.” Such is a sample of the love-letters deftly incorporated in the text of *Travels with a Donkey*.

From Monastier he went to visit P. G. Hamerton, editor of the *Portfolio*, who was then living quietly near Autun. Hamerton was a good friend and a candid critic; but he knew how to give his “cuts and cuffs” in private, and bestow “his kisses” *coram publico*. From Autun Stevenson went on to Paris; but the old attraction was gone, and he crossed immediately to England. For some days he occupied the rooms of Professor Colvin in Trinity College, Cambridge, without imbibing any taste for English University life. Solitary and at sea, he was too stupid to work. Everything was unreal. The “gyp” who waited on him reminded him of some fantastic survival of the past; the bedmaker was “a kind of cheerful, innocent nightmare.” Apparently no one told him that youth and beauty

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

would be a disqualification for the Cambridge-makers. Going up to London, he passed much of his time at the Savile Club, and with Henley at Acton and Ealing in the western suburbs.

In the early winter he returned to Scotland. All Edinburgh was talking excitedly of *Picturesque Notes*, and for the most part in a tone of offended dignity. Only a few, more liberal-minded than their neighbours, acknowledged the truth and justice of the picture. He paid little heed to the clamour of abuse, though he was gratified by the occasional note of praise. Throughout the winter he was close at work on *Travels with a Donkey* and carefully working in the "protestations to F." which, as we have seen, are strewn throughout the book. Early next spring—that is, the spring of 1879—it was in the printer's hands, and in June it was published by the firm which had brought out *An Inland Voyage*. Again the edition was small, and again part of it was "remaindered." The little coterie of friends and partisans was enthusiastic in its praise, but the critics were still indifferent or contemptuous. One superior person spoke of it as *Travels of a Donkey*, and there were those who referred meaningly to Coleridge's "Ode to an Ass" and Byron's cruel citation of "a fellow feeling makes us wondrous kind." The discerning, however, found the little book a striking advance on *An Inland Voyage* both in matter and in manner. Stevenson himself noted a few chapters which, he thought, had "some stuff in them in the way of writing," particularly "A Camp in the Dark" and "A Night among the Pines." The latter incorporates material originally intended to stand as a preface, and no doubt appears more properly where it

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

is. To-day the work so disdainfully received is one of the most popular travel books of its generation.

Having written his account of the Cevennes trip, and, as it were, underlined the messages to "F.," he fell for a short time into a state of feverish discontent, a state which led to months of nomadic wandering, and finally to a crisis which seemed to be charged with all the elements of disaster. Despite the companionship of such close friends as Charles Baxter and Fleeming Jenkin, he was finding Edinburgh more and more uncongenial. He had enjoyed summer skies and a summer atmosphere elsewhere. Besides, in the nature of things happiness at home was, for the present at least, impossible. He had secret longings, purposes which he dared not divulge. To impart them would be to inflict pain and precipitate a catastrophe. Moreover, the great secret he was guarding was another's as well as his own. He could not, therefore, take his parents into his confidence. Merely to hint that he was in love with another man's wife would have been to outrage all the cherished feelings and traditions of 17 Heriot Row; to say that he was bent on marrying her would have been the last straw in domestic tragedy. However dear, however honourable, such a course of action might in the circumstances appear to himself, it would be impossible to convince his father and mother that it could be anything but indefensibly, cruelly wrong. They simply could not understand. Therefore, save for casual references to an American lady art-student he had met in France, he held his peace.

In judging Stevenson at that crucial turn of his life, it is essential to bear in mind the mental,

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

moral, and religious idiosyncrasies of his own people, the atmosphere they breathed, the traditions they inherited and held, the faith, the convictions they shared with those about them. Earlier in this work I tried to give some conception of the peculiar psychology of Edinburgh in the days of Stevenson's youth, because I felt that such a conception, constantly borne in mind, is necessary for a true understanding of his character and the conditions of his life. To-day it is at once easy and unjust to call Thomas Stevenson and his wife bigoted sectarians, with a narrow outlook and biased illiberal opinions. They were part and parcel of the life, social and religious, of their time and place. They were Covenanters and Calvinists to the marrow. To them the Bible and the Shorter Catechism were incontrovertible realities, clear revelations of God's will and the doctrines of inspired men. Therefore it would appear to them that Louis was simply flying in the face of Providence, wantonly throwing away his own soul. On his part, he had to choose between filial loyalty and the claims of love. He could not honour both, and he chose, as always, with relentless decision.

It may be thought, however, that the secrets he kept as under iron lids seared and burned ; and there were other circumstances to try and also to wound affection. He was at last beginning to succeed in the calling he had chosen and pursued in face of so much opposition ; his father was relenting ; his mother was openly proud. Both doted on him ; and what return was he to make for all their lavished affection ? To practise a deception, that must have torn his heart. The situation became intolerable, and to escape from it he hurried off to London. There for some time

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

he collaborated with Henley in working over the rough draft of the play *Deacon Brodie*, made some ten years before. He worked mostly at the Savile Club, where, to the annoyance of the attendants, he often appeared in the morning clamouring to get in before the doors were open.

Again, too, the old Bohemian instincts became active and urgent. Dropped incidentally into *An Amateur Emigrant* are some experiences and adventures of that time, when stealing out alone at night he sought first-hand knowledge of the seething underworld of London. Long afterwards I heard tales of his escapades in the West End from men who claimed to know his modes of life just then, that seemed to indicate he was not out in quest of respectability nor to "honour the Ten Commandments." One of his diversions was to prowl round like a would-be bandit or burglar, clad in an old sleeved waistcoat, black flannel shirt, and a weird headgear that was the mere remnant of a hat. In his charming volume of *Reminiscences* Sir Sidney Colvin tells how then, or during an earlier visit, Stevenson appeared one morning at his cottage in Norwood "weary and dirty after a night's walking followed by a couple of hours' slumber in a garden outhouse he found open." His ingenious plan was to extend his knowledge of vagabond life by getting himself arrested. But the London police interpret their duties with a large common sense, and they merely laughed at the queer creature who accosted them with a request to be "run in." Had they taken him anywhere, it would probably have been to an institution for the mentally afflicted. He was clever, but not clever enough to pass as a London rogue and vagabond. Occasionally his unconventional ways

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

and appearances embarrassed his friends. Thus one day, clad in smoking-cap and the brigand cloak which had caused a sensation at Mentone, he met Andrew Lang walking with someone in Bond Street. Stevenson was jovially cordial, but Lang waved him off. "No, no," he said; "my character will stand a great deal, but it won't stand being seen talking to a thing like you in Bond Street." These diversions were varied by a walking-trip in the Stour Valley, but a blistered heel brought it to an abrupt end, and he returned to the companionship of Henley.

MOVING TO A CRISIS

Not to rest, or even to work, however; for the wander-fever was upon him. There followed a time of breathless running to and fro from London to Scotland, from Scotland to London. In March, Henley spent a few days with him at Swanston, where they finished the play *Deacon Brodie*. Almost immediately he was back in London, but only to return abruptly to Swanston, where he occupied himself in writing *Lay Morals* in secret and as if ashamed, Henley thought. About that time, too, and in a fit of high morality, he wrote his much-discussed essay, "Some Aspects of Robert Burns," which appeared later in the *Cornhill*. He was himself greatly delighted with it, thought it his "high-water mark," and so forth. Critically it is a poor, as ethically it is rather a dishonest, performance, unworthy alike of its subject and its author. Beside Carlyle's epoch-making essay (which Stevenson knew and admired rapturously) it is the essay of a pert schoolboy striving to please the school

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

chaplain; beside Henley's masterly study of the poet it is almost ludicrously jejune. Even in comparison with the essays of Jeffrey and Wilson it is thin and anæmic. To-day it gives the impression of having been written in a spasm of morality by one trying to appease a troublesome conscience.

Later he owned that it was perhaps not becoming in a man of his calibre to sit so severely in judgment on Burns. Certainly there is something comically ironical in the spectacle of the Stevenson of that period delivering sermons on the amatory irregularities of Robert Burns. One easily imagines how the author of "Holy Willie's Prayer" might and could have retorted.

"You among the Pharisees?" he might laugh satirically—"you? *Que diable allait-il faire dans cette galère?* Don Juan, libertine indeed. Fine names from your lips. If I dearly loved the lasses (as I did to my cost), are you shy of them? Robin, we're birds of a feather there, old hawks, both of us. Why, then, slash my back at such a pitch?" The question is highly pertinent. Are we to suppose that under pressure of an officious conscience the Shorter Catechist was disingenuously disavowing the "lover and sensualist" remarked by Henley, that in a spasm of respectability Philip sober was disowning Philip drunk, or had the deadly duel between Jekyll and Hyde begun? In any case, the position was rich in piquant material for the satirist.

Was Stevenson for once guilty of the hypocrisy he was ever ready to condemn as an unpardonable vice in others? On the facts it must be admitted he makes an equivocal appearance both as a man and a moralist, if, indeed, the moralist be not thrust out of court. For, in the very moment when he

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

was condemning the loose morals of Burns, he was himself in the midst of similar complications, similar Don Juanisms. Generally it is assumed that his romance with Mrs. Osbourne engaged his whole heart and attention. A few intimates, including Henley and Charles Baxter, were well aware that such was not the case, that concurrently with his love-affair in France he had at least two other affairs in his native town. One of these, and the chief, covered the years 1876-9, the period, as has been supposed, of his undivided allegiance to Mrs. Osbourne; and, though much interrupted by absences, appears to have been of a passionate, as it certainly was of a serious, nature. The woman concerned, Margaret Stevenson, was the daughter of a builder and carpenter of Aberdeen, and during her acquaintance with Stevenson was employed in Edinburgh. The other woman was a native of a Midlothian village, and, I understand, stood on a somewhat lower social level. Both are reported to have been good-looking—the first slender and dark, the second tall, fair, and remarkably well built,¹ so that their lover is at least to be credited with the elements of good taste. The two knew each other, or at any rate met. One meeting took place near Swanston Cottage while Stevenson was there with his parents; and there was, I am informed, a scene of fury resulting in physical violence. What Thomas Stevenson and his wife thought of the “fight” and all it signified may be imagined. Stevenson states explicitly that he could see no harm in love for women, and that the only real vices are hypocrisy and cruelty. Was he judging himself;

¹ She was, I am informed, the daughter of a blacksmith. Mr. Hellman, to whose searches we owe so much, appears to confuse her with the “Claire” of an earlier date.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

or could he have several love-affairs simultaneously without hypocrisy and cruelty? Perhaps the best comment is furnished by words which he wrote himself of Burns: "It is the punishment of Don Juanism to create continually false relations, relations in life which are wrong in themselves, and which it is equally wrong to break or perpetuate. This was such a case."

It may be added that for the lessons pointed by the lapses of Burns his countrymen north of the Tweed were the reverse of grateful. There was an instant and angry outcry of which the echoes still resound. When, after his death, it was proposed to erect a memorial to Stevenson, the project was vehemently denounced because he had slandered Burns. The peccant essay, it was further declared, was a piece of mean vindictiveness, instigated by the fact that Burns had satirised its author's maternal ancestor, the Ayrshire minister of "the accent fine" and "the cauld harangues"—to such excess does purblind prejudice run.

Meanwhile Stevenson continued or resumed his restless, breathless rushing from place to place. In April he was at Shandon Hydropathic, Gareloch, with his parents, where he discovered he did not at all enjoy their company. May found him with Meredith at Box Hill. Thence he returned to London, only to leave it immediately and cross to France. But neither Paris nor Grez was now tolerable, and he went on to Cernay la Ville. In June he was back in London applying unsuccessfully for employment on *The Times*.¹ From London he passed to Edinburgh and then to Swanston, where

¹ It is of some interest to recall that the manager with whom Stevenson then negotiated was Macdonald who later figured so conspicuously in the trial Parnell v. *The Times*.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

he spent several weeks in a state of suppressed nervous tension. A crisis was at hand and he knew it, though he did his best to dissemble the knowledge.

From California came news that both heartened and dismayed. Mrs. Osbourne had instituted proceedings for divorce, but owing to the strain and excitement fell gravely ill. Stevenson was on the rack. It sharpened his torments that in Edinburgh he had no counsellor, no confidant, save Charles Baxter, to whom he could unburden his heart, if, indeed, he desired to unburden it to anyone. Baxter held no rigid puritanical creed ; but he was a lawyer, and would naturally bring the caution and logic of the legal mind to bear on the situation. Caution and logic were not what Stevenson wanted, at least in regard to the course he meant to pursue. In other respects his caution, his circumspection, may well appear callous. His parents knew nothing of his intentions, yet under their very eyes he was preparing to take the most momentous step in his whole life.

Outwardly all seemed to flow on as usual. He wrote letters playful and whimsical, into which crept just a random suggestion of sadness, of anxiety. But nothing could alter his decision. Here we get a clear glimpse of the flint that was in Robert Louis Stevenson. Months, many months before he had decided what in certain contingencies he would do ; the occasion had come, and he had no idea of turning aside from his purpose. On the last day of July he left Edinburgh hurriedly for London, without giving any hint of what his going meant. He may have lacked courage to tell his parents, though that is not likely. He may have shrunk from the spectacle of consternation and pain, thinking they

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

could bear the shock of discovery best alone, or, as is perhaps more probable, he may merely have wished to avoid a scene.

Whatever his motive he went, leaving his father and mother in ignorance of his real intention. When he took train at the Waverley Station, Edinburgh, he was, in fact, starting for California, with the ticket for New York in his pocket.¹ In London the friends to whom he disclosed his purpose did their utmost to dissuade him from a course that seemed to them not merely foolish and foolhardy, but patently suicidal. They might as well have argued with a hurricane. It was never his way to allow himself to be turned aside from any design he had deliberately formed; least of all was he likely to be diverted when heart and feelings were so deeply engaged. He laughed counsels of prudence to scorn. Prudence! Fine word "prudence" as a pretext for cowards to be cowardly. The brave man has other things to consider than a shrinking, skulking, cloistered prudence.

He either fears his fate too much,
Or his desert is small
Who dares not put it to the touch
To win or lose it all.

Whatever happened, whoever suffered, he was going to Fanny Van de Grift Osbourne.

It was a strange adventure for the son of Thomas Stevenson, stranger still for the grandson of the Rev. Lewis Balfour; yet not so strange for the descendant of John Blair and the "French

¹ Purchased from J. P. Oliver, Hanover Street, Edinburgh, agent for the Anchor Line Steamship Company.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

émigré." "Alien bloods," says Oliver Wendell Holmes, in one of his illuminative medical asides—"alien bloods develop strange currents when they flow to each other." The truth of the aphorism was perhaps never more strikingly exemplified than in Robert Louis Stevenson.

CHAPTER VIII

THE GREAT ADVENTURE

"A MAN is of no use until he has dared everything," Stevenson declared, as if pricking his courage for the great adventure on which he was now bent, the most daring, the most momentous, even in his adventurous life. He needed all the intrepidity and fortitude at his command. For he knew that in literal truth he was hazarding everything—career, fortune, character, the help and affection of his family, the fidelity of his friends, all that the future held of hope or potential happiness. Even existence itself was staked; for the gallant effort to achieve an independent income had failed and he was almost penniless.

Yet he never hesitated, never for an instant dreamed of abandoning his project. And let it be remembered he was not acting on the rush of a sudden, heady impulse, such as in a moment of heat and impetuosity might carry him off his feet and blind him to consequences. His action was the cool, resolute carrying-out of a purpose deliberately formed and long cherished. Assuredly there was flint in Robert Louis Stevenson, tempered, as may well appear, by a large admixture of selfishness. Quite clearly, at that juncture he thought much of his own desires and little enough of the pain of others.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

In London he spent but a few days, making what meagre preparations he could afford for his journey, and incidentally repelling and beating down all counsels of prudence from his friends. On Tuesday, August 5, Henley saw him off at St. Pancras station, and he travelled by the Midland route to Glasgow. Thence on the 7th he sailed for New York by the *Devonia*, belonging to the Anchor Line, a comparatively new ship of 4,270 tons. She carried first-class, intermediate, and steerage passengers. The steerage rate was £6 6s., passengers providing their own bedding and mess-utensils. The intermediate rate was £8 8s., with somewhat better accommodation, and bedding and utensils provided. Stevenson sailed intermediate.

From Greenock he wrote to Mr. Colvin, enclosing a note to be forwarded to his father. The letter, which is not included in the published correspondence, indicates a sharp and swift reaction from the glow and determination of the Edinburgh departure. There was no compunction, no remorse—he was little given to either—only a stupor of insensibility, a torpor of feeling as if the self-precipitated crisis had overwhelmed his whole being. “I seem to have died last night,” was his pathetic confession. Such was his numbness of heart and spirit that he was without “a regret, a hope, a fear, or an inclination”; and he signed himself as “the husk that once contained R. L. S.” Those who picture Stevenson with a sempiternal grin of gaiety or levity may profitably ponder these words.

It may be presumed he was not without thoughts of 17 Heriot Row, and the tumult, both of anger and of anguish, the news of his adventure would cause there. As the *Devonia* steamed down the Firth of Clyde, familiar to him in happier days, his

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

eyes must have turned wistfully eastward to the home which could no longer be home to him. For well he knew what his conduct must and would mean. Thomas Stevenson had endured much, forgiven much ; but this crowning outrage was beyond the limits of paternal forgiveness. The son who had already caused so much sorrow and distress, for whom again and again he had strained generosity till it seemed mere maudlin weakness, was showing his gratitude by flouting every dictate of duty, every sentiment of filial affection. Worse still, he was wantonly dragging the family honour in the mire, was, in fact, guilty of treason where treason appeared basest and most cruel. There could be no more of it. Let the ingrate go. Such, Stevenson knew, must be the stern judgment at 17 Heriot Row.

Quite clearly he realised that the die was cast, that, by an act which would be construed as something worse than insanity, he had forfeited all claims and rights as the son of his father ; and the realisation was so bitter that for a little he lost heart. Perhaps never before or after did he feel so utterly desolate and forlorn as when he stood on the deck of the *Devonia* on that Thursday night, the 7th of August, 1879, and watched the lights of Greenock sink out of sight behind. All his buoyancy, all his airiness, all his pride, defiance and resolution could not bear up against the awful sense of loss and isolation. And, indeed, to no man who ever saw the lights of home fade and disappear in darkness could the future, into which he was plunging without chart or compass, have seemed blacker. Nor was the blackness imaginary, for, as we shall see presently, what was to come actually surpassed even his worst fears and forebodings.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Physically the inevitable happened. As if to aggravate his depression, his health took a sudden downward curve. Yet to his peculiar temperament the very precariousness of health and fortune may well have proved a stimulus. If he were doomed to failure and early death, if he felt life and love and opportunity slipping from his grasp as sand slips through an hour-glass, then all the greater reason for making one last determined effort to seize the desire of his heart, to snatch, as it were, a momentary warmth and brightness before the lights went out for ever. A man fighting with his back to the wall performs miracles of valour and hardihood of which in ordinary moods he is utterly incapable. At any rate, out of the chaos of conflicting emotions, the depression, the apathy, the momentary self-distrust, one clear, imperious motive reasserted itself. Out yonder, far beyond the darkness, a woman was waiting, praying that the good ship *Devonia* would make all speed. Her call was in his ears, and it brought back all his courage, his decision and fortitude. Had Stevenson drawn himself then, as later he drew Alan Breck or the Master of Ballantrae, we should have the spectacle of a character grievously at odds with fate, dubiously struggling with duty, yet ever relentlessly pursuing its own purposes, and in the end triumphantly carrying off all the stage honours.

By the time the *Devonia* had reached Moville and taken Irish passengers off the tender from Londonderry, he had recovered something of his old spring and blitheness. At three in the afternoon the *Devonia* was under full steam in a rough sea. Westward-bound steamers putting out from Moville pass, as it were at a step, from the lakelike smoothness of Lough Foyle into the racing, white-

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

crested billows of the Atlantic, which even a moderate wind sends rolling furiously upon the Donegal headlands, to break and boil in leagues of surf. Stevenson, who loved the sea and enjoyed its tossings, was soon in his element. He "chummed" heartily with his fellow-passengers, cheering sadness, making light of discomforts, and ever, with an eye to the main chance, studying human nature in the raw. He pretended to be an emigrant, but a discerning Welsh blacksmith detected him as a masquerader, though with an admission that the neophyte did "pretty well"—a lukewarm compliment which appears to have pricked the sensitive vanity of Stevenson.

All the while he was assiduously writing, for only death itself could stay or divert the ruling passion. At a table set in a corner he worked amid incessant and distracting noises; sometimes, too, holding on dizzily as the ship pitched and tossed. In this manner he wrote "The Story of a Lie" (a significant title just then), which appeared in the *New Quarterly Magazine* for October. It is one of the least successful of his short stories; but considering the conditions, physical and mental, in which it was written, it almost deserves to be called a masterpiece. As a determined effort in comedy, it illustrates more pertinently than any specific declaration could, with what ardour, what intensity of endeavour, Stevenson was trying to maintain his spirits, and, if possible, justify himself to himself. At the same time he made copious notes which were afterwards used in *The Amateur Emigrant*.

Late on the night of the 17th or early morning of the 18th the *Devonia* reached Castle Garden, New York; and Stevenson landed, one of a motley

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

throng, in a drenching, dismal rain. From the health point of view the emigrant experience was a disastrous failure. "Bad food, bad air, and hard work," plus worry and anxiety of mind, reduced him to a pitiable plight. But, if disappointed, he vowed he was not beaten. On the contrary, by some stretch of an elastic fancy, he was able to report himself in good spirits. Under the guidance of his patron the Welsh blacksmith he went to a cheap boarding-house near the docks, the Reunion House, No. 10 West Street, kept by a kindly, genial Irishman named Michael Mitchell. There up dark stairs, in a bare room just big enough to hold a narrow bed and a chair, he passed the night wretchedly. On the floor of the kitchen behind the bar-room he left his sodden clothes "in a pulp in the middle of a pool." Lying sleepless, amid a din of voices and a clatter of heavy feet, the harassed, self-exiled Stevenson must have had strange thoughts of cosy suppers and happy faces and clean, wide beds in airy rooms in Edinburgh. The knight-errant pays for his errantry, and Stevenson was beginning, only beginning, to pay exorbitantly for his. Yet even then there were gleams of joy. In the Reunion House an Irish waitress read his own copy of *Travels with a Donkey* aloud to her sister, and he watched them. When they chuckled he felt flattered; when they yawned he affected indifference. "Such a wisely-conceived thing is vanity."

Next day he spent in making a dreary round of editorial offices, dismally trying to impress editors and induce them to buy manuscripts or give commissions. But though he was the author of three books and many short stories, much lauded

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

by the elect, his reputation had not reached America, at any rate as a paying editorial investment. Editors were polite—politeness is a tradition in American editorial offices—but they were also unanimous in declining what he had to offer. Later they were to have the distinction of “discovering” him, and, as it were, presenting him to his own countrymen as a writer of indubitable charm and freshness ; but just then he seemed one of the nameless crowd who besiege magazines and newspapers with impossible proposals. Doubtless, too, appearances were against him. It is hard to recognise genius in the guise of a tramp, and eleven days of discomforts at sea had somewhat over-emphasised his customary Bohemianism of attire.

The picture of Robert Louis Stevenson trudging the streets of New York in a puddling, soaking rain like a pedlar, hawking wares which nobody would buy, is strange now, almost to the point of incredibility. To him then it was a grim enough reality, and must have brought thoughts the reverse of exhilarating. He may well have envied his fellow-immigrants of the *Devonia*. If they were poor, and poverty was their incentive in emigrating, if, like himself, they presented a wretched appearance, they were at least spared his desolate sense of rejection. Hope burned high in them ; for they came to carve a fortune in a land of teeming riches. To him the land of teeming riches presented nothing but shut doors. Amid its plenty he might apparently starve and die unnoticed. And in the end he came perilously near starvation and death.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

A CONTRAST

The contrast in the experiences of another British author inevitably occurs to one's mind. When Dickens paid his first famous visit to America in 1842 he was thirty years of age ; at the date we have now reached Stevenson was twenty-nine, and had been writing sedulously ever since he could guide a pen. When Dickens landed, even before he landed, reporters and editors swarmed about him, jostling for the honour of shaking his hand, eager to do him service, eagerer still to describe and advertise him. No reporter or editor greeted Stevenson or evinced any knowledge of his existence. Dickens's passage from city to city was a triumphal progression, with levees, dinners, balls, deputations, serenadings, rejoicings, and torrents of flattery.

Writing in advance, Mr. Ticknor, a publisher, predicted "a progress through the States unequalled since Lafayette's," and the reality surpassed the prediction. From Boston, Dickens himself wrote to John Forster ; "How can I give you the faintest notion of my reception here ; of the crowds that pass in and out the whole day ; of the people that line the streets when I go out ; of the cheering when I went to the theatre ; of the copies of verses, letters of congratulation, welcomes of all kinds, balls, dinners, assemblies without end." New York outshone Boston in the splendour and sumptuousness of its welcome. For Stevenson there were no garlands, no festivities, no congratulatory verses or letters, no flattering speeches about inimitable genius. If Dickens represented the zenith of popularity, Stevenson certainly represented the very nadir.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Next day, about five o'clock in the afternoon, fourteen days after parting with Henley at St. Pancras, without a friend to wish him godspeed, with nothing to sustain him but his own inflexible courage, and Bancroft's *History of the United States* for solace and company, he crossed to Jersey City, to take the emigrant-train that was to carry him across the American continent to San Francisco and Mrs. Osbourne. Perhaps no lover ever adventured into the unknown in a sorrier condition. It was a question whether he could live to complete the journey, for to onlookers he seemed a tottering wreck.

A considerable part of the route he travelled is familiar to myself. To-day the express on the Pennsylvania and Reading Railroad between New York and Chicago, a distance of one thousand miles, is one of the most luxurious trains on the American continent, or anywhere else. But an emigrant train is not yet a *train de luxe*, and in 1879 it was many grades lower in comfort than it is now. To the young and strong, ardent for adventure, thirsting for new worlds to conquer, it holds all the elements of romance. To the half-dead Stevenson the journey was eleven days of concentrated misery. "What it is to be ill on an emigrant-train let those declare who know," he told Henley. More than once he was on the point of collapse. His appetite was gone; to get sleep he was obliged to resort to laudanum. With the callousness of rude bodily health, some of his fellow-travellers laughed openly at the queer invalid and his grotesque appearance, in unbuttoned shirt, trousers and headgear that might once have been a hat. When he dined, or pretended to dine, he put on a coat as a concession to respectability. Sometimes he amused children

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

in the cars ; sometimes, to escape foul odours, he rode on the top, an American expedient unknown in Britain, or in the conductor's " caboose."

The scenery, as the crawling train passed west through Nebraska, offended and depressed him—sage-brush, alkali, bleached rocks, an endless tawny desert without colour or charm. At a wayside station he heard a cock crowing in the dawn, and the familiar sound, coming thus in a strange, dreary land, affected him to tears.

He brings to me dear voices of the past,
The old land and the years :
My father calls for me.
My weeping spirit hears.

It was his father that called, a significant touch which shows how his thoughts of home were running.

His hold on life was so exiguous he fancied it would be easy to commit suicide, because there was so little of him left. About his course of action he had neither doubt nor scruple. He felt he was doing right, though it would be impossible to convince others of his perfect rectitude and honour. They might cavil and criticise ; he did not care. His self-approval was sufficient.

On Saturday, August 30, twenty-three days after leaving the Clyde, he reached San Francisco, a pitiable wreck, ready for the hospital, ready almost for the undertaker. He was so weak he could scarcely stand alone ; emaciated to such a degree of tenuity, it seemed that, but for the clothes he wore, he must be transparent. Yet the inextinguishable spark which was the spirit of Robert Louis Stevenson burned bravely, if with a subdued and flickering brightness. He was accounted an arrant fool,

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

wantonly pursuing folly to his own ruin. Had his cause been different, had it by any chance chimed with popular taste or popular prejudice, he would have been acclaimed a hero; and if fortitude, tenacity, and invincible courage make the hero, then assuredly he was heroic. It might seem that, like Mirabeau, he had struck "that blockhead word—impossible" from his vocabulary, and was challenging Fate herself. The ordeal of travel was not yet ended. Mrs. Osbourne was living at Monterey, a hundred and fifty miles south, and thither he must go if he could crawl. With a last desperate effort he completed the journey. The lover who had come so far, dared and suffered so much, arrived physically a spectre, but mentally and emotionally jubilant. For Mrs. Osbourne's health was vastly improved, and divorce proceedings were going satisfactorily, if slowly.

Then, in his own phrase, came a piece of "outrageous bravery." Contemning the voice of reason, as he so often did, disdaining to seek medical advice, he procured a horse and rode out eighteen miles from Monterey among the Santa Lucia mountains of the coast range, to camp by himself. Fortunately, as it happened, he pitched his tent at a spot which was part of an Angora-goat ranch. But for that lucky choice the foolhardy venture would almost certainly have cost him his life. For a day or two he was able to move about languidly, with just strength enough to fetch water for himself and his horse, light a fire and make coffee. Then he collapsed. For two nights he lay under a tree "in a sort of stupor," not caring what befell him. In what was practically a dying condition he was discovered and rescued by two ranchmen on their rounds—one an old bear-

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

hunter and ex-captain of the Mexican War. Frontiersmen, as I can testify from experience, have hearts of gold under their rough, often fierce exteriors. Captain Smith and his assistant deserve commemoration for having saved Stevenson to literature and the world. Had they not found and succoured him, it is certain he must have died in that mountain solitude, unaided and alone. The moralist would have another text ; and literature would be the poorer by the loss of all the best work which stands to Stevenson's credit.

Pronouncing him "real sick," the Samaritans carried him to the ranch-house ; and there Captain Smith nursed him tenderly, if uncouthly, as he hung uncertainly between life and death. He had the will to live, a will which then, as always, made him amazingly tenacious of life ; and in that crisis rose in a "divine frenzy" against the weakness of the "vile body." As he recovered strength he passed the time in teaching his benefactor's children, their mother happening to be away ill. In this manner he passed a fortnight. At the end of that time he was allowed to ride back to Monterey with cautions as to future behaviour in such contingencies.

A DEMI-PARADISE

Fortunately he found excellent quarters with Dr. Heintz, a Frenchman by birth, and his wife, who installed him in a big, airy room "with five windows opening on to a balcony," as he told Henley. In the morning he had coffee and roll, French fashion, and dined at the restaurant of Jules Simoneau, a jolly, large-hearted, unfortunate

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Frenchman, who had once been a prosperous tradesman; but now, owing to a too-convivial nature, was steadily descending in the social scale. To Jules and his Spanish-American wife, Dona Martina, Stevenson was indebted for much kindness and congenial friendship. With the lady "Don Roberto Louis" was soon a prime favourite (as Sam Bough remarked, he had a way with him), and she was assiduous in doing him little services. With her jovial husband and Stevenson it was Tam o' Shanter and Soutar Johnny over again. "A most pleasant old boy," is Stevenson's description of this new and strange friend, "with whom I discuss the universe and play chess." Other boon companions were Adolpho Sanchez, keeper of the Sanchez Saloon, and Bronson, editor, printer, and publisher of the small local newspaper, the *Monterey Californian*. In such an environment of restaurant, saloon, and printer's ink the novelist studied with avidity the queer, quaint mixture of Mexican and Indian population as it drifted, with true vagabond ease and freedom, to and fro between camp and ranch, clad in buckskin and sombrero, and usually bristling with knives and revolvers.

He has himself left picturesque accounts of his experiences and observations. But the real atmosphere of Monterey and similar places as they then existed, with their adobe walls, their crazy wooden side-walks, their saloons and eating-houses, their incongruous population, their romance and their recklessness, is conveyed inimitably by Bret Harte, the real laureate of the Pacific coast. In a vein between jest and earnest Stevenson tells that, although he dined at the Simoneau restaurant, he "sponged" most of his other meals. But though

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

finances were grievously low, the confession is not to be taken too literally.

Mrs. Osbourne was living near-by with her family, behind adobe walls, in the house of a Spanish-American lady, with a garden that was a demi-paradise of flowers and foliage. Stevenson was a daily visitor, and the "sponged" meals were the fond, ever-ready hospitality of the woman for whose sake he had dared everything and crossed half a world. He had called the Edinburgh climate "one of the vilest under heaven." Now he enjoyed one of the most enchanting and animating, with an air that was balm to his lungs and elixir to his blood. In the garden of Dona Nachiti, Mrs. Osbourne's landlady, he found it an ineffable delight to sit and stroll and renew the sweet gallantries of Grez. Sometimes in the evening the whole family went off to the Simoneau restaurant, and there, under the auspices of Jules and Dona Martina, did their best to imagine themselves back in Paris. Occasionally, as Stevenson's strength increased, the party climbed the wooded heights behind Monterey, whence they had wide views and could hear the seas "breaking over ten or twelve miles of coast." To Stevenson the ceaseless surge and thunder of the surf was like solemn music, soothing his mind while lifting it to raptures of devotion. British readers who visited Niagara, in the days before it was set like a Samson to grind in the Philistine's mill, and lay at night listening to its mighty monotone, may have experienced something of the same high emotion.

Sometimes the excursions extended to Monterey Bay, one of the most beautiful on the whole Pacific coast, with its curving shore and its miles of white beaten sand. There he loved to watch "the tiny

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

sandpipers and the huge Pacific seas." When, as sometimes happened, such expeditions were made at night, the scene under the large Californian stars impressed him profoundly, as it must impress every imaginative beholder, with a mystical haunting sense of nature's vast power and permanency and man's littleness and transiency. For ages untold that surf had rolled and boomed in billows of foam under those serene stars ; and surf and stars would still be there when he and the puny generation of men should all be gone.

FRUITLESS EFFORTS

There was much to bring happiness, yet his trouble and anxiety were far from being over. In body he was still "real sick," and in mind he was yet more sick, was, in fact, crushing—

'The lees of pleasure
From sanguine grapes of pain.

He might affect levity, indifference, callousness, defiance ; but he could not shut off the rankling thoughts that were as "madness in the brain." The old life had been torn up by the roots, and as yet there was no new foothold in the dire chaos of things, nor much prospect of securing one. The violent change left him dazed and giddy. His essential self seemed in very truth to have died. The man he now knew by his own name, whose familiar face he saw in the glass, was someone else, some ghastly stranger who took his form and mimicked his manner. As to the man who once *was* Robert Louis Stevenson, who had walked the streets of Edinburgh and London, who had supped

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

and made jolly with friends, loved, laughed, and jested, above all who had been sheltered and cherished at 17 Heriot Row—where was he? Adrift in the darkness, amid breakers, without rudder or oar. In company he maintained the old vivacity and sprightliness, the seemingly-inexhaustible flow of spirits; but alone with himself in Dr. Heintz's house his gloom was terrible. Without figure of speech, his life might be described as a nightmare varied by bursts of hysterical hilarity. He felt isolated. A shyness, a timidity, very unlike the Stevenson of old, seized him. He was not sure of his old friends; and one shining star seemed but to emphasise the blackness and vacancy of the future. Two things he needed desperately—health and money, and he had neither.

“There are two great sources of literary inspiration,” says the author of *The Biglow Papers*—“full minds and empty pockets.” The incentive of empty pockets was now driving Stevenson to a fury of activity. In his depression he got “terribly frightened” about his work, that is, over his slowness of production. He must earn money or die. “Dibbs and speed” became his motto, an excellent one for the artisan in letters, but a fatal one for the creative artist. It killed Scott; it all but killed Stevenson then. Fear and anxiety—the twin enemies of creation—depressed his work, because they sapped his energy and self-confidence. The writer of brave romance should, like his own hero, present a blithe front to adversity; but while heroes of fiction may at times do without dining or supping, their creators, being mere flesh and blood, cannot.

Stevenson had the adventurer's spirit in excelsis, and a grit not easily daunted. For the moment, however, his nerve was shaken, and invention

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

lagged. He would not yield, would not say "Kismet." He merely strove with a fury of desperation which defeated itself. Racked by anxiety, haunted by the dread of failure and the spectre of starvation, he toiled till his head swam and the pen dropped from his limp fingers. Yet it was then that he produced at a rush "The Pavilion on the Links," a piece of carpentry, as he describes it, into which he put every atom of his strength and his skill as a craftsman. His success was amazing. The story vibrates with excitement that verges on delirium. As we read we almost feel his hot, panting breath and the feverish throb of his pulses, just as we can see the hectic flush on his sunken face. Like "The Story of a Lie," written on board the *Devonia*, it furnishes an impressive example of Stevenson's intensity of will-power, and his mastery of form even when writing at white heat. He was perfectly well aware that it lacked the sanity of health, that it was little more than a deft piece of mechanism, most adroitly done, that its glow is the glow of fever and must pass into the chill of an extinct volcano. It is touching to note that for the setting he returns to the scenes of his boyhood at Dirleton in the neighbourhood of North Berwick. We may be sure early scenes were much in his mind in that time of darkness.

He dispatched the story tremblingly to Henley, with the prayer, "God prosper it! May it bring me money!" Henley passed it on to Leslie Stephen, who, to Stevenson's joy and surprise, accepted "the blood-and-thunder" effort for the *Cornhill*. He laboured intensely, but with less success, on *The Amateur Emigrant*, which, owing to the adverse criticisms of his friends, was withdrawn after being sold to a publisher. He further wasted much time and toil over a Wild-West story

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

to be called *Arizona Breckonridge* ; or, a *Vendetta of the West*, an experiment in sensation which was abandoned when three-parts written.

Such frantic energy, such dread and anxiety, and such meagre financial results, illustrate very pertinently and sadly Stevenson's abnormally slow and painful approach to popularity, an approach as hard almost as that of his countryman, Carlyle. Some writers glide smoothly to success or achieve popularity by a lucky hit. Assuredly Stevenson was not one of them, though he is often represented as leaping into fame. Already he had to his credit work considerable in quantity, and in quality among the rarest of the day. Yet' his position was still that of a beginner, without a public, and, what follows from a public, an assured footing among publishers and editors. For the *Vendetta*, even in the first flush of enthusiasm, he expected no immediate payment ; for *The Amateur Emigrant* he reckoned £40 an outside figure ; and over material sufficient to fill eight pages of the *Cornhill* he exclaimed wistfully, " Oh ! that it might bring me eight guineas."

Thinking of Stevenson's fame to-day and his immense body of devoted readers, it is hard to realise how exceedingly meagre his earnings then were. Compared with the earnings of certain other authors of that or a little earlier date, they seem almost incredibly small. In 1863 George Eliot received £13,000 for *Romola*. For *The Woman in White* Wilkie Collins received £3,000 as a first payment ; and William Black was paid as much for the serial rights of a novel. Stevenson's tragic experience is but another proof that style and charm are not the qualities which most readily captivate readers. " Sir," said an experienced

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

publisher to J. A. Froude, "if you wish to write a book that will sell, consider ladies' maids. Please ladies' maids and you will please the great reading public." Happily Stevenson did not write for ladies' maids, but the fact that he refrained from that easy and tempting descent certainly did not aid him in those early days.

As a minor experiment in journalism, made, it may be supposed, half jestingly, he agreed to assist his friend Bronson on the *Monterey Californian* as reporter, at the dazzling salary of two dollars (eight shillings) per week. Some fugitive articles contributed by him lay for years embedded in the files of the little paper, and have since unfortunately perished. It may have been in the quest for picturesque copy that he started the forest fire which he described amusingly in a letter to Henley. In those days the starting of a forest fire in Western America ranked with horse-stealing as a matter for the summary jurisdiction of Judge Lynch. Promptly realising what discovery would mean, Stevenson, who was alone, took to his heels "like hell"; but at night he was one of a crowd of spectators out to view the gorgeous spectacle of a conflagration, and had his moment of pride. "It was a good fire," he reported blithely, "though I say it as should not." Still freakish in the midst of much trouble, he was also generous. In November P. G. Hamerton, editor of the *Portfolio*, was a candidate for the newly-founded Chair of Fine Art in the University of Edinburgh; and remote and isolated though he was, Stevenson exerted himself in his friend's behalf, unavailingly, as it proved.¹

¹ The successful candidate was Mr. Gerard Baldwin Brown, who is still, at the time of writing, the distinguished and popular occupant of the Chair.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

DE PROFUNDIS

In the second week in December he migrated to San Francisco, renting a single room in the cheapest lodging-house he could find. That happened to be the wooden tenement of Mrs. Mary Carson, at No. 608 Bush Street, in one of the poorest quarters of the city. There he slept and worked, taking his meals at a dime restaurant near-by. The desperate need to work, to earn money, was pressing harder and harder upon him. We are now, in fact, approaching the point at which he touched the very nadir of his fortunes; and to say that is to say that no other man of letters in recent generations passed through so pitiful an experience or one that was a more bitter test of mettle. In the shabby little room in Bush Street he literally fought for bare life. The annals of Grub Street, full as they are of the horrors of sordidness and penury, contain nothing more dismal or distressing than the ordeal on which Stevenson was now entering. How he survived is not the least of the many marvels of his astonishing career.

Luckily he was not entirely without friends. Virgil Williams, a well-known, large-hearted San Francisco artist, and his wife, sought him out and befriended him, with a tact and delicacy beyond praise. To the Williams he went as often as he could or cared, sure of appreciation and hospitality. Another who joined the small group was Charles Warren Stoddard, afterwards Professor of English Literature in the Catholic University, Washington. In that congenial company Stevenson made a brave show of vivacity and good spirits. Keyed to concert-pitch, as Stoddard later recorded, he paced

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

the floor discoursing volubly, flicking the eternal cigarette, flinging his arms about in eloquent Gallic gestures, soliloquising "with the fine frenzy of an Italian improvisatore," in fact overflowing, as it seemed, with mental if not with physical energy.

But those were rare outbursts of felicity, moments of high tension when the spirit within leaped up as if in defiance of the disabilities of the body. He was a candle in the wind which any chance gust might extinguish; and for most part the flame spluttered and flickered as if it must indeed go out. In company it was his cue to be almost hysterically gay; but alone in his dingy, desolate lodging he sank to unplumbed depths of gloom and depression that many times deepened to despair. Sick, poor, exhausted, forlorn, he lost the blithe self-confidence which had hitherto upheld him. In that mood of misery and timidity he discovered that "death is no bad friend," and that there is a place where the wicked cease from troubling and the weary are at rest. Like his master, Walt Whitman, he would fain have hailed death with a smile of welcome.

There were other circumstances to depress him. With an exile's longing he pined for home letters; but when they came they were discouraging. Mr. Colvin was dissatisfied with *The Amateur Emigrant*, which was sent to him in parts as it was written. Henley was critical over the *The Story of a Lie*, and being in the vein of criticism reverted unfavourably to *Travels with a Donkey*. Stevenson was hurt. "Why do you say all this *now* when I am down in health, wealth, and fortune?" he asked, with a cry of pain. He complained, with a bitterness unusual to him, that his friends thought his work "rather bosh nowadays," and pleaded for encouragement, not cavilling. Henley was urging him to

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

collaborate in plays, but he declined, saying he could not afford to make experiments. So far as things theatrical were concerned, he added, they were both outsiders. At best they would have to wait many months for results, and there was a big chance that the enterprise would prove abortive. Could his friends not see it was cash he needed, ready cash, and kind words and a measure of sympathy?

His friends were, of course, doing what they thought best for him; but it is clear they did not realise to what straits he was reduced, or how savagely the wolf was at the door. Funds were all but exhausted; his nerves were in tatters; worst of all, his faith in himself was shaken. Yet the harder his condition, the blacker the prospect, the more futile the effort, the more desperately he toiled. Goethe found work the grand panacea for all evils. To Stevenson just then it was the wrecked sailor's last plank, his sole hope of escaping the sea of troubles that threatened to engulf him. Sometimes his friend Stoddard, calling at 608 Bush Street, found him propped up in bed in the midst of a litter of books and papers, working invincibly. He was often so weak that when he got out of bed his "itinerary was from his couch to his lounge, touching at the arm-chair by the way." Yet in that condition of mind and body, harassed, burdened, cankered by anxiety and the terror of failure, he toiled at his romance *The Greenwood State* (the *Prince Otto* of to-day), and the *Vendetta*, finished *The Amateur Emigrant*, wrote several chapters of an autobiography, and his essays on Thoreau and Yoshida Torajiro, the last a wonder of felicity and brightness.

A year before, at the table of Fleeming Jenkin, in

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Edinburgh, he had heard from a Japanese gentleman the heroic story of the young Yoshida. It had impressed and excited him, and now, as though seeking inspiration and fortitude in calamity from so noble an example, he turned to it, with what ardour the sketch reveals. He was fond of repeating the lines—

It is better to be a crystal and be broken,
Then to remain perfect as a tile on the house-top.

And we may be sure he applied them to himself with especial unction then. Readers, who to-day are thrilled and uplifted by the tale of heroism may well pause a moment to think of the circumstances in which it was written. If it reveals to us the spirit of Yoshida, it no less clearly reveals the spirit of Robert Louis Stevenson.

In all that dauntless, almost frenzied activity he learned—and taught—a priceless lesson, that a man may fight and fight nobly, at the very point of death. That inspiring truth, however, carries the fatal corollary, that at the point of death the fight cannot be prolonged. Hardship, anxiety, shattered health, semi-starvation, are heavy handicaps for the fighter ; and Stevenson had them all. From Monterey, where he worked with a sense of real zest, he had come in tolerable spirits. But in San Francisco the Fates seemed to be bent on his destruction. He had fought as gallantly as man might and he was hopelessly stranded. The gay, rushing world by “ The Gates of Gold ” of which he was later to sing, went its way indifferent to all his striving and suffering, leaving him like a piece of driftwood flung aside by a swirl of the racing current. Little wonder that he had the feeling of all feelings hardest to bear, the feeling of being forsaken, abandoned to the worst

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

that might befall him. For days together he spoke to no one save his landlady and her children, or the frowsy waiters who served his dubious meals in fly-blown restaurants in back streets.

He counted his money like a miser, who for all his miserliness doubts if there be enough for to-morrow's morsel of a dinner. To add something, be it ever so little, to the almost empty exchequer, he sought work on the local press. For a moment he was even exhilarated by the dream of blossoming into a Special Correspondent commissioned to write how, when, and where he pleased. Editors, however, are not philanthropists. In San Francisco they were shy of such delectable schemes, as probably they would be shy of them in New York or London, and his name was not yet one to conjure with. The *Bulletin*, indeed, agreed to give him some modest employment ; but the work and the remuneration were such he was forced to decline. Some time after his death there appeared in a London magazine a circumstantial story to the effect that he was engaged as a reporter on the *San Francisco Chronicle*, a paper of first-rate standing on the Pacific coast, and proved so ludicrously inept that after a single trial he was peremptorily dismissed. The story is untrue. He never was connected with the *Chronicle*, and therefore could never have been dismissed. One wonders what San Francisco, or, for that matter, New York or London, papers would give to-day for an original contribution by Robert Louis Stevenson ! Would there be any hesitation about acceptance, any petty haggling over price ?

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

THE VERGE OF STARVATION

Then it was a frantic struggle for bare existence. The gods, said the Greek oracle, never do things by halves. It was decreed that Stevenson should drink of lees and dregs. At first, in the days of comparative affluence, he allowed himself seventy cents, about two and ninepence, a day for food—ten cents for breakfast, fifty cents for a midday dinner, and ten cents for tea. Very soon, however, the half-dollar dwindled to a quarter and the dime to the modest nickel, equivalent to twopence-halfpenny of British money. Sometimes there was neither quarter nor dime. He had a few belongings left in Edinburgh, including some books. These in his extremity he directed Charles Baxter to sell; but the meagre proceeds seemed but to aggravate his poverty. Once, when “feeling seedy” from a chill, he longed for a drink, and though worn and tired, would have walked “half a mile for a brandy-and-soda.” Such indulgences, however, were for men of money. In France and London Prince Bountiful had spent the greater part of £1,000 in a short time with unreckoning generosity; now the smallest copper was unspeakably precious, for it meant life. Stevenson himself must have thought miserably enough of the contrast. In his darkest days in London Carlyle came within measurable distance of starvation; in San Francisco in the early part of 1880 Stevenson was actually, literally starving. His own reckoning was, that for a space of some eight mortal weeks the quantity of food he ate never exceeded two ounces per day. As a last straw, in destitution and wretchedness, his people at home definitely cast him off. There was to be

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

no more help from 17 Heriot Row. The situation would have killed most men. By what miracle did he live through it? the only possible answer is that he was Robert Louis Stevenson.

In one respect, however, the position was rather one for the Muse of comedy than of tragedy. The ingeniously-fantastic Gilbert might in truth have found in it material for a comic opera that would tickle a Savoy audience into ripples of merriment. The course of true love ran as smoothly, if not quite as rapidly, as ardent hearts could desire. Mr. Samuel Osbourne, the sole obstacle according to law, was proving himself the pink of courtesy and complacency. Constitutionally affable and easy-going (affability was, indeed, his bane), he was at that crisis of his career the very quintessence of chivalry. His wife was dissatisfied with him as a husband, and desired liberty in order to marry another. Very well! Pretty Fanny should have her way, and a blessing into the bargain. Not only would he do nothing to thwart or hinder, he would do his utmost to help. In proof of good-will he undertook to support her till the law should declare her free for her next matrimonial adventure. We are not concerned with his motive for such extraordinary complaisance and pliability. The fact that he was delicately, generously considerate in an extremely embarrassing position is sufficient. Nor did his generosity stop with mere assent or compliance. He held a Government appointment in connection with the Department of Mines, and was therefore in possession of an assured income, which would be utilised to see them all through. Yes! Fanny might go ahead. He would stand by her and by the man who was to succeed him.

And then suddenly the comic spirit took flight

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

before the shadow of catastrophe. In the midst of the proceedings, or at any rate before happiness was secure, Mr. Osbourne lost his Government post; and, since by nature and habit he was improvident, his salary and his power to aid ceased together. He was pained, he overflowed with regret; but in the circumstances what could a moneyless man do? What but retire quietly and gracefully? And he did. It was as if the last frail prop were struck from under the tottering Stevenson. If money failed all failed. For what is romance on an empty pocket, what life itself minus the wherewithal to live? Another burden on a bent and cracking back—two homes to support instead of one, or a small section of one. How was he to do it? By a frantic effort he might be able to earn £50 for immediate needs. If he could make it £100, just £100. Heavens! it would be like winning Waterloo.

Gladstone remarked of Cardinal Manning that he was reluctant to die. Stevenson was resolved not to die. More, he was resolved to put his own philosophy of cheerfulness to a final and crucial test. From the depths that would overwhelm an ordinary man his spirits rose—*contra fortunam*—forced up by sheer will-power. Staggering as if Fate had given him a knock-out blow, he assumed an air of almost boisterous gaiety, talked exuberantly with those about him, wrote impish, boyish letters to his friends, especially to Henley and Charles Baxter. Those two, knowing him to the core, would read between the lines and understand. To Mr. Colvin he complained, half resentfully, half whimsically, that everybody wrote him sermons when he wanted something comic, something exhilarating. Instead of preaching or criticising,

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

could his friend not send him a letter with a jest in it? Oh! how he longed for a real laugh! And why should they all be so serious? Was not life a huge jest even when it had a tang of tragedy? The true philosopher should therefore smile in the face of Destiny, blithely if possible, defiantly if necessary. In that mood Stevenson announced that he was "carrying top-gallant sails again."

There were genuine consolations. After being sweated out of a pleuritic fever, he had a "delicious sense of being born again in an expurgated edition." For such a feeling scarcely any price was too high. Rather curiously, he was moved to avow that, "being a bad man," he thought a little suffering, not more than he could bear, was likely to prove good medicine for him. The avowal, however, was not made in meekness nor from any desire to honour the Christian precept by turning the other cheek. Rather was it made in proof of his early declaration to Mrs. Sitwell that nothing could depress him, not even the captious criticisms of his old friends. For example, they said that *The Amateur Emigrant* was a failure and *The Story of a Lie* not so good as it might be. Very well, so be it. Out of failure the brave man would pluck success, out of defeat, victory.

One thing he discovered, that the task of writing *The Amateur Emigrant* bored him "hellishly," though at first he had been elated over its possibilities. Therefore he was done with travel-books. His new loves were "the moral and the dramatic." In the moral vein he planned and partly wrote *A Dialogue on Character and Destiny between Two Puppets*, in which his philosophy of life was to have full swing. Further, there were to be essays on "Benjamin Franklin and the Art of Virtue," and on William Penn, whose quaint little book, *The Fruits*

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

of *Solitude*, much consoled him. Such flights of morality may seem to some readers to have more than a tinge of satire, and, indeed, there was something satirical in all Stevenson's dealings with his "veiled mistress" ethics. In the dramatic vein, and apparently as a sop to the insistent Henley, he projected two plays, *Hester Noble* and *Don Juan*; but though "sworn to his soul," they never materialised. One regrets they were not written. The second in particular would have been an interesting and illuminative pendant or contrast to *The Art of Virtue*.

But, as we shall see more in detail as we proceed, other influences were coming into his life, influences which, so far as his literary reputation was concerned, were to keep him in the paths of strict respectability, and prove to him the folly of Byronic philanderings even in his writings. His strange courtship was nearing its culmination. By January 1880 he was definitely and openly engaged to be married to the woman he had "loved for three years and a half," and the lady was already directing and superintending his work. She disapproved of Don Juanism, even in an impersonal and dramatic form, as something which, it might be thought, did not harmonise with the high ethical spirit which his admirers were beginning to perceive in him. If he was to edify and entertain, he must be careful not to shock. So *Don Juan* was abandoned, despite the urgings of Henley, who was a Byron enthusiast and little enough disposed to any doctrine of limitation in literature.

Small events often precipitate great crises. In March his landlady's little boy fell seriously ill, and Stevenson must needs nurse him. The spectacle of suffering childhood depressed him and affected

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

his health, giving it, so to speak the last little push over. Incidentally it cured him of all ambition to found a family, an ambition which was the ruin of Scott. "Never, never any family for me," was his prayer for his married life, and it was granted. From the child's bed of sickness he tottered to his own. Incessant toil, apprehension, worry, misery, starvation, and all that these mean, had done their work. He collapsed utterly, as it appeared in a "galloping consumption." Day and night he was racked by cough; he could neither eat nor sleep; and a burning fever, varied by fits of cold sweat, consumed him. Such was his weakness he could not lift hand or foot; sometimes he was unable to speak even in a whisper.

His physician, Dr. Bamford, whose zeal and care he has gratefully commemorated, did not think he could recover. On his own part he felt he was dying. He was not afraid; but he was grievously disappointed. Was he really, then, to shuffle off the mortal coil in this unheroic, sidelong fashion? After all he had resolved, ventured, and endured, after all his passionate dreams of success and happiness, was this to be the end, to die like a miserable castaway in a sordid lodging amid an alien people and the grime of a foreign city? He had done his utmost, wasted himself till there was scarcely a scrap of body left, and all he had dared and endeavoured was going down in unredeemed failure.

Fortunately, God tempers the wind to the shorn lamb. Suffering dulls the edge of sensibility; exhaustion means repose. "It is all very strange," wrote the dying Sterling to Carlyle, "but not one-hundredth part so sad as it seems to the standers-by." To Stevenson it was strange, inexpressibly

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

strange, but by no means appalling. In the words of his own poem, "Death appears and we must rise and go." But if the feeble body failed, the mind was self-possessed. Thinking of many things as he lay there—of home and kindred, of estranged affection, of blighted hopes and shattered dreams, and not least of the long, long rest which nothing could disturb—there came to him, as a fit summing-up of everything, the best, as they are the most familiar and touching, lines he ever wrote :

Home is the sailor, home from the sea,
And the hunter home from the hill.

The financial position was distressing, and a touch of tragic irony was added by the incompetency of the Post-Office. Through Charles Baxter news of Stevenson's pitiable straits reached 17 Heriot Row—with what effect may be imagined. Louis might be the Prodigal Son over again, with added follies and iniquities all his own, but he could not be left to starve. In pity, though by no means in forgiveness, Thomas Stevenson at once sent a remittance of £20 to his erring son ; and it went astray. Stevenson, probably hoping for some such act of grace at the last moment, felt, in his disappointment over aid withheld, that all was to end without so much as a message of sympathy from those who were still dear to him and were then very tenderly in his thoughts, however deeply his conduct divided him from them. The thought that they had forgotten him, ceased to care for him, was, it is quite clear, the bitterest of all.

In his heart he well knew he was himself wholly to blame, that after being many times forgiven, he had wantonly wounded them to the soul, and, what was at least as hard to bear, had disgraced them in

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

the eyes of the world. What that meant in their hard, censorious Edinburgh society he also knew only too well. Remorse did not much trouble him, and even then he comforted his conscience with the plea that, although his sins might be scarlet, he was not that basest, most despicable of sinners—a cad. “Beside the bridge at Grez ” he had pledged his honour to a woman, telling her that if she needed him she had but to call. When the call came, what could he in honour do but leave all and go to her ? The casuist in search of an excuse never fails to find one. Stevenson easily justified himself to himself.

Nevertheless, in that dark hour of his destiny a word from home would have been precious beyond expression ; the fact that it did not come undoubtedly deepened his gloom and added a pang to his misery. In the early days, when in reality he was merely pretending to be a rebel, he had spoken vauntfully of the blessedness of indifference on his own part. On the part of others it was not so admirable ; and, indeed, the golden rule reversed is apt at all times to bring bitter experiences.

He was not, however, deserted. Far from it. The Osbournes had removed from Monterey to Oakland, on the bay opposite San Francisco. Mrs. Osbourne, being within easy distance, saw Stevenson often, and in the crisis of his illness became his nurse, though with little hope of saving him. He had dared so much, come so far, for her sake ; in his extremity she could do no less than render him whatever service was in her power. And then again the miraculous happened. The dying man did not die. Suddenly the vital spark, which to doctor and nurse seemed to be dwindling to extinction, began to glow with revived energy.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

It was as if he were plucked from the very brink of the grave. His feet had actually touched Jordan ; but as by some superhuman power, some gracious effort of Almighty Love, he was snatched back. As his old nurse, Cummy, would have said, his destiny was not yet complete ; and the Higher Powers were reserving him for purposes as yet unrevealed. The effect on himself was magical. His spirits rose, and with rising spirits came returning health. To his doctor and his nurse, especially, perhaps, to the second, he attributed his recovery. Of their devotion there can be no question. But the real agent was his own unquenchable vitality, and the spirit that sustained it and him. All his life he was questing for heroes of romance ; it may be doubted if he ever found one so devotedly, romantically brave as himself.

SUCCOUR

April found him on his feet again, " wobbly," but filled with a new and radiant hope, dreaming new dreams, planning new schemes of victory. And unexpectedly, as if he were a veritable fairy prince, there came the magic cablegram which was to transform and transfigure everything. At 17 Heriot Row further representations of his awful plight were made. In consequence, one morning there was flashed to San Francisco the glad, the almost incredible message : " Count on two hundred and fifty pounds annually." It was literally salvation. Well might Stevenson say : " I always light on my feet, and the best part of my legs is my father." There is evidence, however, that the remarkable generosity of Thomas Stevenson just then

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

was due less to a spontaneous relenting on his own part than to his wife's pitiful pleadings.

As I have already had occasion to remark, a bond of extraordinary sympathy and intimacy united Stevenson and his mother. From the earliest days at 17 Heriot Row, when her boy, on Cummy's inspiration, talked religion and dictated Biblical histories, and particularly from those priceless communings at Swanston, her devotion was unfaltering, even when she had to condemn. Now she pleaded as only a mother can plead for the son of her heart. Louis had wronged them, affronted and disgraced them in face of the world. True, but that did not make him any the less their son, a treasure committed by Heaven to their keeping. Could they, dared they, prove false to their sacred trust? If a lamb in its blindness wanders from the fold and gets into peril, is it not the part of the Good Shepherd to succour it? Suppose Louis died in his misery, what would life be worth to them then? Were they to heed tattlers and Pharisees, and forsake him in his need? And to let him die of starvation! Their child, their beloved Louis, to starve to death in a foreign land! What would Christ say to that? How would they answer when all earthly things came to judgment? And surely, surely, they did not wish to lay up remorse and misery for themselves by an act of cruel negligence! Such pleas from a mother's lips, mingled with a mother's tears, break down iron resolutions. Thomas Stevenson cancelled his vows and saved his son.

To Stevenson, who had "existed in a circle of hell unknown to Dante," the whole face of things was instantly changed, so miraculously inspiriting and inspiring is aid in the hour of need. To him that aid was not merely a reprieve, it was deliverance

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

from something worse than death, a restoration that suffused and uplifted his whole being with the warmth, the radiance of revived hope and confidence. Only by knowing evil fortune is a man able to savour good. Stevenson's spirits rebounded in a dizzying exhilaration. Once more he could face the world on its own terms. "Put money in thy purse," said Iago, condensing into five short words the whole philosophy of worldly wisdom. With money in his pocket Stevenson felt within himself the strength of a giant and the composure of a stoic. In the evil day (and he alone knew how evil it was) he had protested, not without acerbity, against the discouragement of his friends when he was fighting for bare life. Now they might say their worst, and say it in the bluntest, rudest phrases they could coin. They could no longer hurt.

For one brief moment his pride suffered. In a passage of unvarnished frankness, delicately omitted from the published letters lest it might seem unworthy of him, he owns that the experience "knocked the guts out of him." It is the naked truth blurted with an air of jesting. In a spirit of glorious self-confidence he had set out to prove that by his own skill and valour he would wring an independence from fortune, and he had failed as disastrously as a man could fail. Once again it is made clear that without help, generous and long-continued, Stevenson would never have survived, never made an income or a name in literature. His was not the strength that carves a way for itself in a hostile or indifferent world—a world, as it may seem, of locked doors.

He could never have done what Carlyle did, what Dickens did, what scores of other authors, past and present, did—write and live without any aid save

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

what they found in themselves. Left to himself, Stevenson would have died of starvation before ever getting a foot on the ladder of fame. With extreme reluctance he now realised that grim fact. The lesson was humiliating ; but it was wholesome. It taught him that, after all, the world was not his oyster, or if it were, that the secret of opening it was not yet his. It also taught him the corollary that, for the present at least, his living must continue to come from the pocket of his father. One result was a better appreciation of the patience, the generosity, the goodness of 17 Heriot Row. From that time may be dated, I think, a deeper, truer appreciation of the real qualities and character of his father.

The sense of humiliation passed speedily ; it was indeed but a spasm, a sharp but short twinge to vanity, and was soon forgotten in the glow of new hope. He was now master of " five quid a week," a princely figure to a sick and starving man. In a burst of joy he wrote the striking and characteristic poem, " Not yet my soul these friendly fields desert."

" For thy life,"

he sang passionately,

" Up and defend that fort of clay—
Thy body now beleaguered."

In his elation he scarcely felt the weakness of the body. He had starved for lack of cash, more, he had actually contemplated suicide ; now, like old Quarles, he could say gaily : " Let others trust to courtiers' promises ; to friends' performances ; to princes' favours ; give me the toy called Gold, give me the thing called Money. Oh ! blessed Mammon, how extremely sweet is thy all commanding presence to my thriving soul ! "

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

MARRIAGE

As soon as his physical strength made removal possible he crossed the bay and rejoined the Osbournes for some weeks, flushed with new-found courage and confidence. They lived in a cottage, which was scarcely more than a tent, constructed of the material locally called "cloth and paper." It was so flimsy that if you leant against the wall it bulged out perilously; when the wind blew it bulged in and often seemed little better than flapping curtains. But in that delectable climate it was sufficient, and for health it had the advantage of unlimited ventilation. There Stevenson took up again, or more correctly resuscitated from a discarded play, *Semiramus : a Tragedy*, his romance of the "Forest State" ultimately published as *Prince Otto*. He was still, for all his high spirits, a tottering invalid; and when writing became difficult or impossible, his future sister-in-law, Mrs. Sanchez, the Nelly of his letters, helped him as his amanuensis. With her, too, he began the study of Spanish, but as he treated the attempt as a joke, it did not carry him far. He was often prostrate from sheer physical weakness; and, indeed, after those San Francisco experiences, I think, the body never quite recovered its old spring and elasticity, its power of response.

So the month of April and the first fortnight of May passed. The divorce proceedings were ended and Mrs. Osbourne was free. Her wish was to postpone the marriage for a year, but to that proposal Stevenson refused to listen. Accordingly, on the 19th of May 1880, the two crossed the bay by themselves to San Francisco; and there, in his own

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

house, they were married by the Rev. Dr. Scott, a Presbyterian minister. A malicious story was circulated that Samuel Osbourne was present and gave the bride away, and that afterwards the second husband and the first fraternised. There is no truth whatever in the tale. Osbourne eliminated himself politely and quietly, and, so far as I can discover, never even met his successor. But as a final act of grace and courtesy, he gave Stevenson a letter of introduction to an hotel-keeper at Calistoga, a hamlet in Napa County, California, where the honeymoon might be spent economically. The only witnesses to the marriage were Mrs. Virgil Williams, wife of the artist already mentioned, and Mrs. Scott, the clergyman's wife. Stevenson himself ascribed it as "a sort of marriage *in extremis*." And such, in truth, it was. The bride was then already a grandmother.

CHAPTER IX

UNROMANTIC REALITY AND SOME ENGAGING PHILOSOPHY

THE Great Adventure, so long and so ardently pursued, culminated then with little of the *éclat* of high romance. The professional romancer, able at his sovereign pleasure to bestow the most glittering fortune, the most enchanting felicities, on the creatures of his imagination, must have felt the poignant contrast between the real and the ideal in his personal experience. Perhaps it is only in the realm of fiction, where the Goddess of Poetic Justice holds the scales of happiness unchallenged, that humanity finds its ideals realised. Doubtless that is why men turn to it for refreshment and solace amid the dust and weariness of a world in which the ideal is somewhat heavily discounted. There alone rosy hopes are fulfilled ; there alone splendid dreams come true, and mortals know, in the words of Renan, "that strange forgetfulness of human conditions and destinies which is called Gaiety."

In that tender passage of his life Stevenson, the avowed accepted apostle of gaiety, was himself the reverse of gay. The cold, harsh, grim impact of a sordid enough reality momentarily subdued him to a profound and uncharacteristic gravity. Like Hamlet, he lost his mirth, though

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

happily, unlike Hamlet, he did not yield himself to enervating pessimism. In a series of reflections on human life, which includes the Dialogue on Character and Destiny already mentioned as belonging to that period, he discusses the hazards of marriage like a general discussing a plan of campaign. To the considerate man (and the word "considerate" is worth noting) he observes, it must be a matter of deep concern, since he is linking another's destiny with his own. "In all our magnanimous way of life," is his deliberate judgment, "I find nothing more bold than this. To go into battle is but a small thing by comparison. It is the last act of committal. After that there is nothing left, not even suicide, but to be a good man." To the normal man the alternative of goodness may not seem to involve any dreadful sacrifice. Probably most men are good on their wedding-day, or at any rate are full of good intentions sincerely and honestly cherished.

But to Stevenson marriage was something of a desperate venture, as peculiar and exceptional as if he were the only member of the human race who ever entered the bonds of matrimony. It was one of his most engaging qualities that he always took his own doings, his own feelings, as things new and unique in the experience of the race. He was like a child to whom the common facts of life are matter for endless wonder, and volubility. "In marriage," he adds characteristically, "it is from the boldness of the enterprise that help springs."

There is here, I think, the usual plea of self-justification disguised as an incentive to fortitude. On crossing the Rubicon and burning one's boats, there is nothing for it but courage, and in courage

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Stevenson was never lacking. Moreover, he was just then buoyed up by the animating consciousness that his amour-propre was saved. He might suffer, as heroes invariably suffer, but in the stiff fight he was victor. And, not unnaturally, victory brought a heady exhilaration, a reaction, in fact, to the old spirit of bravado that had vexed and scandalised the staid, uncomprehending society of Edinburgh. In a poem written in those Californian days he pictures himself rising and travelling away to a land where sin and sorrow are unknown and men are done with the Ten Commandments. In that delectable land of freedom—

Income and honour, and glory and gold
Grow on the bushes all over the wold :
And if ever a man has a touch of remorse
He eats of the flowers of the golden gorse.
And to hell with the Ten Commandments.

He was victor then on a stricken field ; but a victor so maimed in the fight it seemed he could not live to enjoy the fruits of victory. And if his marriage was an act of temerity on his part, an act that appeared to be the very negation of prudence and wisdom, it was no less an act of valour on the part of his wife. This consciousness was, of course, in his mind when he wrote of the lady in the case that " it is with a courage no less irrational than yours that she also ventures on the new experiment of life." Mrs. Stevenson certainly dared everything. For surely never was a matrimonial venture undertaken in less happy circumstances or with less real promise of felicity. Health and fortune, the two prime essentials in such an enterprise, were both lacking. Stevenson rallied miraculously at the point of death ;

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

but he had by no means escaped from the Valley of the Shadow, nor, as it appeared, had he much chance of escaping. In the eyes of beholders Mrs. Stevenson was marrying a doomed man, one who, in his own language, "was a mere complication of coughs and bones, much fitter for an emblem of mortality than a bridegroom."

Such was the condition on the physical side. On the side of finance the prospect was almost equally dark and disheartening. The generosity of Thomas Stevenson had, indeed, banished the spectre of starvation. There need be no recurrence of the two ounces per day regimen. But the grand project of making an income, of enjoying "the glorious privilege of being independent," had dissolved like a dream, leaving a sense of failure that was anything but dreamlike. In spite of all his daring, his heroism, his resolution, it was borne in on Stevenson that the task he set himself was beyond his strength, intellectual and physical. He had married a wife only to make her dependent on the bounty of the father he had defied, treated with contumely. Among other things at that time, he was led to consider with some minuteness the relations of parent and child. Very significant is his conclusion that the natural love is stronger from parent to child than from child to parent. "And," he adds, "it is the side which confers benefits, not which receives them, that thinks most of a relation." To the question, what do we owe our parents? he answers emphatically: "No man can *owe* love, none can *owe* obedience. We owe, I think, chiefly pity, since by no will of ours we make them carry the burthens of our sins, sorrows and physical infirmities." By this pleasantly one-sided philosophy the child ingeniously escapes all filial obligations, says in effect :

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

"My presence here is due to you ; therefore it is your duty to make the best of me and my shortcomings without grumbling. The law of cause and effect binds you tight. Certain acts have certain consequences. I am sorry for you—but my failings, whatever they may be, are originally yours, not mine."

Relying on that specious theory of relations, Stevenson confidently expected help and forgiveness. Nor, as we have seen, was his confidence misplaced. The claims he tacitly made were not repudiated ; on the contrary, they were anticipated. It appears to be a deeply-rooted principle in human nature that the prodigal son shall always be forgiven, always be sure of having the fatted calf killed for him.

But the immediate situation was forlorn, indeed desperate. Mrs. Stevenson said quite truly that his friends and relatives at home never properly realised how exceedingly low her husband was. His physicians, Drs. Bamford and Wiley, did not expect him to live more than a few months at the utmost. Correspondents in England, Henley in particular, were urging him to return, and now that the prize was won he longed himself to get back to Scotland. But to have undertaken the journey then would be to arrive a corpse.

THE SILVERADO SQUATTERS

It was necessary, however, to get away at once from the sea-fogs which in late spring come like an army of invasion from the Pacific. Accordingly he went off with his wife and stepson, or more correctly was taken by them, to Castiloga, fifty miles

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

north of San Francisco, where in the bracing air of Mount Saint Helena the miraculous once more happened. Falsifying all predictions, the doomed man took a new lease of life, a lease which, it may be added, was several times renewed when to expert eyes renewal appeared impossible. As I have already had occasion to remark, the vital principle in Stevenson was so tenacious, so abnormally, deceptively vigorous that his many recoveries when death seemed imminent had, in fact, the appearance of miracles.

After some preliminary prospecting, the trio took possession of a deserted, tumbledown cabin at Silverado, the old mining-camp, now a classic spot in the history of literature. The place was chosen for sake of cheapness, a fashionable mountain resort being beyond the resources of the family purse. The venture was literally a flight into the wilderness, a wilderness from which its former inhabitants had fled because it has ceased to yield them a livelihood. The cabin selected by the Stevensons was a decayed gaping shanty, minus doors or windows or any of the ordinary means of comfort. The task of rendering it habitable fell to Mrs. Stevenson, and in the hard enterprise of making a home in the desert she proved herself a woman of rare courage and resource. With such material as she could muster from the cast-off lumber of a deserted camp, and such help as an invalid husband and a son in his early teens could give, she put in doors and window-frames, covered with cotton, the hinges being made of strips of leather cut from the discarded boots of miners. She also made seats and beds, and in a hundred feminine ways imparted to the mere remains of a disreputable shack something of the cosiness and sentiment of home. As the food consisted

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

largely of dried fruits, washed down by red and white wine of native vintage, the culinary department was not a serious charge. Outside the flowers grew and bloomed in thickets ; the sun shone from a sky of Italian blue, and the scented breeze was a healing tonic to lungs and spirits alike.

To Stevenson, with his contempt for the modes and restraints of civilisation, the life of freedom, sunshine and unconvention was ideal, a sort of prolonged picnic in which household deficiencies and inconveniences were but an added enjoyment. In that delightful isolation he set himself with renewed zest to the supreme task of getting well again.

"I am allowed to do nothing," he wrote to his mother. "Never leave our little platform in the canyon, nor do a stroke of work." In the new conditions he was finding, like Browning, that "sudden the worst turns the best for the brave." In that golden climate, steeped in sunshine, breathing fragrance, and most of all exhilarated by a sense of hard-won happiness, he dreamed, planned, ruminated, admired his capable wife, kept a diary and, despite inhibitions on work, wrote assiduously ; especially in verse.

But with his lightest fancies were mingled grave thoughts, and in particular the thought of the strange destiny which had brought the singer so far and set him down in such a curious, unforeseen environment. The poem "It's North Across the Roaring Foam," now, by grace of the Bibliophile Society of Boston, included in *New Poems*, touchingly expresses Stevenson's sense of wandering.

From where the dogs of Scotland call the sheep around
the fold.

To where the flags are flying beside the gates of gold.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Nor can he forget the dire experience in the gay,
pleasure-loving capital of the West :

It's there I was sick and sad, alone and poor and cold,
In yon distressful city beside the gates of gold.

But like a true Scot and son of the Covenant, an
unforgetting pupil of Cummy, he found that God
was in the darkness beneficently, mysteriously pre-
paring the way :

Before the morning God arose and planned the coming day.
Afar before me forth He went as through the sands of old,
And chose the friends to help me beside the gates of gold.

Then, too, was written, under the title of "Indifference," the first draft of one of his very finest poems. "The Celestial Surgeon," familiar to all readers of *Underwoods*.

The diary, kept perhaps in imitation of Byron, furnished the material for *The Silverado Squatters*, written later, partly at Davos, partly at Hyères. In a many times rewritten form it appeared in the *Century Magazine* in the autumn of 1883, where it was prefaced or introduced by a highly eulogistic sketch of the author. That sketch in a magazine of national circulation was Stevenson's first real introduction to the reading public of America. The little book cost him immense trouble, without any compensating satisfaction in the finished article. In its final form he described it as merely "the bleeding and disembowelled remains" of what he first wrote. To his old friend Mr. Will H. Low he called it "stuff worried and pawed about, God knows how often, in poor health." The result, he found, were "good pages, an imperfect fusion, a certain languor of the whole. Not, in short, art."

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Every creative writer knows—and squirms under the knowledge—how sadly his best productions fall short of his conceptions and aspirations. For him, the paradox that the best songs are left unsung, that the best poems, the best novels, the best books of travel, are those which remain unwritten, is eternally true. We may be certain that, with all their powers of expression, their superb, their divine genius for realisation, Homer and Shakespeare, Dante and Milton succeeded in giving us but pale shadows of the glowing or terrible realities of their imagination. It is in the very nature and constitution of the highest art that it should be so, that the artist must for ever fumble and grope, half blinded by his own light, in his quest for perfection. Stevenson, supersensitively alive to artistic values, was galled by his failure, or partial failure, to reach his own ideal. In regard to *The Silverado Squatters* the revision upon revision, the worrying and pawing about, wearied him, exhausted his interest, and therefore, it may be, clouded and confused his critical faculty. It is an experience familiar to nearly all authors.

In the morbid reaction from such a mood Stevenson became, I think, too harsh a critic of himself. True, the reader is apt to feel the languor of which he speaks. But there are rich compensations. In the fundamental virtue of sincerity, for example, the book marks an enormous advance on *Travels with a Donkey*, and an almost incredible advance on *An Inland Voyage*. The writer was shedding his affectations, with an immense gain in naturalness. The amiable euphemisms and fopperies of style, so much admired by a certain order of his eulogists, the strained vivacity and determined gaiety, the graceful insincerities and purely decorative effects,

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

to which in his early work he was addicted, are much less conspicuous than in his preceding books. The lessons of Flaubert (and of Henley) were, in fact, beginning to bear fruit. Stevenson was taking the first decisive step in the difficult and, as it might seem, the distasteful task of getting away from himself. Writing "with his eye on the object," he made a simple, honest attempt to describe things as he found them in that strange frontier existence into which destiny, as by a freak of satire, flung him.

And he succeeded. The picture he gives of Silverado is a picture of reality, a piece of realism that may be called French in its precision. Not only do we see the scene as he saw it, we share his emotions and sensations. Hence it may be said that, so far as its author is concerned, *The Silverado Squatters* is more truly a human document than anything else Stevenson ever wrote, with the probable exception of the pathetic early sketch, *Ordered South*. It must be added, however, that with the public it was and is one of the least popular of his works.

The reason for this is obvious. The style is subdued, less picturesque, less brilliantly ornate, freer from premeditated conceits of thought and expression than in the other travel-books and the essays. There are, too, fewer attempts to dress up platitudes with an impressive air of originality and novelty; and the author, as master of ceremonies, keeps more discreetly in the background. This artistic modesty disappoints those who like to see a writer disport himself, as it were, in the dazzle and glare of the footlights. Certain readers complain that the book is less vividly imbued with the personality of the author than are some of his other works. But this is unjust, since it is to misapprehend his

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

purpose, and misjudge his duty as an historian. What he set himself to do he did with a success which makes the book something better and higher than a mere exercise in style. Let it be remembered that Stevenson wrote it in a state of nervous uncertainty. His self-confidence had received a stunning shock, he had to acknowledge failure in a great enterprise, which, according to Keats, is the fiercest of all hells ; he was physically depressed, and therefore apt to be morbid and supersensitive. Perhaps it is also well to remember that when Stevenson criticises himself he is not to be taken too literally. Sometimes he liked to indulge in self-depreciation merely to provoke contradiction from his friends, as Brougham announced his own death just to see what the newspapers would say of him.

On the whole they were happy days at Castiloga. For one thing, Stevenson had escaped like a drowning man with his life, and was filled with gratitude tempered by wonder. For another, he had disregarded the oracles and married the woman of his choice. That profound satisfaction was like a cordial that suffused his whole being. Further, after tasting destitution he had now money in his purse. Under these exhilarating influences his spirits regained their old elasticity and buoyancy, with excellent results to his health. One sharp setback there was. Mrs. Stevenson caught diphtheria ; but the illness was happily brief, scarcely indeed, an interruption in the new, free, airy existence.

THE CALL OF THE HOMELAND

In that joyous open life, with its easy ways, its flowers, its fragrance, and wide, sunlit spaces,

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Stevenson, it may be supposed, was in his element. Yet as strength and the power of enjoyment increased, his thoughts harked back pathetically to other scenes. He might rail at Edinburgh, might miscall its climate, its people, its creeds and customs ; but he could not get away from it. The chain that bound him might lengthen, but could not break. In all his wanderings Auld Reekie was and remained for him the centre, the hub of the world. It was part of himself ; for it held his youth, that part which lives most surely and vividly for the grown man and most securely keeps his heart in thrall. The Scottish exile, ever a sentimentalist at the core, has one unforgettable "ower-come o' a sang " when in far lands he recalls the grey hills amid the northern mists.

Hame, hame, hame fain would I be,
Hame, hame, hame to my ain countree.

That refrain, consciously or not, ran much in Stevenson's head. Requests to come back reached him, fanning the natural desire to a flame. Those at 17 Heriot Row were realising with a fresh poignancy how much Louis meant to them ; with equal poignancy Louis was realising what they were to him, how helpless, how forlorn he would be without their steadfast, succouring affection. In particular he had learned one great lesson—to love and appreciate his father. It was his father's voice he heard calling irresistibly. He must rise and go to those who were so fondly waiting for him.

About the middle of July, therefore, his strength being then thought sufficient, Stevenson, with his wife and stepson, left the romantic ruins of Silverado and travelled eastward by easy stages to New York. Thence on the 7th of August, exactly a year

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

after his forlorn departure from the Clyde, they sailed for Liverpool, arriving without mishap on the 17th. On the quay they found Mr. and Mrs. Thomas Stevenson and Mr. Sidney Colvin (as he then was) waiting to welcome them. With the quick eye of a mother's love Mrs. Thomas Stevenson instantly noted that "Louis was looking better than we dared to hope." After a brief rest, the whole Stevenson party went north to Edinburgh.

A FEMININE TRIUMPH

Mrs. R. L. Stevenson crossed the Atlantic in some trepidation, but also, as is manifest, with a fixed resolution to achieve a conquest. She knew she would be on trial; it is the fate of brides, but in her case there were circumstances which might make her critics more than usually critical. Concerning her reception from her mother-in-law she could be in no doubt. The two had corresponded, and the tone of the letters from 17 Heriot Row was not only encouraging, but affectionate. For Louis's sake she would be welcomed by his mother. But his father was a different, indeed, a formidable, problem. She was well aware that in marrying her Louis had given him deep offence by seeming to violate all the orthodoxies which he and his circle held dear.

In her mind he figured as a grim, dour, unrelenting Calvinist with all the sharp corners and dogmatic arrogance which the word denotes outside Scotland. She knew, too, that he was vehemently, even blindly, addicted to his own opinion in regard to the moral government of the world, and apt to be uncompromising towards those of whom he dis-

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

approved—a sort of hyperborean bear, in fact, with little compunction in using his claws. For Louis's sake and her own it was of the gravest consequence that she should make a good impression, should charm him out of his supposed bearishness, win his good-will and affection. In what was in reality a trying ordeal her tact did not fail. "It was quite amusing," Mrs. Thomas Stevenson noted in her diary, "how entirely she agreed with my husband on all subjects."

Congreve or Sheridan would have turned the position into a diverting episode in comedy, an illustration of a woman's wit, charm, and adaptability. One small incident may be taken as typical. At that date the ladies of Edinburgh wore white stockings; Mrs. Stevenson, importing the fashion of France and America, wore black. Thomas Stevenson looked askance at this departure from the normal and seemly as he understood them. Immediately his daughter-in-law discarded black and appeared in white. Nor were her graceful and delicate concessions confined to externals. In religion, in literature, in theories of social fitness, in household management, in the domestic virtues, in all that pertained to the great and difficult question of right thinking and right living, there was perfect accord.

At first, as was inevitable, he regarded her curiously and critically, with a barely-concealed bias to hostility. It was not in his nature to capitulate easily. His character had a rocklike solidity, broad-based on what to him were eternal verities. His own lighthouses were scarcely more steadfast in withstanding the shocks of tempest and of ocean than was he in resisting any encroachment on his fixed beliefs, his prejudices and preferences. At

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

a distance, it is certain, his daughter-in-law did not seem the woman he would have chosen or approved as a wife for his son. Now with rare generosity he owned himself wrong. Contact changed everything. This alien, this foreigner over whom he had drawn black brows, might, as it turned out, have been nurtured from her cradle in his own faith, his own peculiar doctrines, so perfectly did he and she agree.

Other considerations added their influence. The wise man accepts the unavoidable, understands how profitless a business it is to kick impotently against the pricks. This stranger, with her unhappy experiences, was Louis's wife. That was as tangible a fact as Skerryvore or the Bell Rock and as little to be disputed. An inscrutable Power he did not presume to question had thrust her into his life, to be accepted with what philosophy he could muster. Happily there was no need of philosophy. Like Cæsar she came, saw, and conquered. The rest was delighted approbation. The past, with all its offences, misunderstandings, and outbursts, was dismissed, like the memory of a bad dream. Louis had done the right thing, the only thing; and he, Thomas Stevenson, was proud to have this clever, captivating, sensible woman as his daughter-in-law.

On that firm basis the new relation was established and prospered beyond all hope. At 17 Heriot Row Fanny fitted into the scheme of things as if she were born and predestined for the part and place, as to the devout believer in fore-ordination she doubtless was. The personal relations were charmingly easy and familiar. Almost from the first she called him "Uncle Tom" or "Mr. Tommy," and he would respond with grim pleasantry, "I doot yer a besom," a feigned air of disparagement

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

being the Scot's favourite mode of expressing approval and affection.

I dwell on the domestic events of that time because in shaping the destiny of Stevenson they were not only important, they were fateful. Had his wife failed, or had his father lacked the heart of tenderness and generosity which so often belied an austere and forbidding exterior, in all probability the Stevenson we know would never have emerged. Instead of the brilliant writer who has charmed and enthralled two hemispheres of readers, we should have a pale, dim figure flitting ghostlike into the darkness with all his best gifts unrevealed. The achievement of Mrs. R. L. Stevenson at that momentous juncture can scarcely be over-estimated. With a massed host of prejudices and preconceptions to face and overcome, she endeared herself to the man who stood portentously in her path as the very vicegerent of Fate. She knew, with a poignancy of knowledge that must have quivered in every nerve, that her own and her husband's future depended almost wholly on his good-will. Louis had married her in defiance of paternal authority. There devolved upon her, therefore, the hard task of justifying his choice; and her success was an unqualified triumph.

Nor was that all. For she restored Louis to his family. From her advent dates the complete reconciliation of father and son. Her exquisite tact, her finesse, if you like, brought them into a closer union of affection and confidence than had existed since the days of Louis's childhood. Naturally Stevenson was gratified. Through her, to whom they had objected, home was home again, doubly dear for what was past and the sweet promise of what was to come. Assuredly Fanny

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

fitted in at 17 Heriot Row as if cast by destiny for the part.

THE HIGHLANDS

Physically, however, Stevenson was still an invalid. It was thought that mountain air would hasten his recovery ; accordingly the family left Edinburgh for Strathpeffer, resting by the way at the old inn at Blair Athole, on the southern slope of the Grampians. There he was in a region which Romance has made her own. Almost within a stone's-throw of the inn stands the old Castle of Blair, much celebrated in " the brawl which makes up Scottish history " ; and to hero-worshippers, devotees of valour and adventure, for ever memorable by association with two illustrious heroes who gave their lives for a lost cause—the great Montrose and Claverhouse, the Bonnie Dundee of song and legend. According to his mother, it was during that visit that Stevenson first conceived his passion for the Highlands of Scotland, a statement frequently repeated by others. It is, however, only partially true. For years—ten at least—he had been an ardent student of Clan lore and Highland character, had, as we have seen, ransacked Celtic archives in search of a Highland ancestry for himself. Moreover, in various trips as an embryo engineer, he had been deeply impressed by the grandeur and gloom of the mountains and glens, islands and skerries, of the west. Now he was seeing the central Highlands at their best ; and his appreciation of romantic beauty, set against a background of heroic tradition, quickened to a living faith.

The county of Perth, as Scott, a connoisseur in scenery, noted, is the fairest part of Scotland, and

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

the scenes by the Tay and Tummel constitute the fairest part of Perthshire. From the craggy heights of Birnam Wood, immortalised in "Macbeth," Stevenson's course lay past Pitlochrie (where later he was to spend a holiday), upward through the Pass of Killiecrankie to the wooded richness of Athole, where hill and glen, glade and flashing stream, blend in a beauty that is unique. To the ardent romancer the whole place breathes enchantment; and the prospects are all but unrivalled. To the right is Ben-y-Gloe; to the left, dominating the picturesque Strathtummel, towers the solitary cone of Schiehallion (the Hill of the Fairies). A little to the westward lies the desolate moor of Rannoch, vividly and accurately described in *Kidnapped*, in the course of the account of the flight in the heather by David Balfour and Alan Breck. Farther west, on a clear day, you may see the mountains of Argyle, above the black Glencoe of evil memories, looming dimly in a haze of blue. Northward and eastward towards Inverness and Aberdeen the crowding peaks stand eternal sentinels over the beloved land of the Gael; and far, far up in the crystalline air your eye may catch two tiny specks—a brace of eagles making for their eyries among the unscalable crags. Little wonder that the scene, so impressive in beauty, so rich in stores of tradition and superstition, fascinated Stevenson. As I have said, he was looking upon it at its loveliest, when the woods were still a leafy green, and the grey granite-ribbed hills were clothed in the gorgeous purple of heather in full bloom, with an air as if scented with honey. He had more of the purple and honey as he passed up the steep slope to Struan and Dalnacardoch, and so over the stern, solitary ridge of the Grampians.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

With Strathpeffer he was at first enchanted. No place, he declared to Mr. Sidney Colvin, was ever so delightful to his soul. For others gardens of roses, if such appealed to their base tastes ; for him the cool breath of Rogie Waterfall. But the tune soon changed. This delightful place, alas ! was inhabited by a " wholly bestial crowd," a set of ogres whose gross ideal of pleasure was to " fill their bellies with meat," and wipe their lips in sensual satisfaction. In a piece of lively doggerel, addressed to Charles Baxter, he relieved his outraged feelings by satirising the detestable crew. If anywhere " in God's great registration list " there existed some den " with wallow and a trough," he implored them to be off at once and seek it.

On the literary side he was finding *The Amateur Emigrant* a trouble and a burden. His father shrewdly judging its quality and its probable reception by the public, pressed for its withdrawal, offering to bear whatever pecuniary loss or cost that might be incurred. The book was accordingly withdrawn at his expense, and remained unpublished until the appearance of the Edinburgh Edition, fourteen years later, when both father and son were gone. Had any other author of his time, or of any time, such a father ? Thomas Stevenson had vehemently opposed the idea of a literary career for his son ; yet it was he who by his constant help made that career possible. His generosity has almost a touch of satire.

The party stayed at the Ben Nevis Hotel, where Principal Tulloch of St. Andrews, a friend of Swanston days, was a frequent and welcome visitor. Partly at his suggestion, as appears, Stevenson planned a History of the Highlands, with a volume on the Union. His father, as usual, undertook to

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON .

pay all preliminary expenses, and also provide the necessary books. The scheme filled Stevenson with immense enthusiasm. Of the project and its possibilities, I shall have to speak presently.

Meanwhile the Strathpeffer air was not proving the elixir it was expected or hoped it might prove. The mists and sluicing rains which drive the health-seeker, the tourist, and the southern sportsman, home were beginning with dismal earnest of what was to come. A flight southwards became imperative ; and on the 15th September the whole family returned to 17 Heriot Row. Early in the year Swanston Cottage had been given up, because, as his mother said, it was too lonely without Louis. Hence the ailing, overstrained Stevenson could not retire, as had been his wont in time of trouble or weariness, to the soothing tranquillity of the Pentlands. In truth he had said farewell to that charming home of his boyhood, and was now, though he did not know it, in effect saying farewell to his native land. His health was such it became clear he dared not attempt to pass the winter in Scotland. He must get away at once to the Continent ; and on the advice of his uncle, Dr. George W. Balfour, Davos Platz was selected, very much by way of experiment. Again his father financed the venture.

UNWELCOME FRIENDS

On the 7th of October (it is remarkable how persistently the figure 7 recurs), two months after their departure from New York, Stevenson, his wife and stepson left for London, taking with them a dog (the pet Wogg, presented by Sir Walter Simpson) in one basket and a cat in another, an outfit which

· ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

definitely marked Stevenson as a family man. They spent some days in London, where Mrs. Stevenson devoted herself chiefly to the invidious task of saving him from his friends, who came much too often and stayed much too long. Their visits irritated her to a bitter impatience. For she found it both irksome and annoying "to sit smiling at Louis's friends like a hypocritical Cheshire cat." A frosty politeness was but a thin cloak for suppressed hostility. She watched the clock furtively, "thirsting for their blood," because they were a nuisance, and, as she conceived it, a dangerous nuisance. Several whose visits were thus resented were noted men of letters to whose friendship in the past Stevenson was indebted for much cheer, inspiration, and material aid. Of that fact she could scarcely have been ignorant, yet it appears to have weighed but little with her. Like Mrs. Millamant in Congreve's *The Way of the World*, she said in effect to her husband: "I have no obligations upon me to converse with wits that I don't like, because they are your acquaintance; or to be intimate with fools because they may be your relations." It is not to be supposed her visitors were duller than ordinary men in a chilly atmosphere of disapproval. Perhaps, imitating their hostess, they bore it with the dissembling grin of Cheshire cats; perhaps, like Shyllock, with a patient shrug—for her husband's sake. But it is manifest some of them were unpleasantly aware of a radical and surprising change.

The motive for her benevolent despotism was, of course, admirable—the desire to protect a sick man. There were, however, murmurs that in discharging that beneficent duty she was somewhat acidly imperious, had, in fact, less of the *suaviter in modo* than the *fortiter in re*. Possibly she did not think them

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

worth conciliating ; they had not the practical importance of Thomas Stevenson. It was then she introduced the rule, afterwards enforced with scant respect to persons, that no one suspected of having a cold should be allowed to approach her husband. Any person in that unhappy condition was a " pizon sarpint " to be rigorously excluded as such. From the first she made it plain that she was now domestic general manager with jurisdiction over every detail of her husband's life and affairs, and that she meant to take her duties seriously. And it should be added that the old ebullient Stevenson was quickly subdued to her hand. Stevenson the bachelor and Stevenson the benedict were, as his friends discovered, two different men. For them the position might be summed up in the immortal words of the elder Weller : " She got him, and what's more she has him now." Almost from the beginning her masterful, managerial air caused a mild resentment, and as time passed very decided friction. In particular it brought the first rift in the friendship with W. E. Henley, a rift which, as we shall see, ultimately widened to complete estrangement.

From London the party proceeded, with several breaks and halts for rest, spending the better part of a month by the way, chiefly in the sunny air of Troyes. On the 4th of November they reached Davos Platz and took up their quarters at the old Hotel Belvedere, since enlarged and modernised beyond recognition. The journey, especially in its final stages by diligence and sleigh, or rather by diligence on runners, was a trying one ; and Stevenson arrived in a state of exhaustion, almost of collapse. But the warmth and old-fashioned comfort of the Belvedere speedily reanimated him,

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

and his spirits, as always under the eyes of observers, were light even to the point of gaiety. Other patients in that caravanserai of consumptives recognised him as "lungy"; but he resolutely declined to be taken or treated as an invalid come merely to potter and cough and talk of disease. Tobogganing was the popular, practically the only, sport; and he made a valiant attempt to be a tobogganer. The effort was generally too much for him; and after a morning's exercise he crawled back, a spent, drooping, doubled-up figure, painfully dragging his toboggan after him.

In such social activities as there were he joined heartily. Occasionally, very occasionally, he played billiards with an abandon that sent the balls flying off the table, to his own boisterous amusement. He gave "readings," too, for the entertainment of his fellow-guests, contributions which were not greatly appreciated. His audience thought him "theatrical," "stagy," "unnatural"; and it may be he remembered somewhat too punctiliously the lessons in elocution learned during his stage experiences in Edinburgh. He also did reading of another sort. Among his chosen books then were Hamley's *Operations of War*, a gift from a military friend; and by an odd chance *Our Mutual Friend*. As readers of his Critical Essays are aware, he was no admirer of Charles Dickens, whom he regarded as an ingrained vulgarian, constitutionally and artistically incapable of drawing a gentleman. *Our Mutual Friend* gave him the chance to have another fling at its author, and he seized it with gusto. With the accuracy or value of his judgment I am not here concerned, save to remark incidentally that, despite his defects, intellectual and æsthetic, Dickens somehow survives,

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

and is even to-day the most popular of British novelists, scarcely excepting Scott.

Davos, with its bleak fields of snow, its narrow interests and "lungy" inhabitants, was dreadfully depressing; but for Stevenson it held one grand compensation—the presence of John Addington Symonds, also there for lung disease. Perhaps I may be permitted to refer with some warmth of gratitude to Symonds, whose books, by a fortunate chance, fell into my hands in the formative time of youth when books are influential. I thought him then (and the pleasant impression remains) a writer of distinction, of wide culture and rare gifts both as critic and historian. Of Stevenson's first judgment was scarcely flattering. Like the rest of Davos, he found him odd, exotic, in some ways quixotic. He doubted, too, whether the new-comer, so ardently literary and already something more than a mere beginner, had staying power, that is, intellect to last. "The more I see of him," he wrote, "the less I find of solid mental stuff. He wants years of study in tough subjects." Symonds had himself given years of study to tough subjects, and was little disposed to admire mere superficial cleverness. On the critical side he was greatly pleased with *The New Arabian Nights*, which he found "marvellously light and brilliant" in execution. *Virginibus Puerisque*, however, he dismissed contemptuously as "forced and flashy," and later passed some far from flattering criticism on *The Master of Ballantrae*.

On his part Stevenson found Symonds very much "an invalid in mind and character"; but with "beautiful corners" in his mind, and a consumptive smile that was very winning. Thrown so strangely, so tragically together, the two men,

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

though vastly dissimilar in tastes and character, became lifelong friends. Symonds died in 1893, and it is pathetic to recall that one of the last letters he wrote was to Stevenson in Samoa, although for some reason it was never sent. It told how the writer was thinking much of his old friend and old Davos days, how he even thought wistfully that he might "still set sail, an old Ulysses, for those islands of magic charm" to which his correspondent had been exiled. "But, alas!" he added sadly, "I am past the age of doing more than dreaming of them."

The two held ardent talk about many things—books, authors, art, ethics, morality, religion, and the ever-vital problem, how to live. Once Symonds asked Stevenson what was the dizzyest height he had ever climbed. "Mount Ego," was the smiling answer. "And I have never got over the dismal purview. I scrambled down ignominiously and went and idled in a sunny place, swearing that, except as a sleep-walker, I would never again peer over that crest." Yet that dizzy height of Mount Ego had to the end an irresistible fascination for him; and not once but many times later he peered over its perilous crest.

During that first visit to Davos he wrote comparatively little, though he strove bravely. "I cannot work," he complained to a fellow-visitor, "yet now that I am fallen sick I have lost the capacity for idleness." His amazing industry, or more properly his power of application, was indeed seriously interrupted. Mentally and physically he was exhausted. On recent excitements and privations, aggravated by his constitutional malady, there followed a profound reaction, bringing with it a stupefying languor, a disabling torpor of mind and body. The desire

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

and the inability to work both depressed and galled him. Yet, though so low in energy, so impotent, as it seemed to himself, he was not wholly idle. In that period of exhaustion and self-discontent he wrote one of his best, most characteristic essays, "The Morality of the Profession of Letters," which appeared in the *Fortnightly Review* for April, 1881. To the general reader it has scarcely more than a mild academic interest ; but to the man of letters, and especially to the young writer embarking on his uncertain course, it is full of wise and inspiring counsel, conveyed in a style which has no suggestion of the invalid. And it is notable that, despite the condition in which it was written, it has no taint of pessimism, no wail over the cruelties of Fate or the hardships of the literary career. On the contrary, it is a buoyant call to valour, to self-respect, and (what naturally goes with self-respect) unfaltering respect for one's art. "We all suffer ourselves to be too much concerned with a little poverty," he observes pertinently. "But such considerations should not move us in the choice of that which is to be the business and justification of so great a portion of our lives ; and like the missionary, the patriot, or the philosopher, we should choose the poor and brave career in which we can do the most and best for mankind." Throughout it sounds the note of honesty, of truth, above all of courage. Like a good soldier, Stevenson would never be guilty of cowardice, of the crime of disgracing his flag.

Of much less value, ethically and artistically, is the essay on Pepys, also written at Davos, for the *Cornhill*. Dipping into the journalism he affected to despise, he further wrote a series of four articles which appeared in the *Pall Mall Gazette* in February

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

and March, 1881. They described the general aspects of life and employment in the Davos sanatorium ; and as in " Ordered South," the tone was that of an invalid compelled by sheer weakness to lounge and be idle. The articles stand almost alone among Stevenson's writings as a confession of almost utter impotence in a dire struggle to work. In odd minutes he found occupation in revising and passing the proofs of *Virginibus Puerisque*, which was published later in the year.

CELTIC STUDIES

Nor was that the sum of his activities. He was still eagerly busy with his scheme of a *History of the Highlands* which he had discussed so ardently with Principal Tulloch at Strathpeffer. To his father he sent a rough sketch of the various sections or divisions into which he proposed to divide the work. What he found most attractive in the prospect was the number of delightful writers he would have to deal with—Burt, Johnson, Boswell, Mrs. Grant of Laggan, whose *Letters from the Mountains* and essays on the Superstitions of the Highlanders might furnish useful material, and of course Scott, who may be said to have discovered the Highlands for literature. The dramatis personæ were to be no less delightful—Rob Roy, Duncan Forbes of Culloiden, the heroine whom Gaelic legend has consecrated as the symbol of devotion and beauty, Flora Macdonald, and other notable romantics. He was also to deal with the Ossian controversy, a subject almost as thorny as the Bacon-Shakespeare theory ; social and economic conditions ; religion, another thorny subject ; forfeited estates ; the Highland

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

clearances ; and the advent of deer and grouse because they were more profitable to landowners than men. There was likewise to be a section on the taste for Highland scenery, a taste dating from the publication of the Waverley Novels. For the first time the Scottish Gael was to have his right place in the portrait-gallery of the world ; and it was to be a place of high honour. His genius, his achievements, his gallantry in war, his chivalry in peace, his loyalty, his poetry, his glory, his tragedy, his inveterate idealism, were all to be woven into one gorgeous web of romance. It was a great task, a great opportunity, and Stevenson was fired to a beautiful and infectious ardour of enthusiasm.

A Highlander, with long centuries of Celtic blood in his veins, may note, not without astonishment and amusement, that for such an enterprise the prospective historian thought a knowledge of Gaelic in no wise an essential qualification ; and that among his chief authorities were to be Johnson, Boswell, and Burt. That a History of the Highlands written by Stevenson would be picturesque and entertaining every intelligent reader of his works will easily infer. What is romantic and dramatic, superficial and spectacular, would be seized and presented with all the skill of the born romancer. But the soul of a people does not lie on the surface, and the soul of the Celt is peculiarly shy, elusive, and reluctant to reveal itself to strangers. On the whole, I think, it is fortunate for Stevenson's reputation that the History projected with such consuming ardour was never written, and that Fate intervened with other work better suited to his talents and his knowledge.

When the real epic of the Highlands comes to be written, it will be the product of a Gael of genius,

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

with an intimate, intuitive understanding of his own people, actual and legendary, a command of Celtic language and lore, and gifts that combine the imagination of the poet and the patient precision of the philologist. Our Scottish Homer might have done it had he been born a Highlander and not a Lowlander and Borderer ; to a certain extent he has done it. Renan, too, might have done it had he been born in Inverness or Inverary and not in Treguier. Stevenson at best was but a fascinated outsider. Had he really written his History, we should to-day be murmuring our regrets over a waste of talents and energies, as we are actually murmuring our regrets over talents and energies wasted in vain dabbings in Samoan politics. No doubt he was attracted by that pathetic fallacy already noticed—the fallacy that he was himself a Celt, a lineal descendant of some renowned chieftain, Rob Roy or another, and therefore dowered with a secret ancestral understanding of the Celtic race. Fortunately his studies were not fruitless. From them sprang the inspiration which gave a delighted world *Kidnapped* and *Catriona*, in themselves a sufficient justification of the energy devoted to Celtic researches.

Davos had other compensations. Early in January Mr. Sidney Colvin paid the Stevensons a visit, a grateful, uplifting event in their cramped, depressed, isolated life. But a deep sorrow followed almost immediately. In spring Mrs. Sitwell arrived unexpectedly with her young son, who was already far gone in what is called a "galloping consumption." The boy died, and Stevenson's grief found vent in the beautiful elegy familiar to all readers of *Underwoods*. When he wrote it he was himself ill ; and, in consequence, perhaps, of

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

his low vitality, the piece gave him enormous trouble. The first version, given in the invaluable volume *His Workshop*, edited by Professor Trent for the Bibliophile Society of Boston, shows him in a decidedly fumbling mood and differs markedly from the poem in its final form. Originally, as Professor Trent remarks, it was written "in a somewhat Tennysonian blank verse" clumsily constructed. As an example of the severe revision, the radical recasting or reconstruction which Stevenson's work so often underwent, the brief "In Memoriam" presents points of exceptional interest to the student of style. For purposes of comparison I quote a few lines from each version. The first opens thus:

It that which should be is not ; that which is,
O God ! so greatly should not be ; and all
From Dawn to Sunset and from birth to grave
Be, or appears, O God, evil alone.
Yet, O broken heart ! remember, oh ! remember,
All has not been evil from the start.

Here there is palpable fumbling with confused and refractory emotions, and consequently a lack of felicity in expression. Read now the first verse in its final form:

Yet, O stricken heart, remember, oh ! remember,
How of human days he lived the better part.
April came to bloom and never dim December
Breathed its killing chills upon the head and heart.

The change is a thrill of delighted surprise. The poet has found fit and free expression for the thoughts, the tenderness, the pity, that welled in his heart. In saying this, I refer wholly to the

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

style and not at all to the sentiment, which is a thing apart.

In regard to health Davos proved, like Strathpeffer, a keen disappointment. Stevenson moped ; and even his brave spirit sank under the dreary monotony of a life that was virtual imprisonment. To aggravate his depression, his wife was often ill, sometimes prostrate. To her mother-in-law she described Davos as " a well of desolation " from which every moment she was tempted to flee. Suffering from a heart affection, she found the thin air of the high Alps too trying. For her husband's sake she endured, but not uncomplainingly. Presently a change became imperative. Towards the end of April, therefore, Stevenson and his wife (his stepson was absent at school) left Davos, travelling by easy stages to their old haunts in France—Barbizon and Paris—and finally, owing to the insanitary conditions of their quarters in the capital, to St. Germain. There funds suddenly gave out, by no means a novel experience to Stevenson. " Now we shall starve," remarked his wife when he had spent his last sou on a present for her. The pretty story goes that quite by chance he put his hand into the pocket of an old coat, and behold, there was a forgotten cheque for a considerable amount from his father. So in true fairy fashion the situation was saved.

Suddenly the joy was checked by a breakdown so serious that even Mrs. Stevenson was frightened into telling her husband that he must be prepared for the worst that might happen. But, as so often before and after, he recovered from the very point of death, and within a fortnight was able to travel northward to Edinburgh, where the couple arrived on the 30th of May.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

AN ENCHANTED REGION AND SUCCESSFUL WORK

To escape the fatigue (or the bother) of seeing visitors, Stevenson went on to Perth on June 2, where he was joined next day by his wife and mother. On the suggestion of an Edinburgh house-agent, Thomas Stevenson rented Kinnaird Cottage, near the lovely Perthshire village of Pitlochrie, and there the party arrived on the 3rd. One attraction of the place was that Professor Blackie had been tenant of the cottage in the preceding summer, and, as was his wont, had celebrated its charms in resounding verse. For Stevenson it had the additional and more practical attraction that there he could have a pinewood and a burn—"the one for his bodily health; the other for his moral well-being."

Kinnaird Cottage, on Kinnaird Burn, which thus has a place in literary history, is a modest country dwelling, standing, or rather nestling, some mile and a half above Pitlochrie, near the hamlet of Moulin and the foot of Ben Vrackie. Stevenson could scarcely have chosen a more delightful spot. In the flush of summer the scene holds for the poetic imagination more than a suggestion of Sidney's *Arcadia*. For variety and beauty the scenery, in truth, is hardly excelled by any in Britain—hills not too stern and wild to exclude the idea of softness; stretches of "wine-red moor" sloping upward into glowing purple; green, coy little valleys that hide as if withdrawing, fawnlike, from the madding crowd; woods that breathe the healing incense of resin; brown burns alive with lusty brown trout; and downward a long sweep of fertile fields and pastures dotted with browsing

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

kine. By the open windows of Kinnaird Cottage Stevenson could sit and listen to the babbling of waters, the song of the lark high up in the golden air, mingling with the cry of the peewit and occasionally with the whir of grouse.

Romance, too, has made the place her own. A few miles away towards Blair Athole is the Pass of Killiecrankie, with its deathless memories of Claverhouse and the valour of Highland clansmen. The pass itself is a piece of romance, deep, narrow, precipitous, crag- and birch-lined, with the headlong Garry leaping and tumbling down in one roaring cascade of foam, to join the Tummel from Loch Rannoch, which in turn joins the lordly Tay some four miles nearer Dunkeld. And hand-in-hand with romance go legend and superstition of a kind to fire the imagination of a story-teller. There in mill, smithy, or rural tavern, Stevenson might have heard more "bogle stories" of an erier sort than his early instructress, Cummy, ever knew or dreamed possible.

The summers in that enchanted region, as I once knew them, are in general radiantly fine, often gorgeous, with a brightness, a delicacy, a variety and richness of colour scarcely to be matched elsewhere. The summer of 1881, however, was wet and cold; and Stevenson's two months at Kinnaird Cottage were passed in an almost constant succession of rain and wind. What was his loss is to-day the reader's gain. Unable to be out-of-doors, save in fleeting gleams of sunshine, he was all the busier within. Quite appropriately in that ghost-haunted place he planned and partly wrote a series of tales of the supernatural. As a beginning he produced "Thrawn Janet," the best, in my opinion, of his short stories, and "The Body-Snatcher," which is

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

almost, if not quite, the worst. On his own confession, "Thrawn Janet" "frightened him to death," which perhaps explains its exceptional imaginative force and vividness. As a piece of weird, gruesome superstition, rendered with the cold shudder of the ghostly and eerie, it has scarcely ever been surpassed, even by Scott. It was finished at night in an upper room, with the driven rain drumming on the roof and the windows threatening to go to pieces in the blast. By the time the tale was ended, Mrs. Stevenson related, her husband "had fairly frightened himself, and we crept downstairs, hand in hand, like two scared children." Later Stevenson became critical over his own performance, remarking that "it is true only historically, true for a hill parish in Scotland, not true for mankind and the world." Nevertheless, he owned that every time he read the story it carried him away; and he added, with pardonable pride, that if he had written nothing but "Thrawn Janet" and the tale of Tod Lapraik in *Catriona* he would still have been a writer—a self-estimate not likely to be challenged by any discerning reader.

At Kinnaird Cottage, too, he wrote the greater part of "The Merry Men," which contains some of his very best descriptive work. "Thrawn Janet" was sent to Leslie Stephen with little hope of its being accepted, because, Stevenson feared, it was "too Scotch" for an English magazine. His fear was unfounded. The story was warmly welcomed, and duly appeared in the *Cornhill*. He would indeed be a blind editor who rejected that little masterpiece of horror and terror. The other projected stories, some half-dozen in number, were never written.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

THE FIGHT FOR FINANCIAL INDEPENDENCE

At that time also happened what, on review, must have seemed to Stevenson himself the hugest joke of his life, though then he took it with intense seriousness. The Chair of Constitutional Law and History in Edinburgh University fell vacant ; and Stevenson, forgetting his jibes at professors, became a candidate. The emolument was small, only £250 a year, but the duties were light, lectures being confined to the summer term. The occupant could thus be absent from Edinburgh for three quarters of the year, a fact of first-rate importance to Stevenson. With characteristic ardour he set himself to the task of procuring testimonials : and his friends, like good sportsmen, rallied to his aid. Leslie Stephen wrote cordially of his "very remarkable literary talent," adding, "I know no writer of Mr. Stevenson's standing of whose future career I entertain greater expectations." Mr. Meiklejohn, who held the Chair of Education in St. Andrews University, was sure that "Mr. Stevenson, more than any other man I know of in Scotland, would make the past of our Scottish history live again. He possesses in quite a rare degree the most needful qualities for an historian—a keen and true insight into the life of man and a strong sympathy with all shapes and forms of it." Another St. Andrew professor, Lewis Campbell, known to students of a past generation as editor and translator of Sophocles, vouched for Mr. Stevenson's knowledge of Scottish history, and observed quaintly that "his amiable facility of style" (whatever that may mean) "must communicate grace to every subject which he handles

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

with seriousness." Evidently Mr. Campbell was aware that his candidate did not always handle subjects with seriousness. Andrew Lang described his friend as "the most refined and ingenious writer of his generation. I understand that he has for some years been occupied with the studies of the religious, social, and political history of Scotland and of the Highlands." Other supporters were Principal Tulloch, Professor Sellar, Professor Babington, of Cambridge, P. G. Hamerton, and Mr. Sidney Colvin. The one name lacking that might confidently be expected to appear on the list is that of Fleeming Jenkin. Its absence is striking and significant.

According to Stevenson's own account Jenkin warmly approved; but obviously his assistance ended with approval, or at any rate with advice. Curiously enough, he advised a piling-up of *English* testimonials. It sounds almost like a jest. Jenkin was far too honest, had far too much the instincts and attributes of a gentleman to evade what might seem an unpleasant obligation to a friend by hinting or implying that in a matter which was peculiarly Scottish the electors could be best impressed from England. Presumably he was asked for a testimonial. Why did he not give it? He was a member of the Senatus of the University, and therefore likely to be influential. Possibly from his inner knowledge he felt or knew that Stevenson had little or no chance of succeeding and that he did not wish to be too prominently associated with a failure. At any rate, his name does not appear in the list of those who vouched for the candidate's fitness for the post he sought. Stevenson had the testimonials, fourteen in number, printed in a neat pamphlet. By the time they were

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

ready he had again left Scotland, and he sent them to the electors in Edinburgh with the following prefatory note : " As Mr. Stevenson is at present on the Continent and cannot possibly meet with the electors, he has considered it advisable to submit the accompanying testimonials for their perusal."¹

His candidature failed as in the circumstances it was bound to fail. The surprising fact that he was a candidate at all is a pathetic comment on his

¹ The following are the particulars—with signatories, designations, and dates :

Pamphlet ; bound in paper ; 17 pp., 8vo.

Title-page : Testimonials in favour of Robert Louis Stevenson, Advocate.

From Leslie Stephen, M.A., late Fellow and Tutor of Trinity Hall, Cambridge ; author of *History of English Thought in the Eighteenth Century*. (June 24, 1881.)

From J. M. D. Meiklejohn, M.A., Professor of Theory, Practice, and History of Education, St. Andrews. (June 27, 1881.)

From Edmund W. Gosse, author of *Studies in the Literature of Northern Europe*. (Personal letter : June 28, 1881.)

From John Addington Symonds, M.A., late Fellow of Magdalen College, Oxford ; author of *Renaissance in Italy*, etc.

From Lewis Campbell, M.A., LL.D., Professor of Greek, St. Andrews. (July 27, 1881.)

From Sidney Colvin, M.A., Slade Professor of Fine Art, Cambridge, etc. (June 28, 1881.)

From A. Lang, late Fellow of Merton College, Oxford. (June 30, 1881.)

From the Rev. Professor Churchill Babington, D.D., F.L.S., V.P.R., Doc. Lit., etc., Rector of Cockfield, Suffolk, and Honorary Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge, formerly Disney Professor of Archæology in the University and Fellow of St. John's College. (July 9, 1881.)

From P. G. Hamerton, author of *The Life of Turner*, *The Intellectual Life*, etc. (July 7, 1881.)

From Thos. S. Baynes, LL.B., LL.D., Professor of Logic and English Literature in the University of St. Andrews. (July 11, 1881.)

From Professor Sellar, LL.D., Professor of Humanity in the University of Edinburgh. (Personal letter : July 15, 1881.)

From the Rev. J. Cameron Lees, D.D., St. Giles's Cathedral, Edinburgh. (August 12, 1881.)

From the Rev. Alexander Whyte, M.A., D.D., Free St. George's Church, Edinburgh. (Personal letter : October 17, 1881.)

From John Tulloch, D.D., LL.D., Vice-Chancellor, University of St. Andrews. (October 25, 1881.)

They all avoid committing themselves on the question of Academic qualifications, especially in law.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

position and his efforts to achieve financial independence. He had failed tragically in America ; here was a chance in his native town : he seized it eagerly, and once again his native town would have none of him. With the record closed and the sum of his achievements before us, we may marvel at his extreme eagerness and anxiety. He was thirty-one. For ten years at least he had been writing more assiduously than any other young author of his time, with little else to divert or engage his energies. Yet literature was not yielding him even a modest living wage. With perfect justice, his sponsors were able to describe him as one of the most accomplished writers of the day. How came it, then, that he laboured to so little effect ? Was the public forty years ago so dull that it was incapable of responding to the peculiar appeal of Stevenson ? Or was the failure due to other causes ?

To be sure, his gifts were not of a kind to take the world by storm. He had not the rousing clarion-note of Scott nor the comic exuberance of Dickens ; (Sam Weller alone would make the fortune of any comedian.) As little, it may be added, had he the marrowy, elemental force of Mr. Rudyard Kipling. He was essentially a cameo-worker, a latter-day Alexandrian, if you like, expert in imitation, but somewhat lacking in creative energy, and perhaps too studiously pre-occupied with quaint preciousities of style. To the elect he was delightful because they had themselves pretensions as stylists ; but the general reader, to whom artistic fripperies are often less a joy than an offence, was not sophisticated enough to feel the charm of skilfully-manipulated words. *The Pickwick Papers* and *The New Arabian Nights* are

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

both fantastic ; but the familiar fun, the horseplay of the one is instantly infectious, while the glittering brilliancies of the other are apt to leave the plain man in a state of cold bewilderment.

Nevertheless, it is difficult to imagine how such exquisite talents as Stevenson's, so strenuously applied through so many years, should have brought such meagre pecuniary rewards. And be it remembered he was not, like Landor, for instance, a leisured amateur cultivating classic grace for his own delight. With all his might, all the resources of his art, he was striving for popularity, writing for money. Where, then, or with whom lay the fault ? Probably in some error of management. He had the most loyal, the most consistently vocal friends of any man then engaged in authorship. But they had perhaps little capacity for business ; and on that score Stevenson himself was notoriously defective. He produced, wrote till he was giddy and half blind, like Hood's sempstress ; but an author writes in vain if readers are not aware of his existence. One live business man with initiative, enterprise, and a quick sense of values might, and probably would, have changed everything for Stevenson, turned comparative failure into resounding success, and given him the independence for which he was striving so frantically. I am confirmed in this view by what happened later in America. It is a statement of bare fact to say that as soon as American editors and publishers "discovered" him his reputation, which meant his earning power, bounded upward. Was the grateful change due to the finer perception of American readers or to the keener instincts of American business men ? Whatever the reason, the fact is indubitable.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

At Kinnaird Cottage he was much in love with his green little glen under Ben Vrackie, with its typical hill burn, "a wonderful burn," as he rapturously describes it, "gold and green and snow-white" as it races and leaps in its rocky channel or swirls in foam-flecked pools under miniature falls. In that charmed spot, as we have seen, he did some of his very best work. But the weather was a constant affliction, surpassing itself for inclemency even in the land of mists, squalls, and downpours. "A cold and a fly-blister," with threatenings of more serious pulmonary troubles, were the result. Seeing that a change was necessary, Thomas Stevenson rented a small house at Castleton, Braemar. On the 1st of August, therefore, the family drove across the hills by Strathairdle, stopping for the night at the Spital of Glenshee, a picturesque halting-place familiar to tourists. The Edinburgh professorship being still bright on the horizon, Stevenson, though miserably weak, was in excellent spirits. In consequence his imagination was unusually active. As he tells, it was during that long drive over lonely moors that the germinal idea of *The Master of Ballantrae* came to him. The book, however, was not written until six years later and far from the Perthshire Highlands.

A SWIFT TURN OF FORTUNE

Braemar, as half the touring, sporting world knows, is one of the "show-spots" in a land of fashionable playgrounds. In the midst, in the very heart, of the Grampians stands, or more properly straggles, the small village of Castleton-

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

on-Dee. Compared with the Vale of Athole in its varied richness, the scene is desolately wild, with the grandeur of crowding mountains, corries, and craggy ravines, the loneliness of vast deer-forests, and illimitable leagues of bleak heath, fit rendezvous for the weird sisters of Macbeth, were any enchanter to call them to life again. For Stevenson it had one supreme virtue—an air which is medically reputed to be the purest and best in Scotland. But it had also other potent if less obvious attractions. For there, as my readers will remember, the redoubtable Earl of Mar raised the standard for the Stuarts in 1715. To Stevenson bubbling with eagerness over his *History of the Highlands*, the place, therefore, offered the natural starting-point in his researches. He meant, as he told his father, to open the narrative “immediately after the '15, as then began the attempt to suppress the Highlands.” Here, then, a fortunate chance had brought him to the fountain-head, the very well-spring of that enthralling course of tragedy and romance which it was his ambition to describe. The reasons for his turning aside we shall see presently.

To the picturesque tourist Braemar is chiefly notable for two things—fashionable scenery and nearness to Balmoral Castle, the latter being the dominant factor in its popularity. Queen Victoria, whose passion for the heather and the tartan made even unquenchable Jacobites almost forget and forgive her descent from “the wee, wee German lairdie” they detested and satirised so bitterly, gave Braemar a vogue with the whole world of high society. Where Royalty leads, the smart set and its satellites try to follow with that ardour of emulation which is the sincerest form of flattery.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

During Stevenson's stay at Castleton, Victoria was in residence at Balmoral. Her broad, overflowing figure was familiar as she went in and out among crofters and cottagers, like a benevolent German *hausfrau*, bestowing red-flannel petticoats, talking pious, motherly platitudes, or giving directions for the rearing and management of children—a subject ever dear to her. In her expeditions of pleasure or mercy she passed the Stevenson cottage almost daily in an open carriage under the vigilant, despotic eye of the celebrated John Brown, ex-ghillie and now a Court personage, whose unequalled worth and beautiful legs have been commemorated by his Royal mistress. John was on his native heath, bare-kneed and impervious to weather, but the unfortunate ladies-in-waiting, as watchers in the cottage noted, sat shivering blue-chinned and red-nosed in the cold, which to the Queen, as to her Highland henchman, was but a pleasant coolness. She never turned aside to inquire for the invalid author; probably she never heard of his existence. Though herself an amateur dabbler in authorship—"We authors, ma'am," was one of the astute Disraeli's favourite modes of address—Her Majesty's interest in literature scarcely went beyond the courtly odes and adulatory dedications of her official laureate, Tennyson. And as she passed by, unknowing and unheeding, so did the world of fashion in her wake.

Nevertheless Stevenson had visitors whose visits were to have momentous results. His father, happy in the joy of reconciliation, was there as much as his official duties permitted; and Charles Baxter and Mr. Sidney Colvin came, as always, with cheering effect. More important still, as it

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

proved, young Samuel Lloyd Osbourne was home from school on holiday. The weather was unspeakable; Stevenson was singularly unfortunate in weather. Kept indoors by gales and sleet and lashing rains, the boy amused himself with brush and paintbox, and sometimes his stepfather joined in the game. One day, for lack of better employment, the elder of the playmates drew a fancy map of an island, and, as he records, "with the unconsciousness of the predestined" inscribed it "Treasure Island." In the hands of Fate small events take on a great significance. That map, designed as the amusement of an idle hour, was the genesis of Stevenson's most popular book, the central turning-point in his history.

Years afterward a short-lived London Magazine, the *Idler*, edited by Mr. J. K. Jerome, published a series of articles by authors of the day under the general title "My First Book." To the issue for August, 1894, four months before his death, Stevenson contributed an account of the conception and production of the story which made his reputation as a writer of popular romance. Between the publication of the book and the date of the article there was an interval of eleven years. Stevenson had, therefore, before him, so to speak, the general judgment of readers and the verdict of critics concerning his work as a novelist. Accordingly he seized the occasion to make his article, not a bare chronicle or statistical statement, but a confession of faith, dealing in some detail with the principles and practice of his art, in fact a sort of *apologia pro vita sua*. In regard to *Treasure Island* readers had been enthusiastic and critics had praised—with reservations. These noted, for one thing, the author's heavy indebtedness to predecessors in

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

the same field—the result, we may suppose, of that long course of imitation already noticed. He did not deny the soft impeachment; rather he gloried in it. After all, what were his borrowings? A parrot from Defoe, a skeleton from Poe, a stockade from Marryat. Well! had those writers a monopoly of talking birds, skeletons, and stockades? Surely not. Departing, they had left behind them footprints on the sands of time, footprints that perhaps another—and he was that other. The chief part of the loot, however, came from Washington Irving's *Tales of a Traveller*, and there his conscience was exercised; for "plagiarism was rarely carried farther." But at the time he was blissfully unconscious of his sources of inspiration. He never suspected that he was illustrating Plato's famous proposition that all knowledge, all ideas, are but recollection.

With the ornately-coloured map and the mosaic pattern made up from predecessors to guide and stimulate his invention, he sat down "on a chill September morning by the cheek of a brisk fire and the rain drumming on the windows," and began to write at the rate of a chapter a day, a pace which recalls the feats of Scott and Dumas in their prime. When a dozen or fifteen chapters were thus written at a gallop, there arrived another visitor whose simple intervention was to change the whole course of Stevenson's career, or at any rate to give it a swift turn into other channels. In his essay on Thoreau, written in California, he had said things from which Thoreau's editor and biographer, Dr. Alexander Japp, dissented. A correspondence ensued, and Dr. Japp was invited to Braemar that differences might be discussed and composed. Dr. Japp, whom I knew afterwards with some

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

intimacy, was the soul of simplicity and amiability, without an atom of rancour in his large body. Thoreau was quickly disposed of, with compliments on both sides. Then, somewhat diffidently, the visitor was told of the story in hand, and at his own request the completed chapters were read aloud to him.

He was enchanted ; and when he left it was with the manuscript in his portmanteau. It is not too much to say that he was carrying Stevenson's fortune with him. The story had been vaguely meant for the publishing firm of Routledge, then, I think, known as producers of works of fiction for young people. Dr. Jap; diverted it to James Henderson, a shrewd Scot, proprietor and publisher of *Young Folks*, a weekly paper designed for boys. If the Fates were propitious the story might be allowed to make its appeal to the youth of England, under Mr. Henderson's auspices ; and up to a point the Fates were propitious.

Stevenson's career as an author divides itself with remarkable sharpness into two parts. To the earlier and less important part belong, broadly speaking, the essays and short stories ; to the second and culminating part, the romances, the works which made his name familiar to that much-desiderated person—the general reader. The poems and the travel-books belong partly to the one and partly to the other. The point of diversion has now been reached, and we have seen how abruptly, how fortuitously, with what little design or prevision the division came. It came, indeed, by accident ; but it came. Henceforth, therefore, we are to deal, not with a new Stevenson—for in essence he never changed (no man ever does change in essentials)—but with a Stevenson who, by a sudden turn of the

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

wheel of fortune, is swept into the course which had hitherto seemed a hopeless aspiration. When he idly drew his fancy map, in "the late Miss MacGregor's cottage" at Castleton of Braemar, he little dreamed that he was performing an act of destiny. A Superior Intelligence might find that we perform acts of destiny every moment of our lives, just as, according to medical testimony, we change our substance with every breath we draw. But for most the slow process of incident and petty event comes in an even almost insensible transition, line upon line, line upon line, here a little and there a little, until, for the individual, the sum of things is complete. In Dr. Japp, Stevenson found the fore-ordained agent of Destiny come to swing him, as on a pivot, into the appointed course.

"TREASURE ISLAND"

After Stevenson was gone, Dr. Japp, who liked to recall his visit to Braemar and the events that followed, told me the story of his association with *Treasure Island*, and its introduction and appearance in Henderson's paper. Never guessing what was in store for me, never dreaming that the present work should ever be undertaken, I took no note of our conversations on the subject. The general outline is still quite clear in my mind, but the sequence of detail has become somewhat obscured and blurred by the concerns and happenings of a busy life. Fortunately, however, the courtesy of two old friends, Mr. Robert Leighton and Mr. Charles E. Pearce, enables me to give precise and authentic particulars of a matter that has been much discussed generally with insufficient or entirely erroneous

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

knowledge. During the Stevenson-Henderson connection Mr. Leighton was first assistant and then editor of *Young Folks*, while Mr. Pearce was one of the "star" contributors whose tales were set as a model for the new-comer. Mr. Leighton has kindly furnished me with the following full and exact account of Stevenson's tentative and far from brilliant beginning as a writer of popular romance :

"Henderson's paper, of which I was for some time the editor, was an offshoot of his *Weekly Budget*. It was first called *Our Young Folks' Weekly Budget*, then *Young Folks*, and finally *Young Folks' Paper*. It was in *Young Folks* that *Treasure Island*, *The Black Arrow*, and *Kidnapped* appeared. About 1880 *Young Folks* was the only boys' paper of good class at all suitable for a story by Stevenson. The big man for its serials was Alfred R. Phillips, whose stories were of an historical cast with high-sounding titles. They always had the front position, and Boucher, who did the cartoons in *Judy*, always had the front-page illustration. Even if *Treasure Island* had been historically picturesque, it would not have disturbed Phillips and Boucher. It had to take a back place, and it was issued in snippy little instalments.

"Dr. Japp, who knew Henderson well, always averred that it was he and he alone who introduced Stevenson's story. But I have always believed that Stevenson wrote *Treasure Island* with an eye on *Young Folks*. In his 'My First Book' article he gives the ingredients, but says nothing of a story called 'Billy Bos'n,' written by Charles E. Pearce, which was published in *Young Folks* just at about the time when he would be planning *Treasure Island*. It was a treasure-hunting story with a

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

chart and an island, and its whole plan and construction were similar. I cannot believe that Stevenson had not read it. I think he took it as a model. Anyhow, it was Japp who delivered the first part of the manuscript to Henderson in Red Lion Court.

"Its title originally was *The Sea-cook*. But no sea-cook is mentioned until chapter viii, whereas there is a reference to 'Treasure Island' in the opening sentence. This was obviously a more inviting title, and Henderson did not hesitate to adopt it, even at the cost of vexing the author. In order to give the impression that the yarn was by a mariner, Stevenson, then unknown, gave the author's name as Captain George North. The usual rate of payment was twelve-and-six per column of small print, and this was what Stevenson was paid. The story was not considered important, and it was not announced with any preliminary advertisement. Much more important was *Don Zalva the Brave*, by A. R. Phillips. The first instalment alone of *Treasure Island* was illustrated—by a small rude woodcut representing Billy Bones chasing Black Dog out of the 'Admiral Benbow.' (That name Billy Bones, by the way, is very like Billy Bos'n.) The date was October 1, 1881. The subsequent seventeen instalments were not prominent—small type at the end of the paper. The boy readers did not like the story. As a serial it was a failure. Boys like a story to plunge at once into the active excitement; but here they were kept dragging on week after week with preliminary matter connected with the inn. They wanted to get to sea, they wanted the treasure-hunt. Hundreds of them, failing to be interested in the first half-dozen instalments, ceased reading it. The paper's circulation

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

did not rise by a single copy. It was only when the chapter 'What I Heard in the Apple-barrel' was reached that there was any sign of renewed interest. It was only then that Jim Hawkins became an active hero.

"I have a copy of the paper in which the serial ran its course. It is instructive to look through it and compare it with the book-form version. In preparing it for the book Stevenson did not alter much. Here and there he struck out a paragraph, here and there he added one. He softened down Jim Hawkins's boastfulness, and Dr. Livesey, who was originally frivolous and too familiar in his language, was made more staid. In only one instance was a chapter-heading altered—'At the sign of the Spy-glass' being substituted for 'The Sea-cook.'

"It was not until 1883 that Cassells published the book. They gave him a hundred jingling golden sovereigns for it (see his letter to Henley on this point.) I don't know if this was for the full copyright or as an advance on royalties, but I think it was the former.

"I remember a letter coming to the office in which he thanked the printer's reader for the lessons he had given him in punctuation. At that time his literary style was not perfect. His 'shalls' and 'wills' and 'woulds' and 'shoulds' were confused. He wrote 'try and' instead of 'try to' and 'different to' for 'different from.'

"His second serial was *The Black Arrow*. This by Henderson's advice, was written on the lines of the work of A. R. Phillips (to whom the book was afterwards dedicated), and it took the foremost place in the paper, with illustrations by Boucher. As a serial it was a huge success. It appeared in *Young Folks* from June 30 to October 30, 1883, and

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

was again by Captain George North. It did not appear in book form until 1888—after *Kidnapped* had so appeared. *Kidnapped* was the first of Stevenson's serials that bore his own name as author—May to July, 1886. I remember answering his letter from Bournemouth concerning it. 'And look here,' he wrote, 'I must have 30s. a column for this.' And that was the rate at which he was paid.

"I was not the nominal editor in the time of *Treasure Island*—only a sort of sub-editor and 'reader.' I was supposed to have a *flair* for what boys would enjoy. My objection to *Treasure Island* was that it failed to grip in the first chapters. It had not the serial trick. A serial has the disadvantage that a reader cannot foresee what the developments will be. He cannot look at the end. The story was carried on for at least six weeks by its alluring title. It was best told as a first personal narrative, of course. But by reason of this method Jim is deprived of the possibility of being the foremost visible actor. Until the apple-barrel incident he does nothing; he is acted upon instead of being the actor, and as all the other figures are grown-ups it fails in being a boys' story. It might have been better if Jim had had a boy companion.

"My impression is that *Treasure Island* is still appreciated less by boys than by grown-up readers. I myself have read the book quite a score of times. I have never known a boy under sixteen read it a second time."

Mr. Charles E. Pearce writes to me :

"My relations with R. L. Stevenson were very slight. I met him at one of Mr. James Henderson's midday gatherings, and we did not exchange more than a word or two. He struck me as reticent and as one who would unbend in congenial company.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

His dress was eccentric—suggestive of a Western backwoodsman. When walking in Fleet Street he always aroused curiosity. *Treasure Island* as a serial in *Young Folks* fell flat. The readers were unmoved, and the test of popularity—the reception of letters from youthful admirers—was wanting. I must confess I was not then tempted to read it, despite the recommendation of William Sawyer, a poet and a fastidious critic, who was greatly attracted by the style.

“Writing in the *Academy*, the late Richard Middleton said of a boy’s taste in reading that ‘he knows what he likes,’ and asked, ‘What was it in *Treasure Island* that the readers of *Young Folks* did not like?’ At a loss to find an adequate solution of the puzzle why a story containing ‘pirates,’ treasures, a desert island, some good fighting, and a boy hero . . . the elements that we should seek in a model work of that description,’ fell so flat when presented in a serial form, Mr. Middleton advanced the theory that ‘Stevenson’s characterisation is more than skin-deep,’ that the ‘grown-ups in the book do not turn to the boy-hero for orders,’ and that his splendid achievements (i.e. those of the boy-hero) are due to luck rather than judgment, and he emerges from his adventures without a halo.’ In commenting upon Mr. Middleton’s article I remarked in the following number of the *Academy* that, while agreeing with the criticism, I did not think it touched the weak spot in *Treasure Island*, regarded as a serial story. Its failure in *Young Folks* was due to causes which every editor of a boys’ paper will recognise. I went on to say :

“‘It is a fundamental rule with a boy’s serial that, unless it “catches on” in the first three instalments, it will not catch on at all. Judged

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

from this standpoint, the fault of *Treasure Island* is evident. It not only was prefaced by a "Prologue" (called Part I when the story appeared in book form), which boys as a rule do not understand and are too impatient to read, but the three opening instalments are uninteresting—from the boy's point of view—and have little to do with what follows.'

"The title in *Young Folks* was 'Treasure Island ; or, the Mutiny of the *Hispaniola*.' The sub-title was not a good one, and maybe Stevenson thought so, as like the Prologue it was subsequently dropped.

"Apart from the initial defect, *Treasure Island* I conceive failed because it did not comply with what a boy looks for—it did not picture a hero appealing to his imagination. The boy likes a hero whose mantle he can don ; into whose triumphs he can enter ; whose deeds he can fancy he is performing. Mr. Middleton is quite right in what he says about the 'grown-ups.' All the way through Jim Hawkins is a little outside the picture instead of being constantly in the foreground. Moreover, the story is told in the first person, and for some reason the personal form of narrative is not popular with boys. *The Black Arrow* can only be considered a pot-boiler by the side of *Treasure Island*, but it fulfilled the requirements of the serial, and probably by this time Stevenson had learned something of his new craft, for in the opening he plunges into the marrow of the story in the approved style. Moreover, *The Black Arrow* was finely illustrated by the late W. Boucher and it was always in the place of honour. Hence its success.

"With my knowledge of Mr. James Henderson's methods," Mr. Pearce continues, "I have little

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

hesitation in saying that after the opening sentences of *Treasure Island* as they stood in the manuscript submitted to him by Dr. Japp he read little more. Whether he was impressed by these opening chapters is doubtful. Mr. Henderson was very shrewd in regard to what his public liked. 'Style' most certainly did not interest him. The serial was announced in the issue of *Young Folks* for September 24, 1881. Two fresh stories were promised for the 'Grand Michaelmas Number,' published the following week, and of Stevenson's we are informed :

" The other serial which we shall commence is entitled

TREASURE ISLAND

and will be found a deeply-interesting romance of sailors of the olden style and of the sea that is old yet ever new. This is from the pen of a writer who is new to these pages, though he is not new to celebrity, and as he has produced a thrilling and dramatic work we are sure readers of *Young Folks* will give him a cordial welcome.

" It will be noted that no author's name is mentioned. The first instalment duly appeared under the full title thus :

" ' TREASURE ISLAND ; or
The Mutiny of the *Hispaniola*
By CAPTAIN GEORGE NORTH.'

" The universal rule in the commencement of a new serial is to give an extra quantity of matter so

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

as to enable the reader to get well into the story. The first instalment should stimulate curiosity. If it fails in this essential, the story fails altogether. But a meagre quantity of *Treasure Island* was given, there was no 'curtain' to whet the appetite for the next number, the illustration was insignificant and the lines below quite tame. What boy's imagination would be stimulated by so prosaic a statement as this: 'The captain aimed at the fugitive one last blow which, however, was stopped by the signboard'? The succeeding instalments were far too brief, and it was some weeks before the thread of the story was reached. Nothing could be more depressing. Little wonder was it that *Treasure Island* as a serial crept slowly along and went out like a damp squib. Stevenson was not exhilarated by the pay—ten shillings a thousand words, the usual scale—but to *Young Folks*, *Treasure Island* was not worth more.

"An interesting question concerning the conception of *Treasure Island* was raised some years ago by Mr. Robert Leighton, who was editor of *Young Folks* at the time of Stevenson's introduction to Mr. Henderson. The question is this: was the story as taken by Dr. Japp to the proprietor of *Young Folks* identical with the one published, or did Stevenson modify it to suit Mr. Henderson's views? Mr. Leighton, recording in the *Academy* of March 3, 1890, his remembrance of what took place during the negotiation between Stevenson and Mr. Henderson, said: 'As indicating the kind of story he [Mr. James Henderson] desired for *Young Folks*, he gave to Stevenson copies of the paper containing a serial by Charles E. Pearce—a treasure-hunting story entitled *Billy Bos'n*. In his "My First Book" article in the *Idler* Stevenson seems to

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

suggest that *Treasure Island* was already formed and planned in his mind prior to the time at which it was thought of as a serial for *Young Folks*, but there is evidence that in *Billy Bos'n* he found and adopted many suggestions and incidents for his own narrative.' Upon this Dr. Japp joined issue with Mr. Leighton, and in the *Academy* of the following week told how he had heard Stevenson read the first half of the story, which half he took to Mr. Henderson. About Dr. Japp's share in the transaction there can be no doubt ; but it does not answer the question. As the author of *Billy Bos'n* I can say nothing because I know nothing. Mr. Leighton's statement came upon me as a surprise. It is quite true that the materials used in both stories are pretty much the same—a mutiny, a cypher, a derelict ship, an island, a treasure—but such materials have been common property dating from Poe's *Gold Bug*.

“Stevenson's letters to W. E. Henley, in which he refers to *Treasure Island*, have a bearing on the genesis of the book worthy of consideration. On August 25, 1881, he speaks of having three chapters finished, and in September (no day mentioned) he writes : ‘ I don't think with the start I have made there will be any difficulty in letting Mr. Henderson go ahead whenever he likes.’ The inference, surely, is that he began the story afresh after submitting ‘ the half ’ of it (to quote Dr. Japp) to Mr. Henderson. Otherwise there would have been plenty of copy to hand. But here the matter must be left. Mr. Clinton, the sub-editor of *Young Folks*, told me that, Stevenson's ‘ copy ’ on one occasion arriving very late, he had to cut it for distribution among the compositors for expedition's sake. My impression then was that he was refer-

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

ring to *Treasure Island*, but I have since come to the conclusion that it referred to *The Black Arrow*, as Stevenson was staying at Hyères at the time. In any case, Stevenson was intensely angry at the mutilation of his copy.

“Apropos of *The Black Arrow*, it will be remembered that in his preface to the story in book form Stevenson acknowledged that he in a way wrote it in a sense of indebtedness to Alfred R. Phillips (a favourite author of heroic serials) in his mind. This, of course, would account for a directness of opening not to be found in *Treasure Island* and *Kidnapped*. It is to be noted also that apparently his reluctance to figuring conspicuously in the pages of *Young Folks* had been overcome.”

MOMENTOUS BEGINNINGS

“I love my native air,” Stevenson wrote during that visit to the Highlands, “but it does not love me.” It loved him so little at Braemar that, as a protection and antidote, his uncle, Dr. G. W. Balfour, prescribed a respirator of grotesque construction for the inhalation of pinewood oil. He had never, as he owned, been beautiful; now with his “pig’s snout” and its weird appendages, he made a picture of comic hideousness. In a rhyming epistle to Henley he described with subacid mirth both his appearance and his feelings:

My gills out flapping right and left.
On either hand—I tell no crammers.
Valves, like minute piano-hammers
Go up and down with every breath,
To make a sexton laugh to death.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Once he had been " fit for ladies' love " ; but, alas !
alas !—

The well-known, insidious grace,
Cock of the eye or strut of walk—

was a thing of the past. He was ridiculed, despised,
avoided ; but one consolation remained, the last
and worst, that—

Nothing can befall, O ! damn,
To make me uglier than I am.¹

Just then he was very much in the rhyming vein, and the rhymes were to have far-reaching results. It was at Braemar that he began the long, slow process of writing, rewriting, and recasting which ultimately produced *A Child's Garden of Verses*, the classic of childhood which, perhaps more than anything else he wrote, has endeared him to a world of readers. The inspiration, as his mother noted in her carefully-kept diary, came from Kate Greenaway's *Birthday Book for Children*. The volume happened to be in the house ; Stevenson took it up idly and looked it over, thought the rhymes of Mrs. Sale Barker " rather nice," and not difficult to write. The old passion for imitation seized him. Forthwith he set himself to imitate the facile rhymes which lilted along so pleasantly ; and inevitably he became his own hero. Never forgetting his own life, as he told Henry James, he found his best, his only material in that enchanting childhood which he had already celebrated in so many passages. And if it enchanted him, why, it might enchant others if only he could " recapture the first fine careless rapture," the spirit of make-believe which once filled 17 Heriot Row and Colinton Manse with all the wonders, all the glories

¹ Printed in full in Professor Trent's *His Workshop*, Boston Bibliophile Society.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

of battle and piracy. Looking back, he was fascinated by the child Smout and the boy Lou Stevenson.

He did not immediately realise the richness, the possibilities of the suggestion which came to him. His efforts began playfully and with as little pre-science as he felt or displayed over his fanciful map of "Treasure Island." He meant merely to prove to those about him that he too could rhyme with grace and facility ; but very soon he perceived that the new idea might be made something more than an ingenious exercise in imitation. He would be a child again. Accordingly he set himself with characteristic ardour to the task of recalling the fancies, delights, sentiments, sensations, cravings, and disappointments of childhood. How he succeeded the world knows. "The candour of a child," says Renan, in a memorable passage, "unconscious of its own beauty and seeing God clear as the daylight, is the great revelation of the ideal." At no stage of his life was Stevenson unconscious of his own beauty. He was doubly conscious of it now in recalling the time when, had he died, he might, as he said, have been "the subject for a tract." The recollections of the mature man in contact with "the miry realm of reality" are not as the artless emotions of the child "trailing clouds of glory." *A Child's Garden of Verses* does not escape the sophistication which is the inevitable fruit of knowledge and experience. Yet the little book mirrors, or reproduces, the aspirations, the joys, the griefs, the longings of childhood with a fidelity and happiness of effect probably unequalled in our poetic literature.

In a burst of enthusiasm he wrote over a dozen pieces, not, however, as we have them now, for

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

they underwent drastic changes. His ardour was interrupted by other work, and *Penny Whistles*, as the book was first called, was laid aside till a more convenient season. *Treasure Island* went on prosperously for half its course, as originally planned ; then suddenly invention failed. It was a common experience with Stevenson to break down midway in a long story ; indeed, nearly all his longer books are broken efforts, a fact partly due, no doubt, to physical infirmity, but chiefly, as is plain, to failure of the inventive faculty. Few of his novels or romances were planned and executed as wholes, because rarely, if ever, were they organic growths, products of that creative shaping imagination which, seeing before and after, makes the last line implicit in the first. By that sign you may know the born creator. Stevenson was all his life an invalid of limited gifts, striving with splendid courage and persistency to be an athlete. He is not to be blamed because he was not a giant and could not perform the feats of a giant.

FAREWELL TO YOUTH

Despite the respirator and the pine-oil, Braemar, with its sousing rains and sleety squalls, became impossible. Once more flight was imperative, and on September 23 the family returned to Edinburgh. Though under sentence of banishment, Stevenson preserved his vivacity and his interest in things about him. During his brief halt of a few days he revisited some of his old haunts with something of his old ardour. To Councillor J. Wilson MacLaren, a devoted Stevensonian, I am indebted for a vivid impression of Louis

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

as he paused in his southward flight. Councillor MacLaren, who is himself a distinguished poet and story-teller, writes to me :

"I had published a small book of verse in Braid Scots, and was credited with knowing something of the old houses and the old closes of the Royal Mile. Stevenson had heard of me, and, although only on a hurried visit to the city of his birth, he sought me out on an afternoon in Writers' Court, High Street. I showed him through the quaint panelled apartment once occupied by the Star and Garter. I did not require to remind him that Sir Walter Scott had immortalised Clerihugh's Tavern, for there Dandie Dinmont and the lawyer bodies from Parliament House often met for a splore."

Together they made the round of once-familiar resorts—the Lawnmarket, Greyfriars, Advocates' Close, St. Giles, Buccleuch kirkyard, where lies the notorious Deacon Brodie, Lady Stair's house, and other old houses and haunts. In George Square, after visiting No. 25, the old home of Sir Walter Scott,¹ "Stevenson asked me," continues Councillor MacLaren, "if I knew anything about Lord Braxfield? I had to confess my ignorance. With a smile he turned round and, pointing up the Square, to the house now occupied by the College of Agriculture, he said, 'Braxfield lived there; hot stuff in his day.' " Readers of *Weir of Hermiston* will understand the significance of the remark. Probably even then Stevenson had some dim idea of using Braxfield for the purposes of fiction. The itinerary, proceeds Councillor MacLaren, included "McIndoo's shooting-gallery, that foul-smelling underground tunnel, near the Royal Exchange.

¹ Now owned and occupied by my old friend and schoolmate, Dr. Robert Stewart.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

We had six shots each, and Stevenson missed the stone target twice. I was more successful ; for I struck the bull's-eye and rang the bell five times, the secret being that most of my time was spent in McIndoo's when a High Street boy.¹ The uncanny surroundings and the smell of the gunpowder must have stirred the adventurous memories of R. L. S. ; for he confessed to me that, although ten years my senior, he still had a hankering to write for the ' penny-bloods ' a type of literature such as *The Boys of London and New York*, to which I was contributing some pirate yarns at that time. Stories such as *Sweeney Tod*, *the Demon Barber of Fleet Street*, *Three-fingered Jack*, *Dick Turpin*, *David Haggart*, *Jack Harkaway*, and *Tom Wildrake's School-days*, were then very popular among youthful readers. The boys' favourite hero in fiction at that time was ' Cornelius Dabber,' the timber-legged character much addicted to drinking rum. When *Treasure Island* was published in *Young Folks* it seemed to me that the prototype of John Silver was my old friend and hero ' Cornelius ' turned into a buccaneer." Eventually the explorers turned into a " howff," not far from the Parliament House, and there " in a back room sat down like true Bohemians to a feast fit for the gods—hot mulled porter, saveloys and bread."

Councillor MacLaren adds this very interesting personal impression of Stevenson as he then appeared :

" During my life-time it has been my good fortune to meet men and women whose names have become household words in politics, literature, art, and music, but none of them impressed me as much

¹ Students of human nature may be interested to learn that when Stevenson missed the target he swore like a lord—or a trooper.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

as R. L. S. I still retain a vivid recollection of my meeting with him in 1881. His appearance suggested a dandified Frenchman, but the moment he spoke his voice betrayed the true Scots accent. His mind and actions struck me as peculiarly boyish, and this was thoroughly revealed during our visit to McIndoo's shooting-gallery in Writers' Court, High Street. He revelled in the sport as only a boy could. From the moment we met until we parted his manner was that of one who had known me all his life. Free from all affectation, he seemed keenly interested in anything I said, and his replies, at times, had an element of genuine humour in them. In short, he did not strike me as one puffed up with his own importance, but rather the reverse.

"R. L. S. was a type of man people would be tempted to turn round and look at if they met him in the street. There was an irresistible *something* which would make one do this—possibly his eccentric style of dress, long brown hair, and lank figure.

"After he bade me good-bye, the thought occurred to me that the genial and breezy Professor John Stuart Blackie—for there seemed so much in common as far as their appearance was concerned—would have passed as an ideal father to R. L. S.

"In the *Weekly Scotsman*, November 11, 1911, I had a rhyming screed to a friend, and it might interest you if I quoted a couple of the verses, which particularly referred to Stevenson :

By Fairmilehead I took the gate,
Where once dwelt "Tusitala"—
Up hill, down howe; and, tho' 'twas late
Thro' fields baith green and fallow.
Stravaigin' on, back to the days,
My thochts gaed when I harkit
To his sweet voice, and heard him praise
The High Street and Lawnmarket!

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

A care-free loon was I, and deil,
Yet bookish tho' fu' glaikit;
My hero was the lang lean chiel
Who wore the velvet jaicket!
Sic een, sic hair, and serious look—
I envied Louis—rather!
And queer, this thocht my noddle took—
That Blackie was his faither!

“ I am fully conscious that Stevenson, at times, suffered greatly through ill-health, but I can never get my thoughts to picture him as a chronic invalid. That day he had the manners of a boy—happy and full of agility.”

So Stevenson was still indomitably Stevenson. From the first he had set himself the inexorable rule that never, if he could help it, would the deflections of the body be allowed to damp or dim the brightness of the mind. In face of everything he would be the jaunty Bohemian, the jolly knight in life's tournament, ever gaily ready to set lance in rest for a tilt with Fate. Fleeing for his life, as in reality he then was, he could nevertheless turn aside for the sport of a shooting-gallery and the fun of his own bad marksmanship; regale royally on mulled porter and saveloys; and in general impress his companion with his blithe, boyish, care-free bearing. By temperament he was buoyant; and his malady was not of the kind which drags down by the debasing, unmanning ordeal of pain. Hence it involved no heroic effort to play the consistent comedian in public, whatever black moments there might be in secret. But at the point we have reached his lightness, his joyous valiance, are particularly noteworthy. For in that brief return to early haunts he was bidding farewell, a final farewell to his youth.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

I believe he felt it to be so, and that the feeling prompted what, in the circumstances, might have been an act of disastrous temerity. Let it always be remembered that deep down in the core of his being nestled the ineradicable Scot. The complexities of his origin, the Gascon in him, could not obliterate, however they might temper or modify, his essential self, the self which was the child of the ancient qualities, the ancient idiosyncrasies and traditions of his race. And Edinburgh was part of himself, "the gusty, rainy, smoky, grim old city" where, as he told Charles Baxter, his heart was buried, "say, in Advocates' Close." Did a dead hand lay its invisible hold on him then, did a mysterious voice whisper in his inner ear, "Come, come for the last time"? The gaiety which had become a habit may well have veiled the weird premonition that his countrymen call "fey," the mystic sense of fatefulness and of doom which in profound moments visits the soul.

The emotions evoked by the once-familiar scenes he kept to himself; despite his engaging frankness he had his nation's gift of secrecy; but, in the words of his favourite, Sir Thomas Browne, they are not beyond conjecture. The old loves which, as Petronius remarks, pinch like a crab; the old hates, the Bohemian nights, the riotous jovialities with Henley and Charles Baxter; the flippancies, the levities, the "schoolboy blasphemies," so fortunately and decisively nipped by Fleeming Jenkin; the "Spec"; the happenings in the old college quadrangle; even the escapade of the police-court; and most of all, perhaps, the image of one "once fondly loved and still remembered dear" who had passed tragically into the eternal darkness, all these

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

and much more must have lain deep in his thoughts. And they had all slipped away, as the present was slipping into the irrevocable past. Yet he was true to himself ; true at least to the superficial Gascon. He laughed as if there were nothing whatever to regret.

DAVOS AGAIN

From Edinburgh the family of three went on to London. There, the way being prepared by Dr. Japp, Stevenson called on James Henderson, the visit, I take it, mentioned by Mr. Pearce. As so often happened, his appearance roused the darkest suspicions of his respectability. The clerks, shrewdly ridiculing the idea that so very bizarre an oddity could possibly be a contributor, actual or potential, to a paper that furnished high-class entertainment for the best youth of England, received him with flouts and jeers.¹ Fortunately Mr. Henderson himself appeared and the interview passed off pleasantly. Arrangements had already progressed so far that, after a run to Weybridge and cogitations on health and other matters, Stevenson was able to send in corrected proofs of the early instalments of *Treasure Island*. This fact seems to imply that the story was accepted as Dr. Japp brought it to Mr. Henderson. Probably, however, there were hurried alterations and re-

¹ To Mr. Harold Armitage I am indebted for an amusing anecdote. "When I was writing *Sorrelsykes* I was amused by an incident which would have drawn a smile from Stevenson. I went to the office of *Young Folks* to verify some passages about R. L. S. and explained my business to a perky office-boy who had red hair and a turned-up nose. 'Ah! Robert Louis Stevenson,' he said, with great complacency. 'Yes, he used to do some work for us.'"

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

writing of parts, as Mr. Pearce suggests, to bring it more precisely into harmony with the general tone and pattern of *Young Folks*. At any rate, Stevenson was fairly embarked on his career as a writer of serials. The first instalment, as has been noted, appeared on October 1, 1881, so that before leaving London Stevenson saw it make its first tentative bid for popularity. The fact that he took an obscure place in the brilliant constellation of Red Lion Court in no way damped his spirits. Here at last he was making a direct appeal, not to the dilettante, not to finicky æsthetes for ever babbling of style, but to the many-headed multitude that fed on the strong meat of unadulterated sensation. After ten years of feverish striving he was still at the bottom, a novice learning his trade. The remuneration of ten shillings per thousand words was almost, if not quite, the lowest-paid for any class of serial fiction in London. But that, again, did not matter. He had started; his foot was on the ladder which his favourites, his exemplars had climbed so gloriously; and by all the gods of the market-place he would climb, too, and fill his purse at the top.

In that brave spirit he left London for Davos, where, again by doctor's orders, he was to spend the winter, with a volume of Boisgobey's for company by the way. After a slow process via Paris he reached Davos on October 18 with his wife and stepson. Discouraging tidings of *Treasure Island* followed him. "If this don't fetch the kids," he had written to Henley from Braemar in the first enthusiasm of composition, "why! they have gone rotten since my day." Evidently they had gone rotten. For, as Mr. Leighton has stated, they would have none of *Treasure Island*.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

They, or their elders, assailed the editor with letters of protest, of disparagement, of denunciation. "This stuff isn't good enough; chuck it," they wrote with dismaying unanimity. Why didn't the writer "get a move on?" Why didn't he "cut the cackle and come to the 'osses," as a writer of adventure stories should? The editor, or more correctly his assistant, with a spirit rare in editors, stood up gallantly for his contributor. The condemned story, he told one scoffing reader, was the best appearing in the paper. "The impress of an able writer," he added boldly, "is stamped on every paragraph. You will probably share this opinion when you have read a little more of it." The scoffer did not share this opinion. He and others continued to scoff till it was forced on the editorial mind that *Treasure Island*, instead of being an effective lure for new readers, was a dead-weight that frightened off old ones. So the story was cut into snippets and hidden away in the obscurest part of the paper.

Stevenson did not allow scorn or failure to depress him, at any rate outwardly. He went on vigorously with his writing, and in a fortnight of "delighted industry" the book was finished. His own estimate of the literary value of *Treasure Island* is given in the article "My First Book," already mentioned. "Compare it," he wrote, "with the almost contemporary *Merry Men*. One reader may prefer the one style, one the other: 'tis an affair of character, perhaps of mood; but no expert can fail to see that the one is much more difficult and the other much easier to maintain. It seems as though a full-grown, experienced man of letters could engage to turn out *Treasure Island* at so many pages a day and keep his pipe alight."

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

The self-judgment, as usual, is accurate. *The Merry Men* is a deliberate exercise in pure style, in some respects the most deliberate and determined Stevenson ever made; *Treasure Island* was as deliberately a concession to readers who had no appreciation whatever of style, who regarded it, in fact, as a dull, dreary affectation. And yet the tale was a failure. What was the cause? Was the story not good enough, or was it not bad enough? At any rate, it was not what the readers of *Young Folks* wanted. In the article just noticed he confessed that at that early stage in the book's career he was "very close on despair," though he "shut his mouth tight" and went resolutely on, as the brave man does and must.

The second winter at Davos proved both happier and more fruitful than the first. The Stevensons rented a house for themselves, the Châlet am Stein, a sort of annex of the Hotel Buol, overlooking the English chapel and near the house of Symonds. The presence of Symonds (he remained there for the rest of his life) did much to reconcile Stevenson to the cramped, monotonous conditions of a sanatorium; and the old friendship deepened to a feeling of mutual affection. Having finished *Treasure Island*, Stevenson turned with somewhat abated ardour to *The Silverado Squatters*, which, as already recorded, was "written up" from the diary kept on the spot. It was, as he said, a tough undertaking, and he was himself far from elated with the result; yet discerning readers will, I think, agree that in its class it stands out as one of the best, if not one of the most popular, of his works. He had besides several magazine articles in hand, among them the much-discussed "Gossip on Romance," which he quite adequately described to Henley as

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

"a chatty paper," but "all at loose ends." There, too, was written the greater part of *Talks and Talkers*, in which Symonds appears as Opalstein ; other friends from whom he took hints were Henley, Fleeming Jenkin, his cousin Bob, and Walter Simpson, all notable talkers, except the last, who was more remarkable for his eloquent silences than for his eagerness or fluency of speech. Just then he also wrote the preface to *Familiar Studies* ; and prefaces with him were elaborate works of art on which he spent much time and effort. The Edinburgh professorship, too, was still an inspiring hope ; and it occurred to him, as he explained to his father, that he should give the electors a real taste of his quality by writing something historical, for choice an account of the Appin murder, but, like so many of his schemes, the proposal came to nothing. Yet another project which moved him to an immense enthusiasm was a Life of Hazlitt, who, he declared, "fitted him like a glove." There ensued a correspondence with Bentley, then in the front rank of London publishers ; but it too was abandoned. Hazlitt, as we have seen, was one of his early models, and, as several essays show, was for a time a vital influence. In view of Stevenson's admiration, it is interesting, if not instructive, to recall the opinion of a yet greater writer. "He" (W. F. Schlegel), Byron wrote in his journal just sixty years earlier, "is like Hazlitt in English, who *talks pimples* : a red and white corruption rising up (in little imitations of mountains upon a map), but contain nothing and discharge nothing except their own humours." How fortunate it is that literature is a house of many mansions with ample room for every talent, every taste. On the disparagement of Byron, as on the fervid admiration

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

of Stevenson, the marginal comment might well be *cum grano salis*. Among other works planned with equal enthusiasm were *Jerry Abershaw ; a Tale of Putney Heath*, and *The Squaw Man ; or, the Wild West*. Over the first in particular his joy was lyrical, "Jerry Abershaw ! Oh, what a title !" he exclaimed rapturously. And he kept repeating "Jerry Abershaw, Jerry Abershaw," like the refrain of a catchy song. But the enchanting hero with the poetic name, who was to rival Robin Hood in feats of daring and gallantry, on Putney Heath, never emerged from the nebulous region of fancy. The tale appears to have been conceived somewhat in the vein of G. P. R. James, once the idol of romantic English youth, only with a dash, a thrilling excitement, far beyond James.

Several months earlier Stevenson had his first sharp attack of political fever. In February 1881 came the disaster, the disgrace, as he conceived it, of Majuba Hill, when an attacking British force was defeated and the leader, Sir George Colley, was killed. To Stevenson the disgrace lay, not in the defeat, but in the attack. It was shameful, he thought, that a powerful nation, ostensibly devoted to the cause of freedom and much given to homilies on the subject, should try to crush a small, comparatively-weak people who had gone out into the wilderness to obtain liberty and make themselves a home. Once in the Highlands—at Kinnaird Cottage, to be precise—he rushed upon a man who was rather brutally beating a dog. "It's not your dog," retorted the owner. "No," said Stevenson angrily, "but it's God's dog, and I am not going to see you ill-use it." Here was a case of outrageous ill-usage, of the violation of God's law and the rights of man, by a pack of juggling politicians. It was an instance

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

of a great Empire and little minds going ill together. Mr. Gladstone was in power, and he detested Mr. Gladstone with all the Tory rancour of 17 Heriot Row seven times heated. Unable to restrain himself, he protested in one of the most vigorous pieces of prose he ever wrote. He had been a Jingo, he said, when Jingoism was in season. But "a man may have been a Jingo from a sense, perhaps mistaken, of the obligations, the greatness, and the danger of his native land, and not from any brutal greed of aggrandisement or cheap love of drums and regimental columns . . . I was not ashamed to be the countryman of Jingoës ; but I am beginning to grow ashamed of being the kin of those who are now fighting ; I should rather say who are sending men to fight in this unmanly Transvaal War . . . We are in the wrong, or all that we profess is false ; blood has been shed, glory lost, and, I fear, honour also." He adjured his countrymen to be wise ere it was too late ; and there follow the almost prophetic words, " There may come in the history of England—for that is not yet concluded—a time when she shall also come to be oppressed by some big neighbour." Finally, he declared, there is no prestige like the prestige of being just.¹ It is Burke's plea over again that magnanimity in politics is not seldom the truest wisdom.

The protest was written in a fury of indignation ; but, so far as I can discover, it was suppressed. Mr. Hellman, after examination of the document

¹ Prose pieces, edited by George S. Hellman, Bibliophile Society of Boston. At the battle of Majuba Hill, General Sir Hector Macdonald (" Fighting Mac ") displayed conspicuous skill and gallantry. Twenty years later, in the second Boer War, he commanded the Highland Brigade with signal distinction. Stevenson was always deeply interested in military adventure. After Roberts's famous march on Kandahar he insisted on being addressed as Mr. Puswar Kotal Stevenson.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

and the circumstances, believes, and probably he is right, that the suppression was due to the keen business sense of Mrs. Stevenson. Her point of view is easily understood ; and none can call it unreasonable. Here he was vehemently denouncing his own countrymen. Could he afford it ? Could he, an author struggling for recognition, risk the peril of offending the very people whose suffrages he sought, who could make or mar his fortune ? His reputation, his very bread and butter, were at stake. Besides, what earthly good would a wild letter in the newspapers do ? Prudence prevailed, and the fiery protest was put away to come to light again twenty years after his death, in a New York sale-room.

Read to-day, it is a document of first-rate psychological importance. Nothing that came from his pen breathes more fervently the spirit of true magnanimity, of real brotherhood, which in the end is true patriotism. Later, as we shall see, he was moved to similar indignation over the Irish question, with a similar result ; and on the personal side he blazed out in an anger that was not to be suppressed in the famous defence of Father Damien.

RECREATIONS AND DEPRESSION

In regard to health, that second visit to Davos proved little better than the first ; but financial prospects were decidedly brightening, and Stevenson, with his mercurial temperament, had spasms of high spirits. His thoughts went back to Edinburgh, not the dour, sentimental, or rigidly-righteous Edinburgh, but the comic and the jovial. With youthful glee he recalled the images of old

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

cronies and the joys of the light-hearted time when he and they were boon oracles of the tavern. And out of the wine-scented past rose one figure which irresistibly moved his mirth, the figure of one Brash, a publican, who had once effectively ministered to convivial delights. The merry muse was tickled, and he indulged himself with a series of free-and-easy lampoons on the defunct tavern-keeper. In truth his gift for satire was of the slenderest. "The Dunciad," "Holy Willie's Prayer," and similar pungencies were not at all "in his line." Nevertheless, it was great fun to let the comic spirit go, and he announced himself joyously as the author of "Brashiana," a work, sir, to be perused with side-splitting laughter.

In the same spirit of frolic he took up the old game of "tin-soldiers" with his stepson, Sam Osbourne, entering into it with the zest of the perennial schoolboy. In an attic reached by a ladder, the rival commanders marshalled their forces with all the pomp and circumstance of a great campaign. The rules of war were strictly observed—so far as the amateur strategists knew them—with momentous evolutions in face of the enemy, daring attacks, counter-attacks, sudden sortics, and periods of painful attrition. The elder general found time and energy to establish a press-bureau (a most unmilitary act) from which were issued the *Glendarule Times*, the *Yellobally Record*, and later, after the hanging of an offending editor, the *Herald*. Those picturesque sheets chronicled the daily and hourly vicissitudes of war, with glowing descriptions of military operations, glorifying one side or the other as the correspondent happened to be a partisan of General Osbourne or General Stevenson.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Yet more exhilarating was the fun of setting up a toy press belonging to young Osbourne, and establishing, on an uncommercial basis, the firm of S. L. Osbourne & Co., printers and publishers. The firm was devoted to works of high original merit; and that these might be assured, the partners were their own authors and artists. Mr. Osbourne wrote prose tales of gory, hair-raising adventure; Mr. Stevenson, being a poet, supplied deliciously-arresting verse. And, not content with poetry, Mr. Stevenson invaded the fine-art department, where his partner, according to the deed of agreement, was to hold sole control; and there in rapturous glee designed and executed illustrations and woodcuts unparalleled of their kind. "I dote on woodcuts," he told his mother; and of two specimens sent in February 1882 as gifts to 17 Heriot Row he observed, "If my father doesn't like them he is no true man."

Again a publicity department was established; and the firm generously supplied its own press notices of its own works. *Not I and other Poems*, by Robert Louis Stevenson, was described as "a volume of enchanting poetry," while a treatise on *Moral Emblems*, by the same author, had "only to be seen to be admired." Of this distinguished work there were two editions—an édition de luxe for connoisseurs, and a popular edition for the million, "small paper, cuts slightly worn, a *great bargain*." *The Graver and the Pen; or, Scenes from Nature*, with appropriate verses and illustrations by the author of *Moral Emblems*, and *The Blue Scalper*, by Mr. Stevenson, were advertised with becoming modesty as unique in the annals of literature and art. That the public might be thoroughly enlightened, *Not I* contained a poem

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

giving a history of the publication and by implication of others :

The pamphlet here presented
Was planned and printed by
A printer unindented.
A bard whom all decry.

Finally there was a touching apology for—

The smallness of the page
And of the printer.

Under the stress of so much business the Davos Press broke down, was transferred to 17 Heriot Row, and eventually the works in hand were finished with the aid of a printer at Kingussie. According to advertisement, the publications were obtainable from "the publishers and all respectable booksellers." To-day they are much prized by collectors of Stevensoniana, a numerous and ardent clan, and are objects of keen competition in auction-rooms.

Those light-hearted diversions of a sick man have been much celebrated as proofs of an indomitable spirit of cheerfulness; and surely the claim is well and justly made. It is true that, amid manifold, but not unparalleled, difficulties and causes of dejection, he bore himself with fortitude, at times even with a boyish exuberance of spirits. But it is only half the truth; Stevenson has been a grievous sufferer from half-truths. The playthings were in reality but handy devices for keeping the ancient enemy at bay, an anodyne, like dram-drinking, sweet to the taste and momentarily effective in inducing forgetfulness. A famous contemporary man of letters said of himself that he was double, and that while one half of him

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

laughed the other half wept. The description may not inaptly be applied to Stevenson—only he was meticulously careful to do his weeping in private and his laughing in public.

The two personalities in him, the Gascon and the Scot, waged a lifelong internecine strife. The Gascon, lying near the surface, was ebullient, ostentatious, an egotist if not a braggart, eager to show himself the light and airy philosopher who could turn Fortune's buffets to a merry jest : one who never forgot.

That madcap yet superior praise doth win,
Who out of hope even casts his cap at sin.

But deep down in the core, the very marrow of being, lay the inalienable Scot with his long inheritance of sentiment, his brooding, his black moods, his grim, weird Calvinism, his haunting sense of the beating, baffling chaos and tragedy of things. Over tin soldiers and toy printing-presses, over the gay and the spectacular, the Gascon triumphed ; but in the hours of reflection and sadness, when darkness steals upon the soul like falling night, he was eclipsed, almost extinguished, by the Scot.

All his ardours of play, all his strenuous, persistent blitheness, did not save Stevenson from the deeps of foreboding and depression. In the one grand essential of health Davos was a failure ; and in a very pertinent sense he was himself a failure. The financial position, as I have said, had improved ; but he was not yet self-supporting. Moreover, he had now a family to maintain, education bills and, alas ! ever-multiplying medical fees to pay. It wounded his pride to think that the real breadwinner was still his father in Edinburgh, and his

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

father had been so generous ! A sense of inability, of failure pressed upon him. With a quivering of the nerves, a sinking of the heart, he felt that his powers were unequal to the demands upon them. Work, real work, progressed slowly and painfully, though he did his utmost, keeping at it till his head swam. The last hope in Edinburgh too had vanished, for the much-desired professorship was given to another. He had been greatly heartened over the prospect of the modest £250 a year. Now that also was gone. To add to his troubles, he hurt his knee and for some time was scarcely able to stir. These things brought fits of gloom which no jaunty bravado, no ostentatious gospel of happiness, could dispel or dissemble. Others, indeed, he might fool ; himself he could not fool. For the inexorable Scot was far too hard-headed, far too clear-sighted, to be the victim of self-deception in such matters.

To Charles Baxter, with whom, for reasons already indicated, he was always frank, he opened his heart. In December 1881, such was the tragic complication of affairs, he could not help confessing, " I do not know what is to become of us." Once again his thoughts went back pathetically to earlier, and, as it seemed, unspeakably happier, days, days which the Scots sentimentalist was fondly idealising. Oh that he could pass once more with Baxter or another through " the great clanging college archway," look in on Brash, with his fragrant cure for the blues, or revisit " the ever-glorious Lothian Road " and " the dear, mysterious Leith Walk " ! It brought a pang to think the old days were gone, never to be revived. He craved for sympathy and affection, the sympathy and the affection which the understanding heart of

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Baxter could give. With touching home-sickness he begged for news of the old place—something cheery, a little Edinburgh gossip if nothing better were going, something with a dash of the old spice, anything that might raise his spirits and help to lift him out of his slough of despond.

His wife had been ordered to Berne for her health. On Christmas Day she was returning, and he went to meet her. The latter part of the journey back was done in an open sleigh ; the cold was intense and the company frozen and dejected. Stevenson, as usual resolutely cheerful, kept up as long as he could “in imitation of a street singer.” Then he too collapsed into a condition of “dumb wretchedness.” Fortunately none of the party was any the worse.

In such circumstances and with such feelings he passed his thirty-first birthday and saw the year closing. The Gascon had sunk out of sight. He was not dead, for he was hardy and tenacious of life. But he had taken leave of his airy youth. Never again was he to be what he had been.

END OF PART I



*From a portrait of Robert Louis Stevenson by Grant Nisbet
by kind permission of The Trustees of the National Portrait Gallery, Scotland*

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON
MAN AND WRITER

PART II

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

PART II

CHAPTER I

A GLIMPSE OF "WORKSHOP"

THE stay at Davos was prolonged into April. Stevenson was striving valiantly to bear "the wolverine" on his shoulders, and even, as he told Dr. Japp, hoping to outlive it. Henley, who, then and for several years before and after, acted as his unpaid literary agent, sent him £100, a most timely help to finances which were in a state of chronic exhaustion. Henley further introduced him to the publishing firm of Chatto & Windus, who took over his earlier books. For these services Stevenson was grateful, though remarking curiously that "gratitude is a tedious sentiment. It's not ductile, not dramatic." He hoped that Messrs. Chatto & Windus would publish both *Treasure Island* and *The Silverado Squatters*, a hope that was only half realised.

The relations between the two men were then and for some time afterwards what they had been from the beginning, those not merely of intimate

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

friends, but of boon comrades. They were "dear lad" and "dear boy" to each other, and their letters abound in candours and drolleries such as only sworn comrades exchange. Henley had been seriously ruffled; but so far his affection for the old Louis, with whom he had lived for years "in absolute intimacy of give and take," had survived all shocks. Later the friendship was angrily broken; but the history of that unhappy event will be given in its place. Meanwhile Henley was rendering invaluable aid. In *London*, as has been noted, he published *The New Arabian Nights*, to his own detriment and (as the proprietors averred) the death of the periodical. In 1882 he became editor of the *Magazine of Art*, one of Messrs. Cassell & Co.'s publications, and, undeterred by previous experience, promptly enrolled his friend as a contributor. Two things Stevenson particularly needed just then—money and publicity—and in the double capacity of agent and editor Henley helped him to both. In view of what is coming, these facts ought to be borne in mind.

During the later months of his residence at Davos, Stevenson devoted himself mainly to the composition of *Penny Whistles*. The exercise involved a radical reconstruction or re-creation of his infancy and childhood, a ransacking of memory for a picture of the ailing, imprisoned child that Cummy lifted, swathed in a blanket, to gaze entranced from an upper window of 17 Heriot Row, and the boy who was alternately hunter and pirate and saw apparitions in the dusk under the trees at Colinton Manse. Paradoxical as it may appear, no other work he wrote gave Stevenson at once so much pleasure and so much trouble. It was delightful to call back from the

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

vanished past the elfish creature in whom he had always been so profoundly and so charmingly interested ; but it was desperately difficult to imbue him with the old life, the old emotions and ecstasies, make him, in a word, act and feel and think as he had acted, felt, and thought so long ago. There are very few books in the language that might or could have been written by children. Strictly speaking, there is perhaps none. The genius of an Oxford mathematical Don gave us an English classic of childhood, and Stevenson gave us another. But it may be said with tolerable certainty that neither could have been produced by a child.

Stevenson had one supreme advantage—a self-devotion that was itself an inspiration. Yet the work of recovering the past, with all its magic of experience and sensation, its illusions and aspirations, proved hard and baffling. So much had happened between 1860 and 1882 that the little Lou of legend had to be resuscitated by a species of artificial respiration which, if not painful, was provokingly slow. At any rate, the process of evocation proceeded with confused halts, mistakes, retracings, and drastic corrections. In the volume *His Workshop*, already mentioned more than once, Professor Trent prints a series of facsimiles which graphically illustrate the uncertain growth of the book and the many changes it underwent. Correct, crase, polish, prune, give back the verses to the anvil, is Horace's injunction to the poet ; and, consciously or not, Stevenson was taking the lesson to heart. The verses which now seem so simple, so limpid, so apt and spontaneous, were in reality the result of prodigious labour. Those who hold with Carlyle that genius is merely an infinite capacity

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

for taking pains might well adduce *A Child's Garden of Verses* as irrefragable proof. All the same, Stevenson, as I have said, enjoyed every moment of composition. He was his own hero ; the feats which he found so exhilarating were his own feats ; the quaint conceits and fancies which he tried to recatch as one might catch sunbeams and gossamer were his conceits and fancies. It was wholly delectable.

But how great was the trouble, how patient and persevering the artist, the manuscripts show. As Mr. H. H. Harper points out in the introduction to *His Workshop*, it is "worthy of remark that the extant manuscripts of Stevenson's earliest poems show very few changes, such as elisions or alterations—possibly because he destroyed the first drafts—while those of many of his later poems are so changed and interlined, emended and transposed that it is extremely difficult to decipher them." The handwriting becomes smaller and smaller ; often it is so minute that in reading the use of a magnifying-glass is necessary. But the point is the extraordinary pains Stevenson bestowed on his work and the difficult process of evolution it underwent in reaching its final form. One or two examples will help the reader to appreciate both his extreme conscientiousness and his method of work. Thus the lines—

Till I at last should catch a glance
Of vessels sailing off to France

become in transformation—

To where the grown-up river slips
Into the sea among the ships.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

In yet a further transformation we get this stanza :

To where the grown-up river slips
Along between the anchored ships,
And lastly between harbour walls
Into the bright Atlantic falls.

" If these lines," observes Professor Trent, " do not bear strong testimony to Stevenson's mastery of cadence, the present editor's ear is greatly at fault." Of the cadence there can be no question ; but it is the cadence of the mature artist rather than the artless lisping of a child.

Again, the lines —

I saw the river dimple by
Holding its face up to the sky—

are transmuted into the more sophisticated literary form—

I saw the dimpling river pass
And be the sky's blue looking glass—

which is pretty, but scarcely childish.

Once more. Perhaps the most familiar, most quoted lines in all *A Child's Garden of Verses* are:

The world is so full of a number of things
I'm sure we should all be as happy as kings—

a couplet which devotees claim embodies the whole philosophy of Stevenson. Possibly they are right ; but the original version ran—

The world is so great and I am so small,
I do not like it, at all, at all—

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

a sentiment less attractive philosophically, but, as students of child-nature will, I think, agree, many degrees closer to fact.¹

These are but slight examples chosen at random to illustrate Stevenson's extreme care in all he wrote. His was not the fatal fluency which flows on like a shining river to spread at last into lagoons of vague writing. In verse, oddly enough, he had infinite difficulty with his poems in the Scots dialect of which he was thought to have a perfect command. As the manuscript shows, one of the happiest of such pieces, "A Lowden Sabbath Morn," proved particularly recalcitrant. Like virtue, the delight of toil had, it seemed, to be its own reward; for of pecuniary profit there was small chance. On that point the wiseacres, who are always so exceedingly wise in their neighbour's affairs, were emphatic. Publishers, they pointed out, were not philanthropists (a fact, as might have been assumed, he had discovered for himself); and the public taste was for more piquant, "gingery" stuff than quaint rhymes relating babyish adventures in "the land of counterpane." He shrugged his shoulders, smiled, and went on, as an author so often must go on, in defiance of critical omniscience. At any rate, the contemned exercises yielded him entertainment in an existence which otherwise would be unendurable.

Davos had, indeed, one supreme advantage: Mrs. Grundy did not rule there. That "high

¹ *His Workshop* is a treasury of well-arranged facts; and it is a pity it is not available for the use of students of style. An author's manuscripts afford the best possible means for studying his methods of composition.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

alfresco kind of life " was undoubtedly dull ; but as he sang with more gusto than poetry—

There you can wear your oldest clo',
A fine set-off to what you undergo.

And not only could you wear old clo'. You could smoke, lounge, talk at your ease, and indulge in wine-parties to all Davos. " Three litres a day," Stevenson reported regretfully to his mother. Sickening and enough to make one a misanthrope, commented the moralist in him, yet all he could do was to " hate the donkey that has been duped " into such convivial extravagance.

RENEWED WANDERINGS

These things were, however, but interludes, mere breaks in a ghastly routine of disease and death. Yet another reason for dissatisfaction was the fact, daily becoming more evident, that Mrs. Stevenson could not live at Davos. Both husband and wife were " sick " of the place and longed to get off. Called on to decide, Dr. Ruedi thought his patient had so far improved in health that he might venture to try a more congenial climate. In April, therefore, the family of three left Davos for good, glad to get away, and returned to England. Stevenson spent a few days at Weybridge and then went on to Burford Bridge, under Box Hill, where he passed some inspiring hours with Meredith. The intimacy with Meredith grew steadily, with increased appreciation on both sides. The older man, already famous, if not popular, was a generous

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

but by no means indiscriminate admirer of the younger man's work ; and the younger, as well he might, was elated by praise from such a quarter. There is a stage in a young writer's career when the appreciation of an honoured elder is more than bread and wine, more than pats from reviewers and cheques from publishers. Stevenson was at that stage, and every word from Meredith was golden.

By May 20 the Stevensons were in Edinburgh ; but almost immediately Louis went on with his father to Lochearnhead, in the Rob Roy region of Balquidder. There his Highland enthusiasms revived, and he made closer studies of the Appin murder and other matters, afterwards used so effectively in *Kidnapped*. For part of June he was again at 17 Heriot Row, but so much an invalid that he went little out and saw only such old and intimate friends as Charles Baxter and Fleeming Jenkin. In the visit of the year before, as we have seen, he said farewell, a long farewell, to the haunts of his youth. One of his few and small outings during the present visit was to the house in Murrayfield, in the west end of Edinburgh, which was to be the scene of the murder described in *The Misadventures of John Nicholson*.

In his enforced seclusion he was not idle. A young artist, Trevor Hadden, impressed by his essay on Whitman, wrote to him for counsel on some points both of art and conduct. Stevenson responded effusively. With a touch of worldly wisdom almost worthy of Chesterfield, he warned his correspondent against the folly of creating difficulties and the peril of shouldering responsibilities too readily. A young man should not hasten to

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

take up burdens which he might find himself too weak to carry. If his correspondent could keep sexual desires in order, it would make for peace and happiness. But he adds the suggestive caution, "Whatever you do, see that you don't sacrifice a woman. That's where imperfect love conducts us." Chastity, he observes, was a virtue to cultivate, but "hardship to a poor harlot is a sin lower than the ugliest unchastity." He distrusted the man "who has no open faults"—again a significant remark. On the side of art he urged his correspondent to "think last of what pays; first of what pleases"—a counsel which he did not always follow in practice. A year later he advised Mr. Haddon to keep clear of realism, and to bow his head over technique. "Think of technique when you rise and when you go to bed. Forget purposes in the meantime: get to love technique"—counsels which both in art and conduct bear the impress of personal experience.

For summer quarters Thomas Stevenson rented Stobo Manse, a quiet spot in Peeblesshire, and thither the whole family went on holiday. But once again the weather did its worst for Stevenson. In sunshine the place is delightful; in the rains of July 1882 he described it as "low, damp, and *mauchy*," the worst place, in fact, to which a sufferer from lung disease could go. He told Henley he was "not worth an old damn," though, as usual, he did his utmost to work. As to health, a fortnight at Stobo undid all that Davos had done; and while he had strength for the journey he hastened off to London for re-examination by Sir Andrew Clark. Allowed to return to Scotland, he went north with Mr. Colvin, in advance of his

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

family, once more and for the last time, to try the Highland air, the place selected being Kingussie. That delightful retreat was not then, what it has since become, a resort of idle fashion, with garish hotels, gaudy, flower-potted villas, boarding-houses, golf-links, all the disturbing appurtenances, in fact, of elaborately-devised pleasure. At the time of Stevenson's visit it drowsed peacefully among its hills, sheltering a simple, primitive, hospitable people such as always appealed to him. For once, too, in his experience the weather was brilliantly fine.

When a Highland summer puts on its full glory, it exercises a species of enchantment that is almost intoxication. No other has quite its radiance and fragrance, its balm and healing breezes. For a week or two Stevenson breathed the air of Elysium. Among the scented, sun-flooded heather, beside the golden burn which he celebrates as a thing of bewitching joy and beauty, he wandered, loafed, dreamed, planned, inhaled the elixir of the hills. Yet health did not return, though his spirits rose at times to spasmodic bursts of hilarity. The poor worn body seemed to have lost its old power of response, its old resilience, and the mind was fagged to utter exhaustion. Yet by the strange law of contraries, familiar enough to the creative writer, he produced there the first draft of one of his sprightliest, most entertaining stories, *The Treasure of Franchard*. He arranged, too, a meeting with Cluny MacPherson, and was joyously anticipating a discussion on Highland history and tradition with the heir of a long line of chieftains and the repository of vast treasures of Celtic lore. But suddenly the weather broke

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

and a serious hæmorrhage warned him to be off.

He went straight to London, once more to consult Sir Andrew Clark. Scotland was now forbidden on penalty of death ; but since there were grave objections to Davos, the medical verdict was that some spot in southern France might be chosen. There followed a time of turmoil, trial, and anxiety. Ill and feeble as he was, Stevenson had to start at once in search of a new home among foreigners and strangers. His wife being also ill and unable to accompany him, he turned to his cousin Bob Stevenson for aid ; and the two went first to Paris and then on to Montpellier, where Stevenson had a recurrence of hæmorrhage. Bob was obliged to return ; and, recovered somewhat, Louis went on alone, drearily enough, one imagines, to Marseilles, where in the second week in October his wife was able to join him.

BRIEF ANCHORAGE

Both were beggared in health, but needs must when the devil drives. Not that either of them was in the least disposed to fold the hands dismally and say, "Kismet." The word was not in their vocabulary. A home had to be secured ; and, after a strenuous search of three days, they found a house that seemed in all respects to be what they sought. Campagne Defli, as it was rather grandiloquently called, was situated at St. Marcel, five miles from Marseilles, in a sheltered nook among heights, part woods, part white cliffs, and presented the advantages of a country cottage within

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

easy reach of a bustling seaport city. The rent was four pounds per month. Stevenson himself was charmed. Here, in his tossing, drifting course, was pleasant anchorage, and he looked forward to a long if not a permanent residence in the place. He was unspeakably weary of flitting to and fro, a fugitive ever fleeing for his life. It was clear he dared not face the inclemencies of his native land. Since, therefore, he must be an exile, here was a little Eden of refuge from storms and uncertainties. The "tragic folly" of his summers, he declared, was at an end. He was "sick of relapsing," sick, it may be assumed, of passing, a mere interesting "case," from doctor to doctor, each kindly and assiduous, but, alas! each mostly futile. Above all things on earth he desired to get well, to escape from the sofa, the sick-room, and the medicine-bottle. Here in a garden aglow with flowers, breathing the incense of hill and woodland, he would rest and recover himself. The thought was inspiring and exhilarating.

The Campagne Deffi was in a state of dilapidation; but to the Bohemian instinct that was an added charm. With the practical energy which always distinguished her, Mrs. Stevenson undertook the work of renovation and decoration. She too was delighted, and delight made the tide of life run high again. Turning herself into a maid-of-all-work, she cleaned, scrubbed, papered walls, polished and covered furniture, shut off draughts, hung curtains, and laid an efficient hand on the tangled, neglected garden. It was the task of beautifying the Castiloga shanty over again, only with a feeling of permanency and far greater possibilities of achievement. The fury of her

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

activity and her ignorance of their language amazed and amused the charwomen and others who helped her. But she was emphatically of those who get things done, and Campagne Defli speedily took on a look of home and comfort.

To her keen disappointment and his, however, Stevenson did not regain his health ; on the contrary, he grew steadily worse. He did not write ; he could not read. Even the mild recreations of Patience and wood-engraving had to be given up. It was feared he must resign himself to the inevitable and return to the bleak snowfields of Davos. Repeated hæmorrhages and two spells of insensibility in one day brought anxiety and terror. To complete the crisis, there came a discovery of another kind. The delightful Campagne Defli was found to be uninhabitable. The trouble began with fleas and ended with drains, sanitation not being one of the advanced sciences in France. To aggravate the situation, fever broke out in Saint Marcel ; and once again Stevenson fled for his life—this time to Nice. A tragi-comic game of hide-and-seek followed. He was to telegraph to his wife by the way and on arrival. Four days she waited in vain for tidings ; then, unable to bear the suspense any longer, she set out in search of him. Some of the kind people, who are always interested in the misfortunes of others, assured her she need not trouble, that beyond doubt her husband was dead and buried—dead of a sudden hæmorrhage and hurriedly buried, as a stranger and pauper, in an unknown grave somewhere by the wayside. The aid of the police was invoked, and ultimately the lost man was found at the Grand Hotel, Nice, “ sitting up

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

calmly reading in bed," and amused but scarcely displeased to find himself the object of a sensational hue and cry. The explanation was simple: telegrams and letters had miscarried.

Obliged to return, his wife left him at Nice, with explicit instructions not to venture back to Saint Marcel. On the homeward journey, as she described it in a racy letter to Symonds, "a dreadful old man with a fat wife"—an Englishman, as appears—getting into conversation with her and learning something of her mission, asked pleasantly where Stevenson wished to be buried? "He is done for," was the cheering judgment of this Job's comforter, and would be put underground with little ceremony by a callous population almost before the breath was well out of his body. He inquired compassionately what she meant to do, and suggested, if she could afford it, to have the unfortunate Stevenson embalmed. Such at times are the inscrutable ways of Samaritans.

Despite all cautions and orders, Stevenson returned to Saint Marcel, only to have the decision confirmed that Campagne Defli was impossible. He passed Christmas there, however, and did what he could to help his wife in preparation for yet another flitting. Early in January, 1883, he was again at Nice; but he and his wife were soon back at Marseilles, temporarily quartered at the Hôtel du Petit Louvre, on the trying business of finding a new home. By February, after some comic skirmishing, in which there were threats of legal proceedings on both sides, they were rid of the Saint Marcel failure, or, as Stevenson playfully announced, were "safely delivered of a Campagne." Of his skill and address in getting off without

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

paying compensation to his landlady he was gleefully proud. Chance led the new search to Hyères, where for a week or two the couple put up at the Hôtel des Îles d'Or.

A SECOND DEMI-PARADISE

The beginning of March found Stevenson back at Nice, whence he sent Henley a batch of verses for *A Child's Garden*. Within a week he returned to Hyères. There, thanks to the energy and initiative of his wife, a new home was found, La Solitude, which had all the promise of another Eden. In those swift, erratic flights hither and thither his health actually improved, with a corresponding rise in spirits and in hope.

On March 20, La Solitude was taken over, both husband and wife being once more in high heart. Stevenson in particular was enchanted. To his mother he described the chalet soberly as "an excellent place, but very, very little." It consisted, in fact, of seven diminutive rooms—three, including the kitchen, on the ground floor and four above. To others he broke into lyrical ecstasy over the new acquisition. He now lived, he told Mr. Will H. Low, "in a most sweet corner of the universe" with a "sub-celestial" view of hill and plain and sea, plus most "aromatic airs." By day the garden, with its roses, aloes, fig-marigolds, and olives was a demi-paradise. By moonlight it was pure enchantment. "Angels, I know, frequent it; and it thrills all night long with the flutes of silence," interrupted at intervals by the song

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

of nightingales. A cynical reader, distrustful of beatific raptures and poetic rhapsodies, might inquire whether he lay awake all night listening to the flutes of silence or merely dreamed of their mystic vibrations. But the indubitable fact is he was charmed.

Moreover, there were external circumstances to cheer and inspirit. In the February number of the *Century Magazine* appeared a lavishly-eulogistic review of *The New Arabian Nights*. The book was published in August of the preceding year; in November it reached a second edition, and in January 1883 he was able to inform Charles Baxter from Nice, in gleeful broad Scots, that "Stevison's last book's in the third edeetion" and was in process of translation "like the psalms o' David nae less, for the Frenchies and German folk in twa volumes." Nor was that all. *Familiar Studies* had been published in March, and on the whole had been well received. Some half-dozen stories and articles had also appeared during the previous twelve months in the *Cornhill*, comprising "Talk and Talkers," in two parts; "The Merry Men," likewise in two parts; and "The Foreigner at Home." In addition he contributed "By-ways of Book Illustration" to the *Magazine of Art*, under the editorship of Henley. These things gave a fresh impetus and helped to keep his health steadily on the upward curve. With the appearance of the second part of "The Merry Men" in the *Cornhill* his connection with the magazine ceased. Leslie Stephen resigned the editorship and was succeeded by James Payn, the novelist, who chose his own contributors.

There is a delectable tradition, which has been most assiduously circulated, that, once admitted to

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

the circle of his friends, no one was ever proof against the ineffable, all-conquering charm of Stevenson. It is a pity to destroy the pretty fable, but it does not accord with fact. That in certain conditions and upon certain people Stevenson exercised a remarkable charm is fairly attested in these pages. But it was not always equally potent. Sometimes it failed to captivate ; sometimes it even repelled and antagonised ; and one of those with whom it failed most signally was Leslie Stephen. To the young writer fighting for a position he rendered incalculable service ; yet, strange as it may appear, while heartily aiding he also heartily disliked his contributor. That he suppressed his antipathy in the interest of letters and a desire to help a struggling author is a rare tribute to his fairness and generosity. That a man, active and generous as a patron, should feel antipathetic towards his own protégé is a curious, but by no means an unfamiliar, paradox in psychology. It will easily be understood that the airy levities and sparkling audacities of Stevenson, his Gascon egoism and *outré* tastes would not fascinate the older man, who belonged to a totally different school, both by training and by temperament. At any rate, his judgment on Stevenson as he saw and knew him was a good deal on " this side of idolatry." Nor was he in the least blind to the defects and limitations of the writer he did so much to guide and make known. In his heart there was no real admiration for much bearing the initials " R. L. S." that he passed for press. Later, of Stevenson the novelist he wrote in terms of critical severity ; but to that subject we shall return.

In prose Stevenson produced comparatively

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

little at Hyères ; but he enjoyed a burst of poetic activity, the most fruitful, probably, of his whole life. Many of the best pieces in *Underwoods* and *A Child's Garden of Verses* were written in La Solitude. An odd reason for his idleness in fiction is that his health was better than it had been for years and that he was lazy. It has been observed by Henry James and others, quite correctly, that he wrote best and most when he was ill in bed, because he was rarely too ill to write and was free from interruptions. The charm of La Solitude preoccupied him. Of the sweet content, the domestic felicities of that time he sang cheerfully—

My wife and I in one romantic cot,
The world forgetting, by the world forgot,
High as the gods upon Olympus dwell.
Pleased with what things we have and pleased as well
To wait in hope for those which we have not.¹

The poem celebrates their happiness, their dreams, their ambitions. *She* plumped for a house and a garden ; *he* staked his " votive powers " on a yacht and a well-filled cellar for the entertainment of his friends. The piece breathes a spirit of content and repose such as Stevenson rarely enjoyed, either before or after.

In May and June 1883 " The Treasure of Franchard," drafted at Kingussie and finished at Davos, appeared in *Longman's Magazine*, for which Andrew Lang acted as " literary adviser." The same magazine, in its July and August numbers, printed in abbreviated form " Across the Plains," written four years earlier, and in May also Henley printed the sketch of San Francisco, " A Modern

¹ Poems published by the Bibliophile Society, Boston.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Cosmopolis," in the *Magazine of Art*. But Stevenson's chief work was *The Black Arrow*, which ran serially in *Young Folks* from June to October and purported to be by Captain George North. Unlike *Treasure Island*, it was a conspicuous success with boy readers, probably, as Mr. Charles E. Pearce remarks, because the author had in the meantime learned more of the craft of the serialist. Though thus successful, however, the tale was not published in book form until five years later, a fact which may be ascribed to the doubts or the lukewarmness of publishers.

In the same months the editor of the *Century Magazine* asked Stevenson for a story; and as an experiment "The Silverado Squatters" was sent, with little expectation that it would be accepted. The fear of rejection was happily not realised, and somewhat curtailed in form, the work appeared in the issues of that magazine for November and December—with doubtful appreciation by readers. Throughout the year, too, he laboured intermittently at *Prince Otto*, a story which gave him immense trouble, and with greater success at *A Child's Garden of Verses*, or *Penny Whistles*, as it was still called.

A LANDMARK

December was to prove a landmark in Stevenson's career; for early that month *Treasure Island* was published by Messrs. Cassell & Co. The transaction was carried through by Henley, who acted as "man of business" for his friend, "an admirable arrangement for me," Stevenson owned

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

gratefully, "and one that rather more than doubled my income on the spot." The terms offered fairly dazzled him. "A hundred pounds all alive, O!" was his jubilant mode of announcing his good fortune to 17 Heriot Row. "A hundred jingling, tingling, gold minted quid." It was wonderful; it was almost incredible. Yet in the very midst of his jubilation he was forced to observe pathetically, "It is dreadful to be a great big man and not be able to buy bread." Somehow the success appeared but to emphasise the many failures that went before.

With *Treasure Island* Stevenson got his first unmistakable taste of popularity. His essays, his short stories, his charming little sermons and pietistic musings, had pleased both the esoteric, self-elected arbiters of taste and the honest moralists who loved to find their favourite platitudes dressed up in pretty, persuasive phrases. Here was something wholly different, an appeal, in fact, made, as Stevenson indicates, in spite of "the wiseacres," to the vulgar crowd, the big, romping public that cares nothing for cliques and coteries, or thinks of them only to despise. The delightful philosopher, the beautiful moralist who had enchanted so many hearts, was deviating, descending, as it seemed, into the questionable paths of the mere storyteller. And the vulgar, romping crowd, with its crude tastes, received him with shoutings of joy. Not all his admirers were gratified.

Published in the usual way for the Christmas season as a book for juveniles, *Treasure Island*, by one of the freaks of irony not infrequent in literature, found its most ardent admirers among experienced, sober-minded men of the world. The story

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

of Gladstone's delight in the tale is familiar. That amazing being, who concentrated in himself the energies, the ardours, the enthusiasms of a score, was an assiduous reader of current fiction. By chance *Treasure Island* fell into his hands; he opened it, began to read, and, though harassed by Party intrigues and State complications, fastened on it with youthful zest, sitting up "till two in the morning to finish it." I cannot discover that he sent the author one of his famous complimentary post-cards, of which I possess several. But James Payn, the new editor of the *Cornhill*, sent one of his almost indecipherable scrawls in warm congratulation; and Andrew Lang placed the book next to *Tom Sawyer* and the *Odyssey* for unmingled bliss. Henley too was helpful, as usual, and the Press in general behaved handsomely. The *Saturday Review*, which had hitherto rather pointedly ignored Stevenson, was not only polite but enthusiastic, declaring that the story was the best of its kind published in England since *Robinson Crusoe*. Other influential papers singled it out as a tale of rousing interest. Even the *Athenæum*, then a literary oracle of power, was moved to something almost bordering on enthusiasm.

There were, of course, dissentients. The *Spectator* was not captivated, and a few others were either captious or "damned with faint praise." But their voices were scarcely heard in the general chorus of applause. Despite the ardour of the reception, however, sales were at first slow, only some five thousand copies being sold within a year of publication. Since then, and especially since Stevenson's death, the book has gone through edition after edition with a rapidity which must

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

long ago have made it a most profitable commercial venture for the publishers. To-day it stands as the most popular of all its author's works, and one of the most popular books of its time. One effect was a demand for his earlier books, the copyrights of which were bought back by his father and the works themselves transferred to Messrs. Chatto & Windus.

Thus in regard to work and reputation the year 1883 passed. In the clear, soft, medicinal air of Hyères, Stevenson's health showed a steady improvement, and for the most part his spirits were good. Writing years afterwards from Samoa, he declared that he had been happy just once in his life, and that was at Hyères; but in saying so he must have forgotten the "golden age" at Colinton Manse. Externally the current of existence flowed with unaccustomed smoothness. La Solitude, with its flowers, its nightingales, and its picturesque views, was like a paradise of dreams.

For part of July and August, Stevenson and his wife were at Royat, in Auvergne, where his parents joined them. The visit was wholly pleasant, save for one thing which Stevenson noted with concern—the too obvious failure of his father's health, physical and mental. The long, tense strain of worry and anxiety told heavily on Thomas Stevenson. In his honest, strenuous, rather arid way he was, or had been, an idealist. The light-houses he built, the dogmas he held, the martinet rules he made for himself and for others, had all a moral aim; and morality to him was a thing of profound seriousness, even of gloom.

He never discerned, what his son divined instinctively, that in the game of life gaiety may be an

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

effective buffer against the shocks of brutal fact, and that the light swim where the heavy sink. Trials with him were trials, not casual experiences to be dismissed with a laugh and forgotten. Louis had caused him unspeakable concern and vexation ; and though the breach was now happily closed, the effect remained. His emotional violence, his proneness to brood, his fits of melancholy, and, it must be added, his agonies of distress and shame, had left their mark. In the heyday of his strength he was apt to be intolerant, arbitrary, despotic. In the reaction the granite character melted, and he softened to an almost childish gentleness and docility. Though he had little enough cause for self-reproach, his behaviour suggested a touch of remorse, as if he felt that in certain crises he had been neither so wise nor so just as he might have been. Moreover, in a manner vague perhaps and ill-defined, yet intensely real, he was, as it were, forced to be proud of his son. What everybody said must be true. Louis must be clever, exceedingly clever, perhaps even great, and—who knew ?—perhaps a not unworthy successor to the illustrious Sir Walter himself ; and literature was not the poor, despised thing he, Thomas Stevenson, had thought it. He had been blind and unkind. And now, in spite of all ill-predictions, Louis was making good, justifying his choice of a calling, and he, Louis's father, had done his utmost to thwart and hinder him. Yes, assuredly he had been both blind and unkind. In the feeling which such thoughts bred, follies, disobedience, defiance, were forgotten—or forgiven ; and now, as if pathetically trying to make amends, he hung about his son, fearful lest any mishap should befall him, fearful even to let him

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

out of his sight. The strong man had dwindled into a nervous, doting nurse.

On his part Louis was touched to pity and regret. In his philosophy there was no room for remorse, which was an idle waste of sentiment. But he was far too clear-sighted, far too well versed in human nature, not to perceive and understand the primary causes of his father's sad decline. Something very like contrition possessed him. His father's well-being, his father's affection and opinions, tastes and prejudices, all became precious. In that subdued mood of tenderness he took leave of his parents and returned with his wife to Hyères.

That was in the beginning of September. Before the month was out news reached him of the death of his early friend, James Walter Ferrier, an event which plunged him into an abyss of emotionalism. The two had been chums in youth, co-editors of the *University Magazine*, co-members of the "Spec," and in other ways had enjoyed and shared a hundred intimacies. Stevenson mourned him as David mourned Jonathan. "I am distressed for thee, my brother Jonathan," the wail rings through letter after letter written by Stevenson just then, and finds final expression in the sketch *Old Mortality*, one of the most fervid and touching of his minor works.

That Ferrier possessed in an eminent degree the gift of inspiring affection is beyond doubt. He began life with heaped-up advantages—an environment of ease and culture, physical beauty, charm of manner and of character, talent, high hopes of intellectual distinction. Fortune seemed to have singled him out for all her choicest favours—and

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

lo ! he foundered miserably in mid-voyage, the victim of his own follies. Stevenson was strangely affected. The past with all its poignant memories swept back upon him. Edinburgh—not the Edinburgh of reality, harsh, hostile, censorious, and repugnant, but Edinburgh transfigured by sentimental imagination—held him as by a spell. And in the midst, radiant, admired, beloved, was James Walter Ferrier. Stevenson could scarcely find words for his emotion. But his extreme sensibility is not wholly, nor perhaps mainly, to be set down to the ostensible cause of his grief.

The mechanism of the human mind is most delicately, most subtly complicated ; and human sentiments and emotions are not always explicable by their surface manifestations. The truth is that Stevenson was undergoing a slow but momentous evolution, an almost insensible progress from one phase of thought and feeling to another entirely different and in some respects contradictory. And in the process he was making discoveries. In particular he was realising, with all the force of unequivocal fact, that levity and “schoolboy blasphemy” do not solve the everlasting problems of time and eternity, that, in truth, they are a species of boomerang which recoils disastrously on the thrower. His father’s condition and its causes brought many reflections, some with a rankling sting. Ferrier’s death, at a moment of peculiar sensitiveness, freed the springs of emotion and gave them a plausible excuse to flow.

True to himself, his motto continued to be what it had been as expressed to Henley earlier in the year, “*Sursum corda* ; heave ahead.” The heaving ahead was slow and difficult. Finances were still

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

embarrassingly "tight," and would have failed but for constant aid from his father. The power of work, too, was distressingly low. But "The Silverado Squatters" brought timely grist to the mill, and the hundred golden minted quid were due for *Treasure Island*. Moreover, *A Child's Garden of Verses* was struggling into proof, and one or two articles were written for Henley, notably the very decisive pronouncement on Realism. Just then the subject was much and deeply in his thoughts. For he was getting away from his French models, at any rate from the French naturalists. The once-admired masters were not, after all, the acme of excellence and wisdom he had once thought them; indeed, he made the discovery that their theories, as illustrated in practice, were death to real art. Flaubert was good, Daudet was good, but infinitely better was the "glorious old pagan" of *The Three Musketeers*, and best of all was the careless, galloping, affluent romantic who gave the world *Rob Roy*.

SHEDDING OLD INFLUENCES

Of the great Russian realists he knew little, although then and for years afterwards W. D. Howells, the American high-priest of naturalism, persistently held them up as models of supreme excellence, with a corresponding contempt for the little romantics of Britain and their childish love of fairy-stories. Stevenson read Dostoevski's lurid piece of realism, *Crime and Punishment*, and was moved to a wild enthusiasm of admiration. "Dostoevski is a devil of a swell, to be sure," was

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

his verdict. But that was a passing phase and did nothing to reconcile him to the French naturalists. To their graces of style, their mastery of technique, he then and always paid glowing tribute ; but he thought them lacking in gaiety, the gaiety with which the genius of Renan invested even the unpromising, abstract subject of theology. Moreover, he must have felt they were somewhat deficient in imagination, and because they were deficient he attributed their deficiency to sheer perversity of method. A trip to Russia would have enlightened him. Tourgenief and Tolstoi would have shown him how true realism and true imagination coexist and unite in producing great works of art. And Tchehov, though ten years his junior, would have set his feet in the path of freedom for the artist—that freedom, in fact, for which he was rather blindly groping. He had still to learn, what seems an elementary fact in creative art, that the great novelist, like the great dramatist, is essentially impersonal, and must not, on penalty of disaster, obstruct or embarrass himself with theories.

That way lies failure. For the moment he begins to indulge himself, with critical theories or so-called canons of art he impedes the free exercise of creative energy, because, consciously or unconsciously, he becomes the slave of his own arbitrary rules. One cannot imagine Shakespeare theorising on how to write a play or Scott on how to tell a story. Each was guided by an instinct, an impulse deeper, more potent, than any theory of criticism. In reality the critic must go to the creative writer for his little set of rules. Aristotle, the father of criticism, did no more than deduce and systemise the

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

principles and practice of the Greek poets who happened to precede him. The creator must always and inevitably be the true teacher of the critic. Rules, arbitrarily made in ignorance or defiance of its own mysterious workings, are the last things that imagination obeys, and the forced obedience is given, not by a willing servant, but by a rebel.

In his articles of faith Stevenson's "Note on Realism" deserves particular attention, because in some eclectic quarters it has been received as a sort of divinely-inspired gospel, or at least a triumphant vindication of his own performances. As a statement of personal taste and belief it is interesting; as an exposition of the vital principle of creative or imaginative literature it not only reveals sharp limitations, but a fundamental misconception of the scope and function of the novel. Not till the end of his career was Stevenson able to attain the untrammelled freedom from theory and prepossession which great imaginations enjoy from birth. *Weir of Hermiston*, notable for many things, is notable in particular for this, that it marks the real point of artistic emancipation for its author, the point, that is to say, at which, happily forgetting his own critical dogmas, he blended realism and romance in what, broken as it is, remains his masterpiece.

While occupied with these theories of his art at Hyères, he planned and partly wrote a story called "The Travelling Companion," which a discerning publisher is reported to have described as "a work of genius, but indecent"; and two years later at Bournemouth was discovered by its author to be "a gross, bitter, ugly daub," and as such went the way of other abortive attempts.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

In November came a sharp little brush with Henley, one of several brushes which ultimately produced open rupture. Henley, eruptive and volcanic, was apt to express himself strongly in moments of irritation, and with his "dear lad" was always frank. Stevenson, keeping his temper on that occasion, pleaded for patience, for charity, for peace. "Let us," he wrote, "a little imitate the Divine patience and the Divine sense of humour, and smilingly tolerate those faults and virtues that have so brief a period and so intertwined a being." For a moment the tiff caused an electric tingle of the atmosphere; but it passed, leaving an unclouded sky.

The closing year left Stevenson with a grateful feeling of success. On the 1st of January he reported himself to 17 Heriot Row as debt-free, with an actual balance of fifty pounds in hand. Moreover, some two hundred and fifty pounds were due and would be paid in the course of a few weeks. For twelve months his earnings, as he reckoned, amounted to £465 *os.* 6*d.*, a niceness of calculation that reminds one of Mr. Mantalini. "Should I not be grateful?" he exclaimed joyfully. "Come, let us sing unto the Lord."

HEROISM IN CALAMITY

With the new year Henley and Charles Baxter were at La Solitude. It was the jolly trio of old Edinburgh days over again. "Willie brewed a peck o' maut, and Rab and Allen cam' to pree." The three blithe lads of Burns's little masterpiece of conviviality were scarcely blither than the festive three who met at Hyères. The tiny La Solitude

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

being too small for their proper entertainment, Stevenson went off with his wife and guests to Nice, an adventure which all but cost him his life. Taking foolhardy risks, carried away, perhaps, by the spirit of jollity, he caught cold. The complaint seemed slight, and his friends, having to return home, left him. They had scarcely gone when he was in the grip of pneumonia, complicated by congestion of the kidneys. At once it became clear that his life was in imminent peril. A local doctor, indeed, took Mrs. Stevenson aside and told her that her husband was dying and could not even be kept alive till some of his own people from Edinburgh might reach his bedside. Reporting her anguish to her mother-in-law, she wrote : " I watched every breath he drew all night, in what sickening apprehension you may guess." Fortunately another doctor, a Scot named Drummond, was called in, and gave the cheering assurance that Louis might not only recover, but with care might live to be seventy, only he " must stop the running about." Alas ! the running about had not properly begun ; and the Psalmist's threescore-and-ten proved an impossible ideal. But the good Drummond's optimism was the best of medicines. Bob Stevenson too came, vital, inspiring, and practically helpful. When the crisis was past Stevenson told his mother it was " chuck-farthing " for his life.

Once more he made an amazing recovery, and at the end of a month was able to return to La Solitude, though as a mere breathing spectre. And as troubles never come singly, yet other calamities awaited him. He was attacked by a species of ophthalmia, medically attributed to contagion from street-dust, by rheumatism, and by

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

sciatica. The lung condition, too, was such that, as a precautionary measure, his right arm was put into a sling, sometimes even fastened to his side, and, harder penalty still, he was forbidden to speak. In this condition he was almost helpless. He could not amuse himself with Patience or chess; he durst not talk, and reading was impossible. So, unhappily, was sleep, except under the influence of opiates. Altogether it was a time of acute misery, and there was the ugly conviction, at any rate on Mrs. Stevenson's part, that the combination of calamities was primarily due to that too festive visit to Nice.

Adversity, it has been said, is the true test of manhood. In that dire crisis there shines out radiantly the invincible Stevenson, the brave man fighting gallantly and cheerfully with his back to the wall. The British race has never been lacking in valour. In ten thousand glorious adventures by sea and land, in ten thousand emergencies and forlorn hopes, it has shown an undaunted heart. But in all its shining records there are few more admirable, more inspiring examples of real heroism than the bearing of that intrepid spirit in the darkness and distress at Hyères. To all generous breasts the thought of his fortitude, his happy valiance, will bring a thrill of admiration, mingled with sympathy and affection. In that maelstrom of misfortune most strong men would have gone down; he smiled and survived.

As he regained some measure of strength, and was allowed to talk in whispers, he joined his wife in the childish game of improvising stories, which she wrote down and were afterwards used as the basis of *The Dynamiter*. And while she attended

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

to household duties and he lay alone in his darkened room, he wrote verses for *A Child's Garden* in a large scrawl with his left hand, the use of his right being still denied him. When readers are charmed by the quaint grace and cheered by the sunny philosophy of that little book, they might well pause a moment to consider the circumstances in which some of its most attractive, most characteristic pieces were composed. To that time of trial, too, belongs the final version of the best-known of all his poems, the much-quoted, much-sung "Requiem," first drafted in the dark days in California. It suggests grave thoughts, but they are still brave thoughts.

But because he was brave in face of death, it is nonsense to suppose, as has been supposed and asserted, that Stevenson did not feel "the slings and arrows of outrageous fortune." To picture him as perpetually encased in an armour of gay indifference, impervious to the blows of Fate and human feeling, is to make him out either a fiend or a demigod ; and he was neither. He loved the warmth and colour of life, but he knew dejection and shrank from the cold breath of the ancient enemy. In a letter to Henley written then he refers suggestively to "the creak of Charon's rowlocks, and the miasmas of the Styx." But by an effort of will, and largely for the sake of others, he made a jest of despondency. He had to comfort and sustain his wife in her racking anxiety ; he had to conceal his real condition from his father, who must be protected from shocks ; above all, he had to be true to himself. Whatever happened, whatever ills Fate might bring, he would not sink into the querulous, whimpering invalid, full of abject,

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

impotent complainings. And there was yet another reason for maintaining a semblance of blitheness. Miss Ferrier, Walter's sister, was on a prolonged visit to La Solitude. To cheer her in her grief he must preserve something of the spirit of the old Edinburgh days ; and despite physical prostration he did.

When able to read a little, he took up the *Confessions of St. Augustine*, and, as might be expected, was enchanted by one of the most human books ever written ; especially was he impressed by the saint's descriptions of the delirious headlong passions of youth and the tragedies they so often involve. Lust alone, he commented significantly, "is but a pigmy" which never attacks single-handed, but must, so to speak, have confederates. By way of contrast he included *Petronius Arbiter*, which he found less immoral than some much-esteemed modern works, but "singularly silly." The fortune of a jest, we know, lies in the ear of him who hears. It was not Stevenson's good fortune to read *Quo Vadis* and learn from it what a writer of genius could make of the author of *The Feast of Trimalchio* ; but if he read that little masterpiece of Roman comedy except with sheer delight, one can only surmise that his faculties, and especially his sense of humour, were asleep. Tacitus also he tried, but found the most condensed and pungent of Roman historians too stiff for his invalid mind, even with the aid of a French crib. For variety's sake he threw in "the incredible Barbey d'Aureville," whom, with all his "rot," his crowding absurdities of sense and sentiment, he preferred to "the whole Modern School of France." The Modern School of France, as we have seen,

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

was fast losing its power of attraction. Had he at last discovered that technique alone does not suffice for great literature, and that the immortals are usually distinguished by a free and careless affluence, rather than by any finicky devotion to the mechanics of style? At any rate, the French influences were very decidedly on the wane.

With such mild recreations he returned slowly to the habits of normal life. Winter passed into spring; spring was advancing to summer, and, despite frequent slippings backward, he was making real progress. May came, with its flowers and its perfumes, to tempt him out-of-doors; the nightingales sang, the mystic "flutes of silence" vibrated in his soul. He looked from the prison of La Solitude counting the hours till he should be free. And then suddenly, when hope was once more running high, fresh and shattering disaster came, disaster which this time seemed fatal. In the still midnight, when all was composed, and without a moment's warning, it fell—first a sharp convulsive cough, then instantly a choking deluge of blood. His wife, hearing a noise, rushed in terror-stricken from another room. He could not speak; but to comfort her, as she afterwards related, he signed for a pencil and paper and wrote, "Don't be frightened. If this is death it is quite easy." Then, to prove his composure, he took the medicine-bottle from her hand, measured himself a dose and swallowed it. According to her account, he showed no fear and was not at all flustered. If this was the end, well! it was the end, that was all. Like his own Will o' the Mill he had looked into the face of Death and found him not unfriendly. It was in fact, "Hail, old friend; if it must be, I am ready."

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

The bleeding was stopped, but to experienced eyes it did not seem that the patient could recover. Learning of his condition, a local clergyman hastened to La Solitude to pray with the dying man. He was not admitted. But later, when Stevenson was told of the visit, he remarked whimsically, "Tell him to come when I am better, and I will pray for a clergyman in danger of living."

Alarmed by the news of this latest and worst of all his attacks, Henley and Baxter immediately sent a doctor from London, and his mission was so far successful that once again Stevenson was snatched back literally from the brink of the grave. At best, it was indicated, the treatment could only be one of "patching up." In his own phrase, "the tabernacle was in rags," and the problem was how to prolong its tottering existence. And the conditions of reprieve were especially trying to a restless spirit—no walking, little talking, spare eating and drinking, no excitement even of a pleasurable kind, nothing but a somnolent, vegetable existence. Yet he accepted his doom with quite unusual docility. If condemned to live the life of "an invalid girl," to abstain from all the activities and pleasures of a man, well, it was better to be alive than dead. And there was always the gambler's chance that in its inscrutable spinning the wheel of fortune might bring up trumps. In that mood of subdued hope or hidden despair he resigned himself to the dreary experience of being nursed.

But misfortune was not yet done with him. In ancient Greece they would have said he was expiating some atrocious crime, personal or ancestral, and that the Erynnēs were determined he should not escape till their vengeance was glutted. While he

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

was patiently struggling back to health, or such measure of health as seemed possible, calamity came in a new form. Cholera broke out among the rose-farms at Toulon, a few miles away, and quickly spread to Hyères. It seemed the last stroke of a malicious fate. Little wonder that, with all his courage, his nerve, his buoyancy, Stevenson momentarily lost heart. What was the use of prolonging a losing fight? To do so were only to invite fresh disaster. Better lie quietly at rest under the cheerful epitaph so lately composed.

There was still the resource of flight ; but he had not energy enough to flee from an enemy that was in the very air he breathed. Yes ! better give up and be done with relapses. Then, as at a bugle-call, there flashed from the gloom the old spirit of defiance. One more fight, one stout sally of the beleaguered body. It was worth trying. With immense effort and many precautions, assisted by his wife, Miss Ferrier, and a valet "got cheap—second-hand," he managed to get away to Royat. There for a month or so he rested at the Hôtel Chabassière, while trying to decide how to repiece his broken life. The weather, as he reported to his mother, was demoniac, and he spent most of his time in bed. Yet even then he sent off more verses for *A Child's Garden*, though he confessed to Mr. Colvin he was "very dim, dumb, dowie, and damnable." He hated to be silenced ; but declared characteristically he was not unhappy, only blurred into "a heavy, dull, somnolent superannuated son of a bedpost."

The question "What next ?" was urgent. Again he had thoughts of Davos ; but the prospect of isolation, disease, and eternal snowfields was too

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

dreary. Besides, his wife could not live there, and he wished to hear from the medical oracles in London what his chances really were. The truth is that, with all his brightness and buoyancy, he was homesick, yearning to get back to her who had so often and so effectually comforted him, "Like one whom his mother comforteth." The craving for that dear sympathy and tenderness, which the troubles and perplexities of life bring to the strong man no less than to the weak, was upon Stevenson. Accordingly he wrote to 17 Heriot Row that, as a desperate venture or forlorn hope, he was returning to England.

CHAPTER II

THE RETURN TO BRITAIN

ON the 1st of July, 1884, Stevenson once more set foot in Britain. His first business was to consult the eminent physician, Sir Andrew Clark. There was, in fact, a general consultation of specialists, who agreed, somewhat doubtfully, that with extreme care he might be able to pass a summer in the British Isles. Scotland was considered too rigorous, but some warm, sheltered spot in the south or west of England might be tried, more or less experimentally. Had Stevenson followed his own inclinations then, he would unquestionably have gone off in search of the tropic climes which alone seemed to offer some prospect of regained health, and had, moreover, been his romantic dream since boyhood. He was sick, body and soul, of relapses, of weather that was nearly always bad and consequently was poison to him. But various reasons, personal and financial, affected his decision. One especial reason was his wish to be near his father, who, all too manifestly, had not long to live. As we have seen, Thomas Stevenson knew nothing of the serious condition of his son, and, it was felt, could not bear the shock of Louis's exile. Chiefly for his father's sake, therefore, Stevenson decided to remain, if that were at all possible,

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

somewhere in Britain within tolerably easy reach of Edinburgh.

With his wife he spent ten days in a private hotel or boarding-house at Richmond ; but that lovely suburb of London was found unsuitable, and the two went on to Bournemouth, where Mrs. Stevenson's son was at school. Bournemouth, like Davos, is much a resort for invalids, though for different climatic reasons. It has no snowfields to freeze out the germs of disease ; but it has an environment of pinewoods and stretches of upland heath, with scores of wind-screened nooks and sunny crannies falling downward to the sea-front. The Stevensons decided to remain. For three months they occupied rooms in a boarding-house named Wensleydale, on the West Cliff ; then in the first week in November they moved into a furnished house in Branksome Park, a western suburb of luxuriant foliage and general sylvan beauty. The house was called Bonalie Towers, a name which Stevenson found pleasantly reminiscent of Bonaly Tower, Colinton, once the home of a local celebrity, Lord Cockburn, the biographer of Francis Jeffrey. There they remained, as it were, on probation until April, 1885. Throughout the winter Stevenson's health, though wretchedly bad, was on the whole better than it had been on the Continent. After all, the British climate was proving tolerable, and Bournemouth seemed to give a promise of permanency. Rejoiced by the tidings, Thomas Stevenson immediately bought a house there which he presented as a gift to his daughter-in-law, with five hundred pounds added for furnishing. Nothing was now too good for Louis, and the gift of a house and furniture was but one of the many

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

proofs of his father's desire to help and to please.

SKERRYVORE

His liberality flowed unceasingly. Not only did he buy and furnish a house for his son and his son's wife and family, he continued to pay the major share of the household expenses. On his part Louis softened to a half-penitent tenderness. Sometimes in writing he bantered his father good-humouredly ; but behind the banter was a new sentiment of affection and concern. Hitherto it had been the duty of parents to children that mattered ; now it was beginning to be the duty of children to parents. Doubtless he had his own thoughts regarding the past, thoughts of folly, selfishness, defiance, heartbreak, and here were heaped-up kindnesses that were as coals of fire on his head. He might regret, but, alas ! regret is so futile an atonement for evil done. He could, however, be grateful, and his gratitude to the failing, childish man he had tried so sorely deepened to a sort of penitent affection.

In honour of family achievements the new home was gleefully renamed Skerryvore, as related in the little poem of dedication printed in *Underwoods*.

I, on the lintel of this cot, inscribe
The name of a strong tower.

The name, therefore, has attained a double interest, a double celebrity, first in engineering science, and next, and more fondly, in literary history. The strong tower stands as it stood, " a star for seamen " ;

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

the house too stands, though not so strongly ; but he, the transient guest who gave it fame, "abode his destined hour and went his way," his long, devious, toilsome way to the lonely mountain-top in far Samoa. Three years the tenancy lasted—three years of invalidism, seclusion, and withal amazing literary activity. "Get an incurable disease," said Oliver Wendell Holmes in giving a receipt for longevity—"get an incurable disease, nurse it carefully, and you will see your strong, healthy contemporaries dropping off one by one while you go on living." One might almost imagine that the shrewd and delightful autocrat wrote with a prevision of the ailing Stevenson.

Skerryvore stands picturesquely on the edge of Alum Chine, or ravine, facing south, with a tiny lawn in front leading to a sharp declivity of tangled shrubbery, and the main road behind—a common two-story, yellow-brick cottage overgrown in part by patchy ivy. It is little altered since Stevenson's day, save for certain additions, including a billiard-room at the back. But the view he loved is obstructed or restricted by villas of a more pretentious type, the work of the ubiquitous speculative builder. To Stevenson it brought a new and delicious sensation of ownership. Here at last he seemed to be anchored, and the anchorage was his own, or his wife's, thanks to the overweening generosity of the most indulgent of fathers.

With a zest which was in itself a tonic, the couple set themselves to the inspiring task of making a new home, this time, if it pleased Heaven, a permanent one. Sheraton furniture, blue china, pictures, busts, draperies, upholsteries, books, and other belongings from La Solitude ; a rare

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Venetian mirror, the gift of Henry James ; specimens of the work of Rodin, the famous French sculptor ; special photographs of friends : Henley, Fleeming Jenkin, Mr. Colvin, and others—all the comforts and modest elegancies, in which good taste and limited means combined to prevent a vulgar profusion, marked and embellished the new possession. On a hint, perhaps, from *The Vicar of Wakefield*, there was a "blue room," the dining-room, with possible hope of a green, for the present drawing-room and library in one. Mrs. Stevenson was an adept in home-making ; and here for the first time, at any rate since she married Louis, her talent found full scope. Both in and out of doors she took command. The internal arrangements were naturally hers ; but her energy, her initiative, extended to the garden stretching down to a small stream in the bottom of the Chine. The labyrinths and terraced walks which she designed are still in part there, as testimony of her skill. The little Eden so long desired, so variously sought, seemed at last secure and perfect. For a time Stevenson's buoyancy returned. In the summer sunshine he walked about in the shade of a red umbrella, admiring his wife's handiwork as he inhaled the perfume of her flowers. Yes ! the little Eden seemed complete.

One fond hope, however, was not to be realised. As time passed his health did not improve ; on the contrary, it went dismally from bad to worse. The little excursions with the red umbrella became rarer and rarer, became, in fact, snatched interludes in the weary routine of the sick-room. It was then that, as he afterwards said, he was a "pallid brute that lived like a weevil in a biscuit."

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

The long course of invalidism, and still more the terror of a relapse, made him timorous. He kept indoors when, according to medical opinion, he might with advantage have been out enjoying the sunshine and the breeze. The burned child dreads the fire. He was taking no risks. Another attack such as he had had at Hyères would end everything. And if he were to die, what should become of those dependent upon him? The question was one which gave him much concern, and sufficiently explains his timidity.

Much, indeed most, of his working-time was spent in bed, often, it is clear, rather from choice than necessity. Writing in bed had become a habit. Moreover, it has to be borne in mind that, while his ill-health meant periods of prostration and lassitude, it involved little or no pain. According to his own statement he never suffered as much pain as comes from an ordinary toothache—a record which multitudes of strong men might envy. And from its nature his disease left all his faculties clear, acted, indeed, as a mental stimulus, a sort of exacerbation of the brain which was at once a source of strength and a cause of weakness. We have thus the seeming paradox of a writer who is helped, even spurred to activity, by physical infirmity.

In that respect Stevenson bears a close resemblance to John Sterling, of whom Carlyle has given so vivid and so beautiful a picture. Both Sterling and Stevenson were consumptive; both were temperamentally eager, nervous, audacious, irrepressibly restless. The lack of the due inertia was one of the defects noted in Sterling by Carlyle; the lack of the due inertia was a fundamental defect

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

in Stevenson. Finally, the mental activities of both were morbidly increased by the very disease which made them invalids and exiles. However it might be with Stevenson the man, Stevenson the writer was certainly most himself when propped in bed amid a litter of pillows, papers, books, and cigarette-ash—the latter a cause of dire offence to all his landladies. In bed he enjoyed what Wordsworth calls meditative peace. Imagination could brood undisturbed, and to be productive the imagination must have periods of repose, of “meditative peace.” As to Stevenson’s incessant industry, we revert to Henley’s judgment, that he wrote with such deadly assiduity because he could not help it, because writing was the very breath of life to him.

There are compensations in all things. If in those Bournemouth years Stevenson had little heart or strength for play or pleasure, literature is the richer in consequence. But one question inevitably arises, alike for the dispassionate critic and the professed Stevensonian—was the quality of his work affected by the conditions in which it was produced? In part the difficult answer has already been given, and will appear more fully in what is to follow. Here, however, it may be remarked that literary history is not without illuminating, inspiring instances of bodily infirmity nobly overcome. Milton was blind; Pope’s rickety body had to be bound up in corsets; Keats was consumptive; Heine lay for years paralysed and half blind on his “mattress grave” in Paris; yet under such disadvantages they produced some of their most splendid, most brilliant writings. The case of Stevenson is therefore by no means

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

unique, though it does not at all detract from his valour that in similar or greater hardships others were brave. Rather is it a tribute to the hardihood of the literary temperament, the power and persistency of will which underlie all continuous mental labour, and in particular all great efforts of imagination.

DRAMATIC VENTURES

The Bournemouth period opened with a determined bout of play-writing. Henley and his wife took lodgings near Wensleydale, and the two friends collaborated with burning enthusiasm and astonishing speed. *Beau Austin* was thus written in four days, and *Admiral Guinea* was dashed off with almost equal rapidity. From the first Henley had soaring ambitions as a dramatist. Conscious of his own high gifts, irked by the drudgery and small rewards of journalism, he saw in the drama a primrose path to affluence and ease. Vital, vivid, masterful, magnetic, he fired Stevenson with his own ardour, his own glorious dreams of wealth. "The theatre is a gold-mine," Louis told his father eagerly; and resolved to do his best to secure a share of its abounding riches. By the end of September both plays were practically complete; and the sanguine, self-enchanted authors took no pains to conceal their delirious joys of anticipation. A London success and their fortunes were made. And why not a London success? Here was the stuff to set the West End on fire. But, despite strenuous efforts and the warm encouragement of Beerbohm Tree, the success remained a dream.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Already in July *Deacon Brodie* had been produced at the Old Prince's, later the Prince of Wales's Theatre with Henley's brother in the title-rôle. It made its appeal, and disappeared. Anticipating somewhat, it may be stated that several years later, on November 3, 1890, *Beau Austin* was put on at the Haymarket, with all the éclat of a notable West-End event. The programme lies before me as I write. The cast included Beerbohm Tree as "George Frederick Austin," Fred Terry as "John Fenwick," and Miss Horlock as "Dorothy Musgrave." A prologue by Henley, promising "a faint and fine perfume of old-world courtliness and old-world bloom," was spoken by Tree; and we may suppose spoken inimitably. In the good old Georgian days—

Men and women were human to the core,
The hearts that throbbed beneath that quaint attire
Burned with a plenitude of essential fire.
They too could risk, they also could rebel,
They could love wisely—they could love too well.

The play had all the advantages of superb staging and first-rate acting. Moreover, some of the critics were highly complimentary. The London correspondent of an important American weekly, the *Nation*, hailed the production as "the most important event of the London Winter Season." The critic continued: "It is a refreshing novelty to see a modern English play in which manner is as carefully considered as matter, and artistic effect is preferred to melodramatic morality," the morality, perhaps, of *Lay Morals*. The dialogue is described as "racy, witty, polished"; the play

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

is "well constructed, and the characters live and are not mere puppets." The majority of English critics, however, were less enthusiastic, though the beauty of the style was everywhere acknowledged. Seven years later, when Stevenson was gone, *Admiral Guinea* was produced experimentally at the New Century, a theatre established for the production of works by young, promising, or unknown dramatists. Again the *Nation* was cordial in its praise and London critics gave a qualified approval; but the acting appears to have been poor and the performance made no impression. Ten years earlier, it may be noted, *Deacon Brodie* was produced at Wallack's Theatre, New York, when American critics, with mistaken ingenuity, traced its origin to *Jim the Penman* and *The House on the Marsh*, a novel by Miss Florence Warden. A writer in the New York *Critic*, using the initials "H. B.," understood to be Henley himself, repudiated the charge and had no difficulty in proving there had been no plagiarism. In regard to all the Stevenson-Henley plays the British public evinced a Philistine indifference, with the result that the potential gold-mine yielded no precious ore.

In the spring of 1885 the collaborators made one effort more with *Macaire*, also unsuccessful. Then it was exit Stevenson the dramatist. The golden dreams had vanished, leaving only a smarting sense of failure. The causes of that failure are not far to seek: Stevenson had little dramatic imagination, and Henley had still less. Moreover, Stevenson was almost entirely ignorant of stage technique. He had not mastered the "trade" of writing plays, as he had mastered the trade of writing essays and

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

stories, and he was not disposed to learn the craft, even were there opportunities, which there were not. Dramatic critics have pointed out, quite justly, that the Stevenson-Henley plays are too consciously literary for the stage. "The Celestial Manna of literature" fails, in theatrical phrase, to carry across the footlights. Working from a literary tradition of which they could not rid themselves, the authors were too much bent on giving artistic finish where artistic finish is neither desired nor appreciated. Literature and the theatre were not then, any more than they are now, convertible or interchangeable terms. A more serious fault, since it was radical and fundamental, was that neither of the collaborators could sink or merge his own identity in that of the characters. Personality, individuality, so precious in the essay or the sermon, are dangerous, one may say deadly, ingredients in creative work.

THE RIFT IN THE LUTE

Stevenson took failure with characteristic non-chalance; but Henley was bitterly disappointed. He was also hurt, for pride as well as ambition got a fall. He had come ramping, his whole immense, exuberant, boisterous personality adame over the scheme that was to lift both partners to a glorious independence, and in particular free himself from the prostituting bondage of journalism. His loud talk, his resounding Rabelaisian laugh, filled the house. He dominated it by sheer force of vitality, others being for the moment but mere puppets and satellites. Stevenson fell in with his plans; but

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Mrs. Stevenson, who liked to be mistress in her own house, and had never been among his worshippers, resented his dominance and his noise. Still more she resented his too obvious power over Louis, whom she saw reduced to the position of an infatuated assistant in schemes which her shrewd clear sense of the practical secretly rejected. For in her heart she never believed in those splendid castles in the air, things, as she divined, of mere wind and vapour. There were also other feelings at work. Very early she had put her black mark against Henley's name. Though she tolerated him, she did not like him. Now the rift which was to widen so disastrously had definitely begun.

But, intoxicated by his own dreams of splendour, Henley saw nothing, or at any rate paid no heed to equivocal looks and remarks. Tugging excitedly at his tangled red beard, he swore with rousing ardour that at last fortune was fairly conquered and won. He worked with gloating, fiery energy, spurring Louis to an almost equal zeal. And when the thing was done, lo! something which no alchemy of theirs could transmute into coin of the realm. The primrose path had proved a delusion and a snare. To Henley's proud spirit the blow was humiliating; to his desperate sense of need it was tragic; and it may be supposed he did not practise politeness. But he did not yield easily. *Admiral Guinea* and *Macaire* were put into type and hawked among theatrical managers, with a persistency which drew a protest from Stevenson, no doubt after domestic consultations. On second thoughts, he now announced, he was much dissatisfied with the work done in collaboration. Re-reading *Admiral*

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Guinea in cold blood, he found it "a low, dirty, blackguard, ragged piece, vomitable in many parts, simply vomitable," though he defended it gallantly against similar strictures by his father. In that judgment we may detect suggestions from behind. The hand was the hand of Louis, but the voice was the voice of Fanny. Henley, with his self-assertiveness, his noisy laughter and domineering ways, was a failure and, worse, a nuisance. Why not drop him?

Stevenson, who, whatever his faults, had nothing in him of the cad, could not and would not do that. But he could and did speak plainly. He did not wish, he informed his partner, to have second- or third-rate work bearing his name sent round to be derided and rejected. Henley, as his way was, argued stoutly in self-defence. Stevenson rejoined that the stage, so recently a gold-mine, was now only a lottery and must not be preferred to honest drudgery. It would be folly to allow themselves to be lured by an *ignis fatuus*, only to be landed in a worse and deeper bog. Besides, "the lockers were empty"; 17 Heriot Row had already been "bled" somewhat beyond the bounds of reason, and parents could not be supposed to have inexhaustible funds to distribute. Stage heroics were very pretty; but meanwhile the pressing, everlasting problem of bread and butter had to be faced. No! play-writing would not do. Let Henley get back to his journalism, and he, Stevenson, would go on with his stories. Necessity, as most of us know, is a hard driver; but those are tart passages from "my dear boy" to "my dear lad." As yet, however, there was no breach nor open sign of one. Henley went back to his journalism (nursing a sense of

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

grievance), and the old familiar mode of address continued for some time longer.

On his birthday, November 13, Stevenson, with unusual fervour, wished "long life to our friendship." Was he conscious that that friendship had suffered shattering damage? At any rate, "the lady methinks protesteth too much," as if with an uneasy feeling that the seeds of discord had been sown. Stevenson, however, far more than Henley, had the enviable gift of turning his back upon what was disagreeable and proceeding as if it did not exist. He turned now with unabated zest to what he considered his own proper work. Once for all he realised that in story-telling, not in play-writing, lay his real hope of success. Besides, in that direction the omens were encouraging. *Treasure Island* had made a palpable hit. If the "hundred jingling golden quid" he received for it did not fill his purse to overflowing, the success of the book gave his reputation an enhanced "market value." The general reader was beginning to take a paying interest in him; very luckily, for capital was low.

To help, his wife finished most of the stories begun as an amusement for the sick-room at La Solitude. In health Stevenson himself was "all smashed up." There were more hæmorrhages, happily less serious than those of the year before, but prostrating in their effects. Sleep failed, and he took morphine for his cough. his "donkey's bray," as he called it, and found the drugged brain dull and listless. Thus the task of finishing the series *More New Arabian Nights* fell almost wholly to his wife. Stevenson revised and suggested; but his actual share of the completed work consisted

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

of one story, "The Explosive Bomb," a poor enough specimen of his art.

A TRIFLE OF MORALITY

Early in November he was heartened by a request from the *Pall Mall Gazette* for a story of eight thousand words, the price to be five pounds per thousand. He undertook the commission eagerly, but could not carry it out. Morphine and sleeplessness combined induced a stupor which overpowered his faculties, and he was forced to confess himself beaten. His short story "Markheim" was available, but was found unsuitable. In this dilemma he unearthed "The Body-Snatcher," written three years before at Kinnaird Cottage, Pitlochrie, and laid aside as too crudely gruesome for publication. Evidently the *Pall Mall Gazette* was in search of something supersensational for its Christmas readers. At any rate, it was so taken with "The Body-Snatcher" that it not only welcomed the story, but sent out sandwich-men to advertise it with such hideously-grotesque posters that the police were obliged to interfere. With the author there ensued a comedy in little. Since he gave old stuff and bad stuff, he refused to take the full price of forty pounds. When Henley, his commercial as well as his literary adviser and agent, expostulated, he retorted grandly: "What are we, artists or City men?" as if artists should immolate themselves on the altar of the ideal, while City men were free to luxuriate in the gross delights of material opulence. Perhaps he was thinking of Burns, who declined to take payment from the

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

egregious Thomson for gems of immortal song. Certainly he forgot the dictum of that stern, unbending old Tory, Samuel Johnson, that none but a fool would decline to write for money and as much of it as he could get. But, then, Johnson had from the start to earn his own living as best he could, whereas Stevenson could afford fine airs—at his father's expense. Doting fathers with long purses are so convenient in a delicate crisis of sentiment and honour. "The Body-Snatcher," declared the outraged moralist, was not worth forty pounds, and "I will be damned if I steal with my eyes open." On that fetching text he delivered a sermon on the morality of authorship which the guilty Henley must have read with a sardonic grin. On one point at least Stevenson was incontestably right about himself—that, given the chance, he could not help preaching. Just then, too, it may be, he desired to give his "dear" but troublesome "lad" a warning rap over the fingers.

In the midst of such agitations and drawbacks he wrote "A Humble Remonstrance," and the essay on "Some Technical Elements of Style in Literature," which appeared in *Longman's Magazine* for December 1884 and the *Contemporary Review* for April 1885. The first arose out of a friendly controversy between Walter Besant and Henry James. Besant had lectured on the art of fiction, taking, as those who knew him will readily understand, a strictly utilitarian, almost mechanical, view of the craft of novel-writing. James, an artist to his finger-tips, but inclining strongly to French naturalism, answered; and Stevenson, intensely interested, struck in with "A Humble Remonstrance," which in substance is an eloquent

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

plea for his favourite theory, that the first business of the story-teller is to tell a story, not to lose himself in minute or tedious analysis, and that romance is of the essence of the game. The essay on Style has been much criticised ; but it is at least interesting as the cause of sharp division among experts, and to young authors must always be suggestive, if not quite convincing. It was written while its author "sat on Charon's pier-head" as the result of a hæmorrhage and was forbidden to speak—a tribute at once to his courage and his power of concentration.

NEW HOPES AND A GREAT INDIGNATION

The opening of the year 1885 found him in bounding spirits over an invitation from his friend Andrew Lang, then editing a series of "British Worthies," to contribute a volume on Wellington. He accepted joyously ; and was so confident of big results that he refused the hundred pounds offered in payment, preferring "some sort of royalty." Forthwith the study of military history became his absorbing passion. Perhaps nothing better illustrates Stevenson's perennial boyishness than his instant ardour over any new enterprise that chanced to captivate his imagination. The *History of the Highlands* and the *Life of Hazlitt* were taken up with consuming enthusiasm, and abandoned. Half a score of novels were planned or begun, and never finished. His course is strewn with such wrecks. Indeed, probably no writer of his generation put so much ardour and energy into schemes which came to nothing. Yet over each new venture he

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

was as eager as if he had never known disappointment or ever been associated with a failure. Over "Wellington" he became ecstatic. At last, at last the masterpiece of which he had so long dreamed was to become a tangible fact; and in the end, health and strength failing, the masterpiece went to swell the list of wrecks.

It has been supposed, rather fancifully, that from his studies for "Wellington" came the conviction that he had missed his destiny in not being a soldier. True, he had yearned for an active life; but, then, all imaginative writers at some time yearn to be men of action, just as men of action—Napoleon, for example—yearn to be men of letters. The fact that self-made pictures of a military career fascinated Stevenson is not at all strange. But desire is no proof of capability. A sailor, roaming from clime to clime, he might have been; a sailor, like Odysseus, he actually was; but no one with a right understanding of his temperament and the conditions of army service could ever think of him as a born soldier, save in the single quality of courage. This is not disparagement. There is one glory of the sun and another glory of the moon, and another of the stars. Stevenson had his own rare and delightful qualities, but they were emphatically not of the military order.

While he was absorbed in preparations for "Wellington," an event happened which stirred him more deeply than any other external event of his whole life. In February 1885 came the news that, after a long and gallant defence, Khartoum had fallen, and that the heroic Gordon was dead, forsaken, abandoned to a barbaric and ruthless enemy, by a callous, ungrateful country. A wave of horri-

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

fied indignation swept over the civilised world. In Britain the feeling was one of surging rage with vacillating, shuffling politicians, as usual too intent on party cabals and petty lobbyings to care for the honour of the Empire or the fate of a beleaguered hero giving his life for his country. At Windsor, Victoria fulminated against her Prime Minister for breach of faith; at Bournemouth, Robert Louis Stevenson echoed her fulminations, with flaming additions of his own. In both cases it gave a keener edge to wrath and disgust that the Prime Minister was William Ewart Gladstone, whom Victoria heartily disliked and Louis had been taught from his tenderest years to detest. Moreover, to Stevenson the shameful tragedy was made yet blacker by callousness. He was informed that when the news came Millais was painting Gladstone's portrait. The painter was overcome; the politician (so it was said) remarked unconcernedly, "Why! it's the man's own temerity." Stevenson could scarcely contain his anger and his loathing. In connection with the "Wellington" volume he had been on the point of writing to "the Grand Old Man," softened, as he owned, by the thought of the Premier's age and long service. Such a letter was now out of the question, since the only possible signature must be "Your Fellow-criminal." For he too was guilty—guilty of a craven silence, when he ought to have put the trumpet to his lips and roused his countrymen while yet it was possible to act. England, he wrote to Symonds, stood before the world "dripping with blood and daubed with dishonour." And he, a cowardly bourgeois, had not lifted a finger to avert the shame. There lay the disgrace, the sting.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

In Gordon's character and career there was much to evoke the sympathy and admiration of Stevenson. The man's glorious knight-errantry, his quixotic chivalry, his almost fanatical zeal for ideals, his absolute fearlessness, his self-sacrifice, his dauntless striving in war and peace to be the pattern of a Christian gentleman, exemplifying in conduct the teaching of the Sermon on the Mount—all this deeply impressed the imagination of Stevenson. And now the forsaken hero and saint had perished by treachery, his severed head a thing of mockery in the hands of the gloating Mahdi. The thought brought sorrow, shame, and disgust. To-day it may be regretted it did not occur to him to write the biography of his hero. Certainly the subject would have been more congenial, more inspiring and fruitful than the hard, narrow, centred, successful, unromantic Wellington. For Gordon was romance incarnate, the best of romance since it was reality.

But other and closer matters were pressing on his attention. At last, after innumerable difficulties and transmutations, *A Child's Garden of Verses* was out of hand, and appeared in March with the imprint of Messrs. Longmans, Green & Co. *Prince Otto*, our old friend *The Forest State*, after similar transmutations, was also finished, ran serially in *Longman's Magazine* from April to October, and was then immediately published by Messrs. Chatto & Windus. In May came *More New Arabian Nights*, an "eccentric mass of blague and seriousness," yet, as he thought, "singularly varied and vivid." These works coming so closely together made the year 1885 appear one of phenomenal productiveness. But in reality, as has

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

been shown, they were mostly the fruits of long labour in California, in Scotland, at Davos and Hyères, though the final revisions were made at Bournemouth. *A Child's Garden of Verses* was dedicated to Cummy in lines now familiar to all the world. Of the contents of the little volume its author held no very exalted opinion. He would not call them poetry, only pleasant childish rhymes with quaint conceits, which might amuse such as care for childish things. In effect he was disposed to agree with the genial autocrat :

Don't mind if the index of sense is at zero
Use words that run smooth: whatever they mean.
Leander and Lilian and Lillie Lullero
Are much the same thing in the rhyming machine.

Nor were his friends moved to any marked enthusiasm. Yet of all his books *A Child's Garden* is the one which readers have taken most fondly to their hearts, and its popularity rather increases than diminishes with the passage of time.

A PERSONAL REMINISCENCE

Of *Prince Otto* his opinion was different. On no other of his stories did he lavish so much pains. Parts of it were written and rewritten eight and ten times, and the whole underwent such drastic recasting that in the end little of the original draft remained. Perhaps because of this enormous labour it held a special place in his affections. He meant it to be a masterpiece, and in his heart he thought it was. But readers have always regarded

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

it shyly, and its critics have been severely critical. On its appearance in book form Henley reviewed it generously and Meredith sent a word of glowing appreciation. But in general it had what is called a bad, or at any rate a lukewarm, Press. Some reviewers treated it with condescension as "a pretty piece of writing"; others were downright hostile. A few were sarcastic. One called it "a child's book," and another a "Gilbert comedy." Over the last designation Stevenson was deeply offended, first because the story was not meant to be comic, and next because he despised W. S. Gilbert and all his works. In the downright style the *Saturday Review* was especially conspicuous, and from his protests to friends it is evident Stevenson felt the criticism. To Henley and others he defended both Otto and Seraphina, contending that "the romance lies precisely in the freeing of two spirits from Court intrigues." What particularly wounded and depressed him was that even professed guides in literature gave an author no credit for aiming high.

As for the public, he declared in his irritation, it relished sheer sloppiness, with a heavy mixture of dullness and pomposity. Finally, to an American correspondent, R. H. Stoddard, he cited the story as an example of "the difficulty of being ideal in an age of realism." Two years before, in "A Gossip on Romance," he had written: "English people of the present day are apt, I know not why, to look somewhat down on incident and reserve their admiration for the clink of teaspoons and the accents of the curate." He now gave them romance of a high kind, and because they would not have it, he was chagrined

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

and resentful. He had put his whole strength, his whole skill as an artist, into *Prince Otto*, and neither the critics nor the public appreciated his effort.

It may be permissible to interpolate here a small personal reminiscence. By chance it happened that *Prince Otto* was the first of Stevenson's books which I read. It had been some years published, when in the course of a literary discussion I heard it scornfully described as shapeless, invertebrate, ridiculous, the product of a vain, overweening æsthete, with nothing to give his readers but puerilities and absurdities wrapped up in a jingle of words. Listening, I remembered that to one discerning critic two generations earlier, *Sartor Resartus*, probably the greatest book of its century in England, was no more than "a heap of clotted nonsense." What if this were another specimen of the same enlightened intelligence? My curiosity was stirred. "This book by R. L. Stevenson," I said, "must either be phenomenally bad or phenomenally good. I must discover which." Forthwith I got the story and read it, the adverse criticism still ringing in my ears. As I read the ringing grew fainter and fainter, died away and was forgotten. My immediate conviction—and it was very decided—was, "Whatever else this man can or can not do, most assuredly he can write." The artist in style was there beyond doubt or question.

I saw, of course, what it needed little discernment to see, that, as the critics pointed out, the book was in many parts overwritten, and that in general the characters lacked the vitality of genuine creations. Even inexperienced as I then was in such matters, I felt that the author had wasted

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

much energy and ingenuity on creatures which, after all his trouble, did not come to life. A surer instinct, a little more creative force and grasp of imagination, would have obviated such waste. It is impossible to take any lively interest in the fatuous Otto and his scheming wife; and the minor characters are mere puppets or dummies. So far, I agreed, the critics were right. But in face of all detraction, the style was a thing of beauty, even when, by misdirection, it missed its aim. In parts, too, it achieved a real expressiveness. The flight of the princess, when she finds the game is up and the mob invades the palace, stamps itself on the mind; and the whole forest scene appeared and appears to me vividly conceived and vividly presented. But, above all, it was the magic of the style that lingered like a clinging fragrance: "The glory of the great night laid hold upon her; her eyes shone with stars; she dipped her sight into the coolness and brightness of the sky, as she might have dipped her wrist into a spring: and her heart, at that ethereal shock, began to move more soberly."

If that is not style, I asked myself, where in later English prose is it to be found? Immediately I got other stories by the same writer. In my second choice I was fortunate; it was *Kidnapped*. There was then a sort of Stevenson fever in the air, and I caught the infection severely. I went back on his earlier writings; and thenceforth while he lived I waited avidly for each new work bearing his name, as it came hot from the press.

In the spring of 1885 Stevenson began *Kidnapped* as a means of utilising his Highland studies, drafted the opening chapters with delighted ardour, and

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

broke down, health and invention failing, as they so often failed him. He had in hand another story which for the moment engrossed him more than the adventures of David Balfour. This was "The Great North Road," designed as a rattling, rousing tale of highwaymen, with all the favourite ingredients spiced to a pitch of sensational excitement. But it also was abandoned, to remain a fragment. Ten years later, when he was dead, it appeared in the *Illustrated London News*, then edited by Mr. Clement Shorter, and even to sworn Stevensonians proved a disappointment. Finding the larger work impossible—"it's the length that kills," was his own doctrine—he wrote "Olalla" for the Christmas number of the *Court and Society Review*.

In June came the distressing news of the sudden death in Edinburgh of his old friend and teacher, doubly both friend and teacher, Fleeming Jenkin. With the relations of the two men, and what the younger owed to the elder, I have already dealt. Here it need only be said that in his grief Stevenson perceived more and more clearly the sterling worth of the man he mourned, and now regarded with an affection that was almost worship. Later, at Mrs. Jenkin's request, he undertook to write the "Memoir" which is now prefixed to the volume of selections from Jenkin's literary and scientific papers. The task brought thoughts of his youth flooding back upon him, that turbid and fantastic youth when he thought it clever to be blasphemous and manly to outrage Edinburgh sentiment and respectability. And Jenkin was the one man with courage enough to deride his derision, to scorn his egotism, and pluck him back from the

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

abyss which in the end awaits the fool. Writing to 17 Heriot Row when he was actually engaged on the "Memoir," he said that every fresh detail, everything he read, made him think of Jenkin more nobly. "I cannot imagine how I got his friendship," he added in a burst of candour and gratitude ; "I did not deserve it."

"JEKYLL AND HYDE"—THE DELECTABLE AGENCY OF DREAMS

But through all his troubles, domestic and external, he worked with unceasing assiduity. Moreover, he was now working to some purpose. As usual, he wanted money, wanted it badly and at once, and perhaps he was ashamed to fall back so often on the generosity of 17 Heriot Row. He cast about for a story, something that could be produced rapidly, for the need was pressing ; and after much vain searching wrote the allegory which was to carry his reputation round the whole English-speaking world and add a new expression to the English language—*The Strange Case of Dr. Jekyll and Mr. Hyde*. The supposed origin of that celebrated story has frequently been described. According to a statement, fondly accepted by the credulous, *Jekyll and Hyde* came to its lucky author, complete and rounded off, in a dream. Mrs. Stevenson has related picturesquely how one night Louis cried out horror-stricken, how she woke him up and he protested, "Why did you waken me? I was dreaming a fine boggy-tale." It is also related how he appeared next morning excitedly exclaiming, "I have got my shilling-

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

shocker—I have got my shilling-shocker ! ” After long search and brooding, creative-writers, it may be remarked, often exclaim ecstatically on finding what they wanted, so that Stevenson’s experience is by no means rare.

The dream in literature is an old and pleasant fiction. A large book has been written on the subject, crammed with examples, ancient and modern, of all that authors have owed to the delectable agency of dreams. More than two thousand years ago Ennius, following a convention already established, averred that he dreamed his great epic of Rome, *The Annales*. Coming to England, we find *Piers Plowman* ascribed to the same delightful source. Bunyan, Coleridge, De Quincey, all dreamed immortal works. In the first century of our era Persius satirised the fashionable notion of inspiration by dreams. “ I never,” he declared sadly, “ had a sleep on Parnassus which resulted in my suddenly setting up as a poet.” Goethe, too, remarked that nothing came to him in his sleep. Bunyan, like Ennius, was following a convention. It was different with Coleridge and De Quincey. “ Kubla Khan ” and *The Opium-Eater* were the results of opium. Does *Jekyll and Hyde* stand in the same category ? Both before and during its composition Stevenson was taking drugs to an extent which clearly affected his brain. The drug-taker is a dreamer. Occasionally his dreams are glorious visions, as with De Quincey in the earlier stages of his debauches ; more often they are hideous nightmares. In such a disturbance of brain and nerve Stevenson may well have been hagridden by such a piece of horror as he describes in his tale.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Besides, there were other causes. He had already dealt with a similar theme in delineating Deacon Brodie, the pious burglar of Edinburgh; and during sleep "the subconscious mind," which is the storehouse of garnered impressions, may have shot up old memories of that arch-villain and hypocrite. His own statement is, "All I dreamed of Dr. Jekyll was that one man was being pressed into a cabinet when he swallowed a drug and changed into another being." Quite obviously the cabinet was "a carry-over" from the Deacon Brodie studies. When Stevenson was a child, there stood in his bedroom at 17 Heriot Row a cabinet, the actual handiwork of the infamous deacon; to the boy it was an object of infinite curiosity and profoundly impressed his imagination. The impression was deepened by the play written in collaboration with Henley; and now, by the obscure action of a drugged brain and a fevered imagination questing for material, it was revived—with grotesque additions. Memory supplied the cabinet; the drug was actively present; the change of personality followed almost mechanically. Psychologically that is quite simple. The story, then, had its genesis in past experience, recalled and remoulded to new issues by a brain "functioning" in abnormal conditions.

And, indeed, the story, with its crude horrors and wild improbabilities, bears tolerably clear marks of its origin. The mode of composition, too, was significant. The first draft was dashed off in a frenzy of excitement, as if the gruesome picture had to be flung headlong on paper. In that form it was read to Mrs. Stevenson, who condemned it as an allegory made into a rather commonplace story

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

like *Markheim*. In the argument that followed Stevenson appears to have behaved with unusual heat of temper. Suddenly, to his wife's consternation, he ended the dispute by throwing the manuscript in the fire, as appeared, in a passion of anger. In reality it was his way of indicating that she was right, and that the tale must be remodelled and rewritten. That the reconstruction might be complete, it was better, he explained, to destroy the first draft, lest it might betray him into wrong methods. The second version, like the first, was produced at a white heat ; indeed, the phenomenal speed has excited wide wonder and applause as an unparalleled feat in composition.¹ According to Stevenson's own account, the book was "conceived, written, re-written, re-rewritten and printed inside ten weeks," with bankruptcy at his heels in the form of "Byles the butcher, whose wheels drive exceedingly swiftly." Byles may be a hard taskmaster, but occasionally he proves a very effective incentive and inspiration.

The story was finished and ready for publication late in the autumn of 1885, but for trade reasons it was held over until the middle of January, 1886, when it was published as "a shilling shocker" by Messrs. Longmans, Green & Co. Its immediate reception was not encouraging. Booksellers eyed it askance. It was a small book, the profit per copy would also be small, and the public appeared indifferent. But an article in *The Times*,

¹ By comparison, the feats of Byron and Scott, it is implied, sink into insignificance. But what of Beckford, who at twenty two wrote *Vathek* at one sitting? "It took me," he relates, "three days and two nights of hard labour. I never took off my clothes the whole time." *Vathek* is as long as the old three-volume novel. *Jekyll and Hyde* runs to some thirty thousand words.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

written, I think, by James Payn, drew attention to its unusual qualities. In those happy days a review in a prominent journal was "good for an edition." Immediately, in trade phrase, the book "began to move." Then other reviews appeared in quick succession. The *Academy*, in a notice which may be taken as typical, wrote enthusiastically: "It is many years since English fiction has been enriched by any work at once so weirdly imaginative in conception and so faultlessly ingenious in construction as this little tale." Another reviewer, writing perhaps, in the early hours of the morning, declared that "the reader scarcely breathes while the story proceeds." So the joyous chorus ran. And America was equally impressed. R. H. Stoddard thought it "exactly such a story as Poe might have written." A religious journal, the *Churchman*, found in it "the reasonable strangeness, the mysterious power of Edgar Poe, and the magic of some of Bulwer's stories." The *Critic* described it as "containing French grace of execution with a distinctly Saxon ethical method. Mr. Stevenson's *Strange Case* follows in the Hawthorne line, because it offers both art and ethics in a remarkable union." James Payn, letting himself go in the New York *Independent*, characterised it as "a work of incontestable genius. Nothing by Edgar Allan Poe is to be compared to it. What is worth mentioning, otherwise a good many people would miss it, is that a noble moral underlies the marvellous tale."

The moral was not missed. On the contrary, it was caught up and proclaimed with quite apostolic fervour. A Canon of the English Church, reading his *Times* over the matutinal bacon and eggs, noticed what was said of the book, became

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

interested, procured a copy, read it ; and, seizing so rare an opportunity, made it a text for a sermon to the elect in St. Paul's Cathedral. Other canons, vicars, and Nonconformist divines, following a distinguished lead, expounded the parable from scores of pulpits all over the land. As I can testify from experience, there is no more effective advertisement for a story than a series of sermons. "Get a novel into the pulpit," said a shrewd publisher to me, "and its fortune is made. It doesn't matter a brass farthing whether it is extolled or slated so long as it gets there." The moral which Mr. Payn feared might be missed proved, in fact, the salvation of *Jekyll and Hyde*. Man's duality, the ceaseless war in his members between the forces of good and evil, is as old as the race. It came in with Adam, and will probably go out with Campbell's "Last Man," when he sees the darkening universe sink into everlasting night. But preachers, glad, doubtless, to get so rich a theme, treated the idea as if it were a new gospel, a new revelation given for the first time by Robert Louis Stevenson. It was first-rate business.

From the pulpit *Jekyll and Hyde* passed triumphantly to the boudoir, the drawing-room, and the dinner-table. Society took it up. It wasn't as good as *Ascot*, but it had something of the interest of a new dance or a hitherto unheard-of specimen at the Zoo. Elderly ladies of severely mid-Victorian minds shook their heads with a "My dear, it is dreadful." It was really too bad of this Mr. Stevenson, whoever he was, to expose the old Adam thus, in all his stark iniquity, to give such awful glimpses of the beast Caliban at his worst ; but, well ! yes, there was the not unpleasant

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

shudder of the horrid thing ; and at any rate it served as a convenient topic for small-talk, like Mr. Darwin's apes or Mr. Gladstone's Irish policy. When a book is thus selected for honour it " booms " and *Jekyll and Hyde* was soon booming. For the million it had the supreme advantage of cheapness ; the nimble ninepence (those were the days of 25 per cent. discount) sufficed for the new sensation. In a few months 50,000 copies were sold ; the printing-presses were going full speed, and the invalid-hermit of Skerryvore awoke one morning to find himself famous. It should be said that he showed no sign of intoxication. He had worked too hard, waited too long, endured too much, to lose his head over an unexpected success. But he would not have been human were he not elated and fortified.

Two criticisms of the time deserve to be particularly noted : one by John Addington Symonds, the other by F. W. H. Myers.¹ As related by Mr. Horatio F. Brown in his admirable biography, Symonds doubted whether anyone has the right " to scrutinise the abysmal depths of personality." " At least," he wrote to Stevenson, " I think he [the scrutiniser] ought to bring more of distinct belief in the resources of human nature, more faith, more sympathy with our frailty than you have done. . . . The scientific cast of the allegory will act as an incentive to moral self-murder with those who perceive the allegory's profundity. The suicide end of *Jekyll*," he added, " is too commonplace. Dr. *Jekyll* ought to have given himself up

¹ F. W. H. Myers, poet, philosopher, critic, scholar, author of *St. Paul*, *The Survival of Personality*, and an *Essay on Virgil*, which is probably the most luminous appreciation of that poet in the English language.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

to justice. This would have vindicated the sense of human dignity which is so horribly outraged in your book." This is scarcely the tone of flattering pulpiteers ; and, indeed, Stevenson must have felt that from the self-acclaimed apostle of romance, the scornful censor of the ugly and the realistic, *The Strange Case of Dr. Jekyll and Mr. Hyde* was indeed a strange production. Myers, an accomplished psychologist, directed his criticism to certain flaws in the psychology of the characters. Stevenson acknowledged its justice, but in excuse pleaded exceeding haste and the furious driving of those wheels of Byles the butcher.

I have dealt thus exhaustively with *Jekyll and Hyde* because, by a curious stroke of irony, it marks an important turning-point in Stevenson's literary career. He was now on the highway to popular success, a figure at last in popular fiction. Henceforth it will not be necessary to dwell with so much detail on his successive books. The public had taken him up, and he was a celebrity on the strength, not of his best work, but of a "savage, gruesome parable" of some thirty thousand words written purely as a "pot-boiler." Such are the ironies and caprices of public taste and appreciation.

CHAPTER III

ESTABLISHED POPULARITY

WITH renewed energy, mental if not physical, he took up and finished *Kidnapped*, which ran serially in *Young Folks*, as Mr. Robert Leighton has stated, throughout June and July 1886, and was immediately published by Messrs. Cassell & Co. As we have seen, the story grew out of his studies for the abandoned "History of the Highlands," which, realising at last his own unfitness for the task, he bequeathed "to a more qualified successor." On his journey south from Strathpeffer, while still intent on that project, he bought from an Inverness bookseller a printed report of the trial of James Stewart for the Appin murder, with an analysis of the evidence. Instantly he saw—as what writer of romance would not see?—that here was first-rate material for a tale of adventure, even when it had been utilised for the History. To obtain local colour, he visited Appin with his father in the early summer of 1880, and despite wild weather spent several delightful days in Glenorchy, at Oban and Balachuilish, enlarging his knowledge and imbibing the right atmosphere. The ultimate result was *Kidnapped*, with its sequel, *Catriona*. When the former story appeared in July 1886, it was received by the reviewers with a

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

resounding chorus of applause, the plaudits over *Jekyll and Hyde* being still reverberating. *The Times*, leading the orchestra, devoted upwards of a column to a eulogy of the new story, which it found "almost, if not quite, as fascinating as *Treasure Island*." The *Spectator*, equally munificent of space, doubted whether "Mr. Stevenson will ever again come up to the freshness of *Treasure Island*"; but was quick to add that in *Kidnapped* "he gives pictures of Highland character worthy of Sir Walter Scott himself." The *Literary World* yet more generously gave the story two pages of undiluted panegyric, with copious extracts to whet the appetites of prospective buyers. "The interest is sustained to the close," the reviewer wound up, "and the most fastidious reader will not be able to find a single dull page between the two covers." With equal enthusiasm, the *Daily News* considered "Mr. Stevenson's study of Highland character the best thing of the sort which has been written since *Rob Roy*." The *World*, then edited by Edmund Yates, gave it a no less cordial review. The writer, I believe, was Mrs. Cashel Hoey, herself a novelist of charm and honourably distinguished among London reviewers for ready appreciation of merit, and especially for generosity to new or comparatively unknown writers. Other journals, Metropolitan and provincial, wrote in a similar strain. Finally *Punch* gave his effective blessing in verse to—

A book you ought to read at once and read at once you will.

America also was enthusiastic. To one important reviewer the tale had "the minuteness of Defoe."

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Another averred that "Mr. Stevenson's work is meritoriously high even in comparison with the immortal works of the author of *Waverley*. And from the Atlantic to the Pacific the reviews were plentifully sprinkled with the epithets "charming," "quaint," "delightful," "exciting," "fascinating," "irresistible." George Parsons Lathrop, an influence in the current criticism of the day, observed that "Mr. Stevenson is a master of language and cultivates assiduously those phrases which are known to be idiomatic," adding, rather oddly: "There is a daintiness of touch, a *dreamy freedom of invention* in his admirable fabrications which lend them a charm somewhat more ideal than that of Defoe." As supplement to all these judgments, Stevenson himself thought *Kidnapped* "a far better story and sounder at heart than *Treasure Island*," and assuredly he was right.

One agreeable result of two unequivocal successes following close on each other was that, as he reported to his father, he believed himself to be "floated financially." Yet the floating was still uncertain; for almost while making the glad announcement he inquired if he could have money for a contemplated trip to Scotland, "and if so how much?" The ordinary expenditure for the year, he thought, could be met from his own resources, but there was no chance of any surplus for travel or incidental holiday expenses. The continued "shortness of money" is explained partly by the heavier expenses of an invalid with a family to maintain; but mostly by the almost incredibly low rates he received for his work. Even for those days thirty shillings per thousand

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

words for a story of the calibre of *Kidnapped* was something short of "hodman's wages." Yet it was more than twice the rate he was paid for *Treasure Island* and *The Black Arrow*. *Young Folks* was doubtless an admirable journal for the youth of England, but clearly it did not pander to luxury by overpaying its contributors. Nor did publishers evince the smallest inclination to be extravagant in their terms. All that was soon to be changed, thanks to American intervention and enterprise; but in the meantime the booming Stevenson had to nurse a lean purse.

All through that busy and important time he was "a chronic sickist," often utterly prostrated and condemned to silence (a grievous inhibition) by repeated colds, hæmorrhages, fevers, insomnia, and the evils that flow from these. "My work," he told his old friend, Mr Will H. Low, "cripples along between bed and the parlour, between the medicine-bottle and the cupping-glass" When we read *Kidnapped* and thrill over the fight in the round-house of the brig *Covenant*, and admire the aplomb and resource of Alan Breck, and follow with eager interest the flight in the heather, at the end we may well let our thoughts hark back to that sick-room at Skerryvore, and the creator of it all, striving, and striving triumphantly, in gloom and weariness, to be vivacious and energetic. In the fiction of Stevenson's own generation there are stronger, greater books than *Kidnapped*; but surely none that was produced in a grimmer, more heroic struggle against Fate and circumstance.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

EXCURSIONS AND FRIENDS

To the toiling invalid it was a time of almost constant imprisonment. Nevertheless, in the intervals of comparative health he was able to make brief excursions from his prison-house at Bournemouth. In June, 1885, he and his wife, after a short stay in London, were at Cambridge with Mr Colvin. It must, I think, have been in passing through London then that he paid the visit to the shop of Mr Walter T. Spencer, the well-known bookseller of New Oxford Street, described in the interesting volume *Forty Years in My Bookshop*.¹ "It was in the year 1885," relates Mr. Spencer, "that he made his one call on me. The day had been very wet, and he sat down wearily in a chair in my shop parlour to examine some pamphlets he had inquired about. He told me that one of his shoes leaked ; and I suggested he should take it off and allow it to be dried, at the same time giving him a little brandy and water to keep off the cold"—a characteristic glimpse of the careless, semi-vagabond, free-and-easy Stevenson.

In August he extended his travels to the West of England, the picturesque Dartmoor being his objective. On the way the party, consisting of Stevenson, his wife, his cousin Mrs. Katherine de Mattos, Bob's sister, and his stepson, spent two or three days at the King's Arms Hotel, Dorchester. The Stevensons called on Mr. Thomas Hardy, who lived close by ; next day Mr. Hardy returned the call, and there was vague talk of further meetings

¹ Constable & Co., London. 1923.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

which never took place. For at Exeter Stevenson fell seriously ill—another hæmorrhage—and as soon as his strength permitted he was obliged to hasten back to Bournemouth. The solitary meeting is of exceptional interest. Already the author of *Far From the Madding Crowd* and *The Return of the Native* divided honours with Meredith as the first of living British novelists. Stevenson admired, even if he could not agree with, his elder's theories of art or his interpretation of man's destiny and the ironic cruelties of Destiny. But when by and by *Tess of the D'Urbervilles* came like a challenge to vapoury conceptions of romance he dissented, disapproving of the heroine and all her ways; and there was no more exchange of courtesies. On his part, Mr. Hardy, I judge, never was, and is not, a Stevensonian.

Throughout the winter of 1885-6 Stevenson was a close prisoner, seldom even venturing out into the garden. Partly for health reasons of their own, and partly to be near Louis, his parents spent the winter at Bournemouth. In April, chiefly for his father's sake, he accompanied them to London, where the party stayed for a few days at a quiet family hotel in Fitzroy Square, and then went on to the Smedley Hydropathic at Matlock, the well-known invalid resort in Derbyshire. *Kidnapped* was still unfinished, and, as often happened, its author was in difficulties over points of construction. With the end of David's adventures in the Highlands he had reached his limit of space, but not the end of the tale as it was designed. He took counsel with his friend and faithful adviser, Mr. Colvin, who "thought it a sin" to throw away such excellent material as David Balfour and

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Alan Breck. A compromise was suggested and adopted. The story was cut off abruptly, with promise of a sequel should "the long-eared public" show any desire to have one. The plan, Stevenson explained to his father, would obviate the necessity of "butchering a lot of good material to no purpose." Besides, he felt confident of being able to do a second volume with "ease and pleasure." The sequel came seven years later in *Catriona*, or *David Balfour*, as it is entitled in America.

In June, having got *Kidnapped* out of hand, and again in August and October, he was in London with Mr. Colvin, who had exchanged the Slade Professorship of Fine Art at Cambridge for the post of Keeper of Prints in the British Museum. During the August visit of ten days he met several literary and artistic celebrities, in particular Robert Browning and James Russell Lowell, then American Ambassador to England. Long before, the young Stevenson had essayed to teach Browning the art of poetry with some airs of superiority; but there was no sign now that the genial poet and man of the world knew or remembered anything of the attempt.

Going direct from London, Stevenson and his wife joined the Henleys in Paris, for the double purpose of meeting Rodin, whom Henley knew, and Mr. and Mrs. Will H. Low, who were revisiting Europe. An account of that visit is given delightfully by Mr. Low in his fascinating book, *A Chronicle of Friendships*. For a fortnight the Stevensons were the guests of the Lows at 12 Rue Vernier. Then suddenly one morning Stevenson announced that the holiday must end. "Why?" asked the astonished Mr. Low. "Coin," was the

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

succinct answer. Louis borrowed money enough to pay return fares—to discover later that a cheque from his father for one hundred pounds, sent expressly to pay for the Paris trip, lay uncashed. At the time Stevenson was much put out ; and Mr. Low was as much puzzled, until two years afterwards in New York he learned the truth from Louis's mother. The incident is thus well authenticated. Otherwise it might seem not so much a mere lapse of memory as an absence of mind verging on imbecility. Whether there were hidden elements at work to cause so strange a piece of forgetfulness can only be conjectured. With his "good-bye" to Mr. Low he left Paris for the last time ; and soon he was to leave places and things yet more dear for the last time.

Returning to Skerryvore, he took up in earnest the *Memoir* of Fleeming Jenkin, which was written with the direct personal assistance of Mrs. Jenkin, then at Bournemouth. To Stevenson, we may well believe, it was a labour of love, of admiration, of gratitude. Here was a chance to pay a lasting tribute to the worth of one who at every turn of a fervid and by no means tranquil life gave assurance of a man ; and he put into it all his available strength. If the *Memoir* does not rank high among his works, or among works of its kind, it is nevertheless a piece of honest portraiture, done with manifest sincerity and fidelity to truth—done, one may say, with a piety and reverence very beautiful in the whilom "atheist" whom Jenkin once rebuked so scathingly for blatant impiety. It was written in weakness, in languor and depression of spirits ; but it was also written in affection, and the affection redeems all feebleness, all defects. "One should

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

not write except upon that which one loves," said Renan. Inspired by the memory of many a kindness, many a service, Stevenson wrote from the heart ; and the little work is to be read with the heart rather than with the head. He had long been impressed by Jenkin's fine spirit of piety, " bravely and trustfully accepting life," and by his " singular delight in the heroic." The piety and the heroism are well brought out, though to-day the portrait is valued less for its own or the subject's sake than for the sake of the painter. For it is curious to reflect that Fleeming Jenkin is remembered chiefly because of his associations with " the daft Louis Stevenson." Such are the satires of time. Moreover, as Stevenson wrote, old days, old feelings, old faces came crowding back upon him ; so that in writing of Jenkin he was also writing of his own lost youth. Thus, apart from all questions of intrinsic merit, the brief biography holds a peculiar place in his life, since in effect it is a chapter of autobiography, often pathetic in its candour.

As time passed health did not improve. The winter of 1886-7, the last that Stevenson was to spend in Britain, is again a sad record of weakness, with variations, now better, now worse, but ever woefully tending downward. Nevertheless, then and earlier, in intervals of ease he was able to enjoy the occasional society of his friends, whose visits would have been more frequent had his strength or spirits permitted. Henley, Baxter,¹ Bob Stevenson, and Mr. Colvin came, bringing a whiff of the old life, now so swiftly receding. And a new

¹ Baxter was especially welcome. " Is that Charlie ? " Stevenson would call from his sick-room the moment Baxter entered the house ; and his smile of welcome for his old Edinburgh friend had a peculiar heartiness and affection.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

friend came whom Stevenson received with a deep and peculiar pleasure. The amicable controversy, already noted, over the art of fiction resulted in an animated correspondence with Henry James. Then one evening James's card was sent in at Skerryvore, followed immediately by the man himself. The visit was so entirely agreeable that it was repeated the next evening and the next, and afterwards many times while Stevenson remained at Bournemouth. The friendship which thus sprang up developed to one of ardency on both sides. In theory the two men were poles apart ; but both were artists in letters, James, in his unobtrusive way, perhaps the finer, more delicate ; so that, as with Carlyle and Emerson, they differed in opinion only. Probably the best, the most luminous and penetrating, " appreciation " of Stevenson in the long roll of such productions came from the pen of Henry James, and may be read in his volume *Partial Portraits*. It was written during that Skerryvore period when Stevenson was just " arriving " as a writer of adventure-stories, and has the conspicuous merit of being written by one who was himself a novelist of rare distinction, and not a mere fatuous or flatulent theoriser about an art he never practised and in its deeper principles did not understand.

James was of course struck by the incongruous contrast between the life of the man and his work. " It seems too anomalous," he remarked, " that the writer who has most cherished the idea of a certain fine exposure should also be the one who has been most reduced to looking for it within, and that the figures of adventurers who, at least in the literature of to-day, are the most vivid should be the most vicarious." Of all the coterie which then

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

surrounded Stevenson, James was, by temperament, by gifts and profession, by far best qualified to understand the novelist and the conditions in which he worked. The friendship founded on mutual sympathy and admiration grew swiftly to a confidential intimacy ; and in the end James was named as Stevenson's executor, though for various reasons, personal and external, he ultimately declined the office.

There were other visitors who came as encouraging indications of increasing popularity : John S. Sargent, an American artist of note, twice visited Skerryvore to paint the portrait, familiar by frequent reproduction, which shows Stevenson in all his " unspeakable slightness," a mere animated skeleton, in fact, but airily twirling a tiny moustache. " Excellent, but too eccentric to be exhibited " was his own judgment. Another American artist, J. W. Alexander, also came and made a drawing of his head, which, though pronounced good, presented the comic combination of " an Aztec idol, a lion, an Indian rajah, and a woman." Of local friends there were Sir Henry and Lady Taylor (to whom *The Merry Men* is dedicated) and their daughters, and Sir Percy and Lady Shelley. Of the latter a curious story is told. Finding in Stevenson a resemblance to the poet, Sir Percy's father, she conceived the idea that through some strange process of reincarnation he was her own son. Calling one day at Skerryvore, while Mrs. Thomas Stevenson was there, she created a scene by upbraiding the real mother for daring to purloin a son who was really *hers* ; to such absurdities do hallucinations run. Yet another who came both as physician and friend was Dr T B. Scott, whose

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

services are gratefully commemorated in the general medical dedication to *Underwoods*.¹

During that winter at Bournemouth Stevenson wrote little. *Kidnapped* left him "worked out," and the *Memoir* of Fleeming Jenkin, slight as it is, utterly exhausted him. To that time of exhaustion belongs *The Misadventures of John Nicholson*, a crude, improbable murder story, the scene of which is laid in Murrayfield, a Western suburb of Edinburgh.² Chiefly, however, he was occupied in preparing *Underwoods* and *Memories and Portraits* for the press and in trying to make himself a musician. Several of his friends—Miss Taylor, Henley, and Bob Stevenson—were expert musicians, and he resolved to emulate, if not to rival, them. He began with the piano, "picking out the melody with one finger," while his stepson accompanied him on a tin whistle. "Dear powers! What a concerto!" he exclaimed in a letter to his father. "The neighbours in a radius of a furlong and a half are packing up in quest of brighter climes." One's sympathies go out to the exasperated neighbours. He soon abandoned the piano for the whistle, which in turn gave place to the flageolet—a favourite diversion as long as he lived. Of his musical talents, Henley, a very competent judge, observed that "he had no ear for intervals, his one tune for many years being 'Auld Lang Syne'." Yet Henley credited him with "an aery and delicate sense of rhythm." Not content with performances on the flageolet, he proceeded to composition,

¹ Dr. Scott died recently while holding the office of Mayor of Bournemouth.

² The house in which the crime is supposed to have been committed is still pointed out to the curious visitor.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

and produced a threnody which was the subject of much banter and not a little satire.

THOMAS STEVENSON

But more serious things were engaging his heart and thoughts. Again his father and mother were at Bournemouth, where they had taken a furnished house ; but this time the real invalid was Thomas Stevenson. For years the once strong, masterful man had been dwindling into senility, and now he was in a pitiable condition. His malady was only too plain. In the tragic words of Swift, he was "withering at the top." Temperamentally he was disposed to gloom, and there had been much in his life, much for which Louis was responsible, to develop and deepen the natural disposition. To other evils was now added an attack of jaundice which left him miserably old and tottering. His moods were variable and at times trying. Suddenly and without cause he broke into frenzies of temper that distressed and terrified all about him. But for the most part he was pathetically docile, with a tremulous, childish concern for Louis. "Take care, dearie," he would say, kissing him as if he were again back with the little Smout at 17 Heriot Row. "Take care, dearie." While he was in that state some of his friends thought it an opportune moment to agitate for a public recognition of his services to the cause of navigation. A knighthood was suggested and vigorously canvassed ; and Louis was, of course, passionately interested. But the London clique, as he called it, was either hostile or indifferent ; or, it may be, the wire-

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

pullers did not quite understand the business they undertook ; or, likelier still, Thomas Stevenson had forgotten party funds. At any rate, politicians were not just then interested in lighthouses, and nothing came of the scheme. When one considers how the majority of such "honours" are bestowed, the real distinction to a self-respecting man is to remain untitled. Louis was disappointed and angry ; but Thomas Stevenson was beyond caring for such baubles.

In February 1887 his wife took him to Torquay, hoping against hope ; but by the 1st of April he was back at Bournemouth without benefit. The situation was made the more pathetic by the fact that Stevenson himself was too ill either to help or to cheer. His father's one wish now was to be taken home ; and on April 21, after three weeks more beside his son, he and his wife left Bournemouth for Edinburgh, an invalid carriage being engaged for the journey. For Louis it was farewell to his father. The end of so much was at hand. The father on whom in every crisis, every need, he had depended, whom he had tried so sorely and whose goodness had never failed, was passing from him in the darkness of shattered mind and body. Little wonder he was deeply affected.

Yet it is characteristic that at that very time he conceived what was probably the most wildly fantastic idea of his whole life. Intermittently he took a theoretic interest in politics ; the "condition of Ireland question" was then furnishing the world with sensations, and Stevenson, ever eager for adventure, planned a dramatic intervention. Eighteen months before, a Kerry farmer, John Curtin, was murdered in his home by "a party of

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Moonlighters," the picturesque successors to the old Fenians. There had been a brave defence, and one of the attacking party was shot. In the result the Curtin family was boycotted, and the boycott was still in force. Here was a chance to enter a flaming protest against the reign of lawlessness. Stevenson, thirsting for the glories of martyrdom, proposed to rent the Curtin farm and proceed there with his family. To-day the incident is worth recalling, merely as showing how little Stevenson understood either Irishmen or their problems.¹

But other and more urgent matters diverted him from his course. Suddenly he was summoned to Edinburgh. On the 6th of May he travelled north with his wife, arriving on the 7th to find that his father, though insisting on being "on his feet," did not know him. Next day, May 8, Thomas Stevenson died, leaving Louis with ghastly, haunting "images of sickness, decline, and impaired reason." To the Rev. W. Robertson, D.D., I am indebted for an impression of Stevenson as he then appeared to eyes that were sympathetically observant. Dr. Robertson writes :

"The only occasion on which I met Robert Louis Stevenson, so far as I remember, was on the day of his father's funeral. I have a vivid recollection of the occasion, although it was six-and-thirty years ago. It was a bright May day. Heriot Row was bathed in sunshine, and the fresh green leaves of the trees in the gardens opposite were shimmering in the sunlight. As I walked along, the stillness of

¹ I lived five years in Ireland, and from actual observation knew something of the matters which agitated Stevenson. His presence in Kerry in the character of martyr would have provoked nothing deadlier than derision.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

the quiet street was broken by the pattering of horses' feet as a long line of carriages drove up to the door of the house with the darkened windows. On entering, one was shown into the dining-room, where already one or two men were seated. It was a typical old Edinburgh dining-room, with its long dining-table and its massive sideboard, surmounted by the circular mirror which was the fashion of the time. As I entered the room R. L. S. came forward and shook hands with me, offering me a few words of thanks for having come, and led me to a seat. These were the only words I heard him speak, although he welcomed several others in the same way as they arrived. He stood at the end of the room between the table and the sideboard with two friends beside him. Who these were I cannot remember, but they remained standing throughout the service. Robert Louis himself looked a pathetic figure as he stood there silent and apart. His thin, spare figure, his pale cheeks and his down-cast eyes, with his depressed and forlorn look, must have appealed to everyone present. One's heart felt drawn towards him with a sympathetic pity. Knowing as I did the story of his career and the anxiety he had been to the father now lying there so still, I felt sorry for him. He seemed to me a sad man 'thinking his own thoughts'; but this may have been merely my own thought, for of what he himself was thinking he gave no word or sign. When the service was ended we went to our respective carriages, and the solemn cortège moved slowly onwards to the cemetery."¹

¹ Dr. Robertson knew Mr. and Mrs. Thomas Stevenson intimately. It is interesting to note also that his brother-in-law was R. M. Ballantyne, the hero and model of the young Louis Stevenson.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

FAREWELL TO EDINBURGH AND TO BRITAIN

Stevenson caught cold, and was not allowed to accompany the funeral cortège on its short journey from Heriot Row to the new Calton cemetery. For three weeks he kept to the house, writing the tribute to his father which appeared in the *Contemporary Review* for June and is now included in the volume *Memories and Portraits*.¹ During his stay there was yet another consultation with doctors; and the oracles decided that he must quit Britain forthwith, either for Colorado or some hill-station in India. By the end of May he was able to return to Bournemouth, travelling from Princes Street station. Though he did not guess it, here too was an end. For on the city which meant so much to him, which was, in fact, an indelible, ineradicable part of his life, he was never again to set eyes. The great pilgrimage, the great exile had begun. From an open cab he took his last look at Princes Street, with its gardens just then putting on their summer bloom; at the gaunt, frowning rock he had so often tried to climb; at the castle where, from his nursery, he used with childish glee to hear the bugles blow. Heriot Row, Colinton, Swanston, the Braids, the Pentlands, all that once made home, were henceforth to be mere "shadow-shapes of memory." The train steamed out; and the place that knew him was to know him no more for ever. And Edinburgh, all unwitting, went her heedless way, never dreaming that she had lost her most illustrious son since Scott.

¹ Though Stevenson worked at 17 Heriot Row, he slept at 12 Walker Street, the residence of his uncle, Dr. George W. Balfour.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

For nearly three months longer he remained at Skerryvore. There was some work to be got out of hand, proofs of *Underwoods* and *Memories and Portraits* to be passed for press, and the final revision given to the *Memoir* of Fleeming Jenkin. All these things he did diligently to the last item, while preparations for departure went on about him. Then, work done, he turned to the grave problem of the future. In the course of family discussions of ways and means and prospects he expressed a wish that wherever he went his mother should go with him. For a moment she hesitated. She was getting old, verging on sixty; she had a home of her own, sacred to her now by innumerable ties and memories. Could she uproot everything—the habits, the possessions, the sentiments and associations of a lifetime? “I cannot and will not go without you, mother,” rejoined Louis. There was no more hesitation. “Very well, dear, I will go with you.” The brave mother who had never denied her boy anything, who had stood by him when all else were hostile, could not deny him *this*. So 17 Heriot Row was put into the hands of an agent; that too was going in the general cataclysm of things, leaving a horrid void; but Louis wanted her, and that was enough. It was fated she was to be with him almost continuously to the end.

Meanwhile Stevenson was suffering such blackness of depression as he had never before known. Once again striking tent to march at the word of Fate into the unknown, leaving the only home he had ever been able to call his own, a gift from him who was gone; and leaving it in such circumstances! Little wonder that gloom took possession of him. Nor was the gloom wholly, or perhaps

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

mainly, due to his own sad situation : I have already remarked that he was little given to remorse. He had always managed to keep conscience at bay ; but now, pricked by a hundred haggard and accusing memories of rebellion, of love, forgiveness, and overwhelming goodness, it had its way. Death, by making regrets unavailing, sharpens their sting. If only the dead could or would give us a chance to repent, to make atonement ; but the dead never forgive.

Of Stevenson in the depth of one of his black moods at Skerryvore Sir Sidney Colvin gives an unforgettable picture : " I had followed him from the house into the garden," writes Sir Sidney in his recent and very charming book, *Memories and Notes*. " He was leaning with his back to me looking out from the garden gate ; as he heard me approach he turned on me a face such as I never saw on him save that once—a face of utter despondency, nay, tragedy, upon which seemed stamped for one concentrated moment the expression of all he had ever had or might yet have in life to suffer or renounce. Such a countenance was not to be accosted, and I left him " ; surely a tragic glimpse of our laughing philosopher. Nor was the mood rare or surprising. He was supremely human, and to be human is sometimes to feel the cold clutch of despair. Stevenson would have been neither the man nor the writer he was had he been blind or insensible to human conditions and destinies, particularly when life's tragedies and ironies touched himself.

By the middle of August all was ready. The heavy packing was done ; Skerryvore was let ; there remained only a brief period of waiting and

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

farewell to the old home. On Saturday, the 20th, the family left for London, staying for convenience at a private hotel in the City—Arnfield's, Finsbury Circus. On Sunday, the 21st, Stevenson saw several of his friends—Henley, Mr. Colvin and others—and was hilariously gay. "If the world is a bad farce, by gaiety we make it a good one." So the comic mask was reassumed. His friends were both amazed and enchanted by his exuberant vivacity, not suspecting, perhaps, that it was in great part the reaction of hysteria. During the short stay he added a codicil to his will, not without difficulty in getting it executed in proper legal form. With equal difficulty he procured a copy of the only book he desired to take with him, Mr. Hardy's novel, *The Woodlanders*, a significant choice.

On Monday the party went on board the s.s. *Ludgate Hill*, at the Albert Dock, Tilbury. It consisted of Stevenson, his wife, his mother, his stepson, and Valentine Roch, a Swiss maid of remarkable intelligence, who many years later wrote some interesting reminiscences of her master.¹

Mr. Colvin, ever faithful, was there to say good-bye, and was the last of his English friends to shake hands with Stevenson. The parting over, the *Ludgate Hill* moved slowly from her berth and headed down-stream through the crowded shipping of the Thames. Stevenson stood on deck waving backward till his diminishing figure faded and was lost in a forest of masts and funnels.

¹ The *Ludgate Hill* had an exciting record. A ship of 4,000-5,000 tons, she sailed between London and New York with "assorted cargoes." She carried a few cabin passengers and some steerage. Later she passed from the Hill Line to the Allan Line, which in turn was absorbed by the Canadian Pacific Line. She saw service in the Great War, and as the *Levonia*, was, I understand, sunk by a submarine.

CHAPTER IV

HAIL, COLUMBIA !

FROM London the *Ludgate Hill* proceeded to Havre, where she took in an incongruously-assorted cargo of horses, cattle, and monkeys, the latter a consignment for an American menagerie. The ladies of the Stevenson party were shocked, first by the dirt and discomfort of the ship itself, and next by the mixture of pungent, pervasive odours from such a medley of livestock. Louis, however, disdained such trifling obstacles to enjoyment. Who drives fat oxen should himself be fat ; who preaches happiness should himself be happy. To be in character, Louis must needs take the novel experience as one more amusing incident in the joyous adventure of life. Stable-smells, he discovered, were " good for health," and if his samian fellow-travellers exhaled perfumes which in no wise suggested Araby, they were engagingly intelligent and companionable, one Jacko, a most discriminating ape, being wholly charming in his manners. Stevenson, indeed, found him far more agreeable than a certain nameless human passenger whom he promptly dubbed " the bore " because of his extreme loquacity. Unfortunately the bore has not left us his *per contra* opinion.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

The voyage began in delightful calm and sunshine ; but off the Irish coast the weather changed suddenly, and, in sailor-language, continued dirty throughout, with a harassing head-wind, at times increasing to a gale. Progress was slow, for a cattle-boat is not as an Atlantic liner that defies the storm and (barring accidents) keeps the time-table to a tide. Stevenson, always an excellent sailor, enjoyed the tossing ; as the phrase goes, he never missed a meal, and for the most part his spirits were keyed to concert-pitch. On board the *Devonia* he had worked with desperate energy, the need being desperate ; now he attempted no work of consequence ; but it is interesting to note that the dedication of *Memories and Portraits* to his mother, " In the name of past joy and present sorrow," is dated from the *Ludgate Hill*, " within sight of Cape Race." Early one morning he roused the whole party to see the Cape ; and they got soaked without seeing anything more capelike than the semblance of a cloud dimly outlined in the sogging mist. In that region of dank, swathing sea-fogs, clammy and penetrating almost as an Edinburgh haar, he caught cold, though his spirits remained undamped.

On Wednesday, September 7, the *Ludgate Hill* reached New York, and Stevenson landed in all the éclat of a miniature ovation. Mr. Low, representing American friends and admirers, was there to receive him and see him installed at the Hotel Victoria on Broadway and Twenty-seventh Street. There, by a graceful act of appreciation, the whole party were (unknown to themselves) the guests of Mr. Charles Fairchild, of Newport, Rhode Island, who, though unable to be present, welcomed Stevenson by telegram. At the steamer and the

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

hotel the now popular author was besieged by interviewers. For *Treasure Island*, *Kidnapped*, and especially *Jekyll and Hyde*, had carried his name with resounding reverberations across the Atlantic. The big American public was interested in him, and the enterprising reporter was there, alert, inquisitive, competent, to give the public embroidered details of the distinguished arrival. When the American reporter gets "hot on the trail" he is unrivalled in the art of comprehensive, picturesque, full-blooded portraiture. It is an art but feebly understood in England, where, with some signal exceptions, the Press still retains traces of a Puritan ancestry and practises an almost Quaker-like demureness of demeanour. In particular, it uses the personal note diffidently and with a certain air of apology, as though abashed by the sound of its own voice, or oppressed by the idea that personalities of all kinds are inconsistent with British traditions of reserve and good breeding. In America the personal note is as dominant as in the writings of Stevenson himself.

It was a happy conjunction, and as soon as he got his breath Stevenson talked with his usual engaging freedom. On their part the interviewers recognised the material for good "copy." The figure that caused a sensation in Bond Street would certainly not go unnoticed in Broadway or Fifth Avenue. Stevenson's appearance, in a word, was too good to be neglected, and the Press gentlemen, who tripped one another up on the steamer and carried the campaign into his bedroom at the hotel, provided their public with piquant and often romantic reading. His spidery figure, his un-British looks, his taste in clothes, his health,

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

his family, his antecedents, his plans, were all described in picturesque detail. One gem of description deserves immortality: "Mr. Stevenson has a classic head from which issues a hacking cough"—a touch of realism which moved the unappreciative Mr. Stevenson to an outburst of wrath and profanity.

Hospitality to the distinguished stranger is with America a concern of national honour; and, being both large-hearted and warm-hearted, she dispenses it with overwhelming generosity. The day after his arrival Stevenson was whirled off, in charge of Mr. Lloyd Osbourne and Valentine Roch, to be the guest of Mr. and Mrs. Fairchild at Newport. There he stayed a fortnight, mostly in bed; for to the cold caught off the Banks he added another caught on the journey to the beautiful New England resort, once the home of Bishop Berkeley. During his absence from New York a dramatised version of *Jekyll and Hyde* by T. R. Sullivan was presented at the Madison Square Theatre by Richard Mansfield, one of the most noted actors of the day.¹ The theatre was so packed that Stevenson's wife and mother, who were eager to see the performance, could scarcely gain admittance; but Mr. Sullivan came gracefully to the rescue by placing the author's box at their disposal. It is odd to reflect that, despite his intense interest in the drama, Stevenson never witnessed a performance of any dramatic adaptation of his stories by another hand or of any play of which he was himself part-author.

By the end of September he was back in New York, to experience all the raptures and some of

¹ Like Stevenson, Mansfield was a native of Edinburgh, the son of a Scottish clergyman who abhorred the stage.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

the inconveniences of popularity. The contrast with his experiences of eight years before must have been vividly and significantly in his mind. Then he had arrived forlorn, disowned, and almost destitute, on an adventure undertaken at the hazard of his life and the certain sacrifice (as it seemed) of nearly all that was dear to him in the past. With other immigrants he had gone trundling to the cheapest lodging-house to be found in the dreary region of the docks. Bitterer still to the pride and hope of the aspiring author, he had been turned, politely but firmly, from the doors of publishers and editors who would have none of the wares he offered. Now he returned in the character of a conquering hero, to find those same publishers and editors eager to have anything from his pen. Such is the magic of public appreciation.

His hotel became a temporary Mecca to the elect; and as was his free-and-easy custom, he received visitors in bed, amid the customary litter of pillows, papers, books, and cigarette-ends. Some were secretly scandalised by his rather blatant untidiness; more were charmed, and all were amazed, by his abounding vivacity. It seemed an incredible thing that the wasted, skeleton-like figure in the tattered, dabbled yellow dressing-gown, with a rug or blanket about his shoulders, should set an infectious example of sprightliness and gaiety. They did not understand that gaiety was his cue and bed his chosen place, since there he was free from the restraints of drawing-room manners and drawing-room clothes. He had, of course, to be mindful of his health; but in reality the sparkling invalid propped among pillows was in the nature of a dramatic piece of

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

stage-setting. Among those who were introduced to him by the loyal and helpful Mr. Low were Mr. Charles Scribner, of Charles Scribner's Sons, whose imprint is so pleasantly familiar to American readers, and E. L. Burlingame, then editor of *Scribner's Magazine*, both of whom were to become his intimate and valued friends. Another whom Mr. Low introduced was Augustus St. Gaudens, the distinguished sculptor, who paid Stevenson several visits to make studies for a bas-relief depicting the subject in bed, of which a medallion replica with slight modifications has been placed as a mural memorial in the High Kirk of St. Giles, Edinburgh.

Shrewdly aware of his new value, Burlingame invited Stevenson to contribute a series of twelve essays to twelve consecutive numbers of *Scribner's*, the remuneration to be \$3,500 (£700). More dazzling still, Mr. S. S. McClure, a man of large and generous imagination then at the beginning of his well-known newspaper enterprises, came a little later with an offer of \$8,000 (£1,600) for the serial rights of his next story; and to top the flowing tide, the New York *World* offered him \$10,000 (£2,000) for one article per week for a year. Here was fame materialising in dollars with dramatic suddenness. At last, then, at last "the dibbs," of which in the horrors and starvation of the Californian days he had written so pathetically to Henley, were coming in an avalanche of gold. A little light-headed, perhaps, from the intoxicating experience, he declared they were demoralising him. The prices offered were far too high for a modest author whose ambition in finance did not soar beyond a moderate competency.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Besides, all those eager editors, who came flourishing their cheque-books, were ludicrously over-estimating the value of his work. With the business man it is an axiom that an article is worth what it will fetch in the market ; but Stevenson, whose too sensitive conscience had boggled at the £40 paid by the *Pall Mall Gazette* for a drivelling short story, had another attack of artistic morality. Once again he " would be damned if he stole with his eyes open." His modesty was so far conquered that he accepted Burlingame's terms ; but the \$8,000 for a story, he insisted, should be cut down by half ; and with admirable judgment he waived the *World* temptation aside.

Regarding his own powers and limitations he was rarely mistaken. He was not a cloud-compeller with a genius equal to any task that might be suggested by interest or idolatry. He knew that an article every week for a great popular newspaper was beyond him. To attempt it would have been torture, and (as a later experiment was to prove) a grave menace both to his reputation and his self-respect. Yet the swelling flood that bore him upward so buoyantly and gloriously gave new and delicious sensations, and, being human, he was immensely elated. From a calculation of the payment made by *Scribner's*, I make out that the rate was roughly ten guineas per thousand words, not exorbitant as rates are now reckoned, but a delectable and inspiring contrast to the ten shillings of *Young Folks*. Thenceforward his rates were among the highest paid to popular writers of the day.

New York, with its enchantments, its incense and romance, was intoxicating ; but it was not to be

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

thought of as a permanent home. Undecided whither to turn, Stevenson was advised to try the Adirondacks, then coming into notice for the tonic qualities of their air. Mrs. Stevenson and her son were dispatched to spy out the land—with the result that a cottage, or, rather, part of one—the Baker Cottage, as it has come to be known—was rented at Saranac Lake. To the courtesy of Mr. Livingston Chapman, the devoted and energetic secretary of the Stevenson Society of America, I am indebted for the following interesting particulars of Stevenson's residence there :

STEVENSON AT SARANAC LAKE

“ Robert Louis Stevenson arrived in Saranac Lake October 3, 1887. His intention had been to go to Colorado, but ill health necessitated a change of plan. The work of Dr. Edward Livingston Trudeau in the outdoor treatment of tuberculosis had been received so favourably in the medical world, it was decided to make the trip to the Adirondack village. It was hardly even a village at that time. A more fitting classification would be ‘ hamlet.’ None of the residences or buildings of to-day were dreamed of then. The daily train did not come into the hamlet, but stopped at a station just outside. Conditions were naturally primitive, and, despite Stevenson's love of occasional gipsy life, travelling with a donkey, tempting Fate in canoe voyages, etc., the crudeness of things grated on him. It is no disrespect to the inhabitants of the little place to say that there was hardly anyone (aside from Dr. Trudeau) who was congenial to

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

him. The community was made up almost entirely of the pioneering type of person : men who hunted and trapped or who worked in the forests. There was, no doubt, a lack of interest on each side due to neither side really understanding the other. Men of the pioneering type are seldom in sympathy with those whose vocation is less strenuous than their own. Men of the artistic type, more keenly organised and of higher cultivation mentally, are not prone to find affinity with persons lacking in these qualities. Be this as it may, the fact remains that the villagers are said to have thought him 'queer,' and his evident unconcern about what they thought confirmed them in their appraisal of him.

"Despite his dislike of cold weather, the climate proved beneficial. The wonderful climate, with its health-giving properties, has since become a Mecca for victims of tuberculosis and has restored many to their places in the world. It was this clear, bracing air that Stevenson, wrapped in a buffalo-coat, used to breathe as he paced the verandah of the little cottage. His readers will recall (in 'The Genesis of Ballantrae') where he says, 'I was walking in the verandah of a small cottage outside the hamlet of Saranac. It was winter, the night was very dark, the air clear and cold, and sweet with the purity of forests. For the making of a story here were fine conditions.' "Come," said I to my engine, "let us make a tale." And in this cottage were written many of the essays published in *Scribner's Magazine* in 1888, including 'A Christmas Sermon,' 'The Lantern-Bearers,' 'Pulvis et Umbra,' 'Beggars,' 'Gentlemen,' 'A Chapter on Dreams,' and others. It has been said that

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Stevenson got his inspiration for the final chapters of *The Master of Ballantrae* from Saranac Lake scenery. These chapters were subsequently written at Honolulu, following a favourite custom of his—that of describing places when at a distance from them. The posthumous essay on 'The Genesis of Ballantrae' is interesting as well as enlightening in this particular.

"That Stevenson was not entirely out of sympathy with his surroundings is shown by touches here and there in letters to friends during the winter of 1887-8.

"As an offset to this, again, we have a number of instances where he rails at the cold and (sometimes) rain. But it should be taken into consideration that Stevenson preferred a mild climate to a cold one, regardless of the latter's beneficial effect on his health, and he was never really happy when the thermometer was registering low. The warmth and sunshine of the South Seas attracted him, but did not build him up as did the Adirondack period. Dr. Trudeau's invitations to visit and inspect the growing sanitarium (which has since attained great proportions) were declined with thanks. One recalls the well-known story of the doctor showing R. L. S. through the former's laboratory and displaying a test-tube in which tubercle bacillus was growing. The sight was repulsive to Stevenson and brought forth his remark: 'Trudeau, you are carrying a lantern at your belt, but the oil has a most disagreeable smell.'

"His case was what the doctors characterise as an arrested one. Although often weak and remaining in bed for a rest, he was not considered

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

seriously ill and had no active symptoms. During conversation he was alert physically as well as mentally, and the lively imagination that gave birth to his stories seemed to generate an enthusiasm that called for 'action.' Rising, sometimes almost springing from his seat, he would pace the floor, gesticulating, emphasising his exposition of the topic by waving his hands or an effective use of an eloquent forefinger. In moods of this nature the brilliancy of his thought and the quickness of his thought dominated the entire situation.

"He enjoyed skating, and the Adirondack winters gave ample opportunity for indulgence in that pastime. Mr. Charles Scribner writes: "I remember very well when Mr. Stevenson started from New York for the Adirondacks. We were anxious about him, but I recall the first direct word from him that came to me was a telegram for a pair of skates."

"The wooden mantelpiece in the living-room of the cottage at Saranac Lake shows several little burns from cigarettes laid down at times by R. L. S. when in the excitement of conversation. These traces hardly met the approval of the persons from whom he rented the house, and it is rather amusing, as well as unfortunate, that their recollections of him are more dominated by these incidents than by ones of more importance. His habit of smoking in bed was the cause on two or three occasions of damage to the sheets. This is joined to the foregoing 'offences' in the recollections mentioned. Smoking was not particularly good for him, but he enjoyed it (as his frequent rolling of long, thin cigarettes testified). His life-long friend, Will H.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Low, relates, in his delightful brochure entitled *Stevenson and Margarita*, a fruitless quest in later years for a certain brand of tobacco that had been a favourite with them.

“ An incident of Stevenson’s humour, leavened with indignation (or vice versa), is found in the note written by him regarding the flavour of some mutton which had been sent by the Saranac Lake butcher. At this time, as has been stated, there was no railway right into the village, and the freshness of supplies could not always be guaranteed. Thirty years later the recipient of the note presented it to the Stevenson Society. It reads : ‘ Mr. Robert Louis Stevenson presents his compliments to Mr. Oldfield, and begs to return him the remainder of a joint of mutton which he refuses either to eat or pay for. Fillet of beef had been ordered as far back as Monday. Mr. Stevenson can readily understand there might arise some difficulty in supplying that ; but at least Mr. Oldfield knew that Mr. S. would want something on Thursday ; and Mr. S. prefers to hope it was in error that Mr. O. sent him anything so perfectly uneatable as the joint of which he now has the pleasure to return him part.’ ”

The journey to Saranac by Plattsburg (where the party made a two days’ halt) and Loon Lake took them through a country which Mrs. Thomas Stevenson described as “ very like Perthshire as it may have been two hundred years ago.” The final stage of twenty-five miles was made in a pair-horse buggy over corduroy roads, a mode of travelling sometimes humorously recommended as a specific for liver-complaint. The season was the beginning of the Indian summer, when

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Nature, putting on her autumn splendour of colours, breathes richly of peace and plenty. Usually at that time the air is delightful ; but, as so often happened, Stevenson was unfortunate in weather. He was caught in a cold spell with gusty wind and drizzling rain ; but, muffled to the eyes, he completed the journey without ill effects.

The Baker Cottage, which for some six months was to be his home, was the property of Andy Baker, hunter and guide, who had retired into what was then " the Adirondack wilderness," and there in pioneer fashion built a shanty for himself and his wife. Painted a crude, glaring white, with violently-green shutters, and fitted with a capacious verandah, it stood high on a bluff, with hills behind and a river in front, exposed to all the winds that blew. Stevenson found the view entrancing, because it reminded him of Scotland and especially of the Highlands, though heather and peat-smoke were lacking. The accommodation was such as a primitive dwelling on the edge of the wilderness usually provides ; but by chance there was a small organ in the parlour, forming, as it were, a link with civilisation. As at Davos, Stevenson was glad to be beyond the rule of Mrs. Grundy. The few inhabitants, as Mr. Chapman remarks, found him " queer " ; but they were not censorious, and he was allowed to go his own way and consult his own tastes with no severer criticism than a stare or a smile.

The glories and genialities of the Indian summer were delightful. But Mrs. Stevenson, well knowing how fleeting they were, visited Montreal, on a return journey from her old home in Indianapolis, and

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

secured the indispensable family furs, with a buffalo-coat, astrachan cap, and other necessities, for Louis. And very soon they were needed. British readers who grumble at the British climate have little conception of the rigors of a North American or Canadian winter. In the north-west I have myself endured a temperature of fifty-eight degrees below zero—that is to say, some ninety degrees of frost. In such a temperature, with the wind blowing unchecked from the ice-fields of the Arctic zone, the sensation is as if an unseen hand were screwing a steel band tighter and ever tighter round the forehead. You freeze without knowing it, till some friendly passer-by accosts you genially with the remark: "Say, I guess your ear (or nose or cheek) is frozen." The remedy is an instant and vigorous rubbing with snow to restore circulation to the affected part; for a neglected frostbite may have grave and frightfully disfiguring consequences.

Saranac in the winter of 1887-8 had an exceptional spell of cold. Everything froze—water, milk, and even venison in the very process of cooking. One night Stevenson dreamed that a rat bit his ear; he woke to find his ear frostbitten. He complained that the fires radiated no heat, and the experienced Baker warned the family they would be "frizz dead" if they did not block up the chimneys to keep out the piercing, numbing air. Stevenson complained, too, of the expense in a land where cost five dollars to sneeze, fifty cents to blow your nose, and two dollars and a half to get a small box from the station. Nevertheless, he enjoyed the place, and on the whole benefited in health. He took walks, mostly alone, he skated, sometimes with Mr. Lloyd Osbourne, Mr. S. S. McClure, or other

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

visitor, and took drives in a "buck-board," an exhilarating American invention, and when frost and snow came, in a sleigh. Mr. McClure combined pleasure with business. Perceiving that present reputation gives enhanced value to past work, he arranged to run *The Black Arrow* in his syndicate under the altered title of *The Outlaws of Tunstall Forest* ; and he made other arrangements which were at once flattering and helpful to Stevenson.

All the while fresh work went on with surprising energy and regularity. Persistency tells, and Stevenson was heroically persistent. The forenoons he devoted to writing in the one tiny sitting-room or parlour, and such was the care not to disturb him that his mother, as she amusingly related, left her bedroom by the window instead of passing out the natural way through his workroom. From New York he had come with the *Scribner* contract in his pocket for a dozen articles or essays on whatever subjects he pleased ; and he set to work on them with consuming zeal. For here was an opportunity which not only meant an assured income for a year, but, sweeter still, perhaps, to preach favourite sermons over again, recast and re-embroidered, to a new and immensely-enlarged congregation. To-day dispassionately re-reading the essays in the volume *Across the Plains*, one realises afresh the ardour of the preacher, the man with the gospel which he was eager to thrust upon a world by no means hungering for spiritual manna. It is not at all necessary that sermons or homilies on morality should be original ; indeed, originality might be a grave defect, since in the nature of things they must deal with facts, experiences,

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

emotions, and aspirations as old and as common as humanity itself. True to this principle, those Saranac essays are rather illustrations of old tradition than new or independent contributions to ethical thought. Here and there we find suggestions of Jeremy Taylor, more of Sir Thomas Browne and his *Urn Burial*, big splashes of Hazlitt, with the spirit of Montaigne regnant. But if the sentiments are largely borrowed, the manner is everywhere typically Stevensonian.

The series opened with the highly-fanciful "Chapter on Dreams" and ended with "A Christman Sermon," itself the theme and inspiration of many another sermon. In view of the events which even then were casting their shadows before, it is worthy of note that Stevenson took the parting word from a "beautiful and manly poem" by Henley. Two of the intermediate essays, "The Lantern-Bearers" and "Pulvis et Umbra," have been much quoted and discussed as shining examples of Stevenson's brave, inspiring philosophy. In the former he draws on the inexhaustible memories of his boyhood by the seashore and the dunes of North Berwick, and, extracting the elements of romance, proceeds to a characteristic fling at peddling realists who would make both life and literature as grey and depressing as their own books. In the second he sets man, "the disease of agglutinated dust," against the awful immensities of the universe, not, however, to emphasise his insignificance (though that is done incidentally), but to prove his amazing courage and light-heartedness in face of a destiny that must overwhelm him in the end: "Poor soul, here for

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

so little, cast among so many hardships, filled with desires so incommensurate and inconsistent, savagely surrounded, savagely descended, irremediably condemned to prey upon his fellow-lives ; who should have blamed him if he had been of a piece with his destiny and a being merely barbarous ? And we look and behold him instead filled with imperfect virtues, infinitely childish, often admirably valiant, often touchingly kind ; sitting down amidst his momentary life to debate of right and wrong and the attributes of the 'Deity,' rising up to do battle for an egg, or die for an idea." That is not wholly borrowed ; there is something in it of the real, the inherent Stevenson : for he, more than most, was even then bearing himself valiantly, light-heartedly in face of a darkly-menacing fate.

But while he thundered from the pulpit he did not neglect fiction, which was becoming more and more profitable financially and more and more clearly marked as his future vocation. He recalled the germinal idea which came to him among the moors above Pitlochrie, and the scenery around Saranac brought, neither very fortunately nor happily, further suggestions. From such inspiration sprang *The Master of Ballantrae*, of which the first part was written in the Baker Cottage. At the same time he was able to revise a boyish story, written, with surprising vigour and fertility of invention, by Mr. Lloyd Osbourne. He thought so well of it that he gladly put his name to it as joint-author.

To absorption, lack of business methods, and a bad memory is attributable an incident which, as

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

he told Henley, made him appear "a kind of unintentional swindler." While in New York he had given Messrs. Scribner "power" over all his works in America. Oblivious of that little fact, he signed a fresh agreement with Mr. McClure. Complications inevitably followed; and, worse still, he felt himself to be guilty of an act which might well be construed as dishonourable. Dismayed and worried, he humbly explained the lapse of memory to Mr. Scribner, begging his forgiveness, and implored Mr. Burlingame to intercede. All's well that ends well. When the circumstances were understood, all differences were adjusted, leaving no shadow of imputation of bad faith on the part of Stevenson. In all such matters, indeed, he was scrupulously honourable, and if he made mistakes it was by pure inadvertence.

THE RUPTURE WITH HENLEY

During the six months' residence at Saranac there was much to inspirit and inspire. Health was again on the upward curve, power of work was at its highest, and there were exhilarating proofs of increasing popularity. The fighter had at last fairly conquered, established himself triumphantly before all the world. Yet, as by the ancient irony of the immortals, it was in the moment of victory that one of the unhappiest and certainly the most agitating event of his whole life happened—I mean the final quarrel with W. E. Henley. All the particulars—never hitherto published—are in my possession. It has been

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

stated, with an impressive air of authority, that the rupture came suddenly. That is a misstatement due in part to ignorance, in part to a desire to mystify and create an atmosphere of mystery. There is no mystery. What happened was the natural, it may even be said the inevitable, culmination of much that went before. It was merely one more example of cause and effect. As has been clearly shown in these pages, there had for years been recurrent tiffs, disputes, and even reproaches, sometimes arising out of differences of opinion and sentiment, but in the main from the subtle influences of personal dislikes. And, as so often happens in such matters, a quite trivial incident brought the last shattering explosion. The final cause was merely the match that set off the powder-magazine.

The facts, so far as they need be stated, are briefly these. Mrs. Katherine de Mattos, Stevenson's cousin and an intimate member of Henley's literary entourage, wrote a sort of fairy-story in which Henley was deeply interested, for which, indeed, he stood sponsor; but, to his disappointment and hers, it went the round of magazine editors in vain. It had been discussed without reserve while the Stevensons were yet in England; and, after repeated rejections, its author, in effect, remarked to Mrs. Stevenson, "There it is: I am done with it." The idea had taken Mrs. Stevenson's fancy; and, setting to work, she wrote a new story in which some of the old elements were utilised. It was successful. On its appearance Henley intervened. His letter, marked "Private and confidential," was dated

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

from Norton Place, Chiswick, on March 9, 1888, and began in the old familiar style, "Dear Boy." After jocular references to other matters, "gay, romantic, Bohemian," he remarked that he had read Mrs. Stevenson's story with "considerable amazement," claimed it as "Katherine's," and added he could not understand why there was "not a double signature." He ended with a request that his letter should not be shown "to *anybody*." Stevenson replied instantly to "My dear Henley," in a fury of anger. A grave, an abominable accusation had been made, and the offence was aggravated by a request for secrecy. If the charge had by any chance reached other ears, "a proper explanation and retraction" must be made. For the facts of the case he referred Henley to Mrs. de Mattos, and what she had said in his (Henley's) presence. As he could think of no appropriate ending, he signed his name without greeting of any kind. A second letter written in the same spirit followed immediately on another matter which gave offence. On the 7th of April and the 7th of May Henley wrote again, still to "My dear Lad," saying that he found Stevenson's letter "heart-breaking," that he really did not know whether to laugh or cry, and that the story had been mentioned casually. He reminded Stevenson, however, that twice before something of the same sort had happened; but protested that for his part the old friendship and affection remained unabated, and begged to be forgiven for what at worst was a mistake of judgment.

Forgiveness did not come, because, as Stevenson noted, while there were expressions of regret there

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

was no retraction. Thereupon he poured out his heart to Charles Baxter in a series of letters which, after all allowances are made, suggest the hysterical outpourings of a fevered, unbalanced brain. He had "forgiven and forgiven, forgotten and forgotten," and yet here he was struck again in an excess of "concocted bitterness." For those who were now assailing him he had done much in many ways, only to be treated with injustice and ingratitude. He complained of persistent unkindnesses which resulted in a serious illness; even the word "treachery" dropped from his embittered pen. Now, under this fresh "staggering attack," he was so wounded and worried he could not sleep except by recourse to opiates, and then only to be haunted by hideous nightmare dreams. His nerves were so shaken that the least cause of excitement—the arrival of a letter, for example—made him tremble "like a reed"; and in general he was so utterly miserable he wished he had died at Hyères while life still held some spice of happiness.

And there was yet another thorn in his side. Certain works of his, mostly in verse, which he did not wish to see the light, were in Henley's possession. These, for reasons which need not be repeated, he requested should be destroyed, and Henley had ignored the request. There were also numerous references to money, with certain suggestions, of which it need only be said that, in making them, Stevenson did not allow his anger and soreness to mar or obscure his spirit of chivalrous generosity. There were also letters from Mrs. R. L. Stevenson reiterating her husband's statements and sentiments, with an added bitterness

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

which shows how miserable, how savagely resentful she, too, was.

When the first passionate burst of rage was spent, Stevenson had an uneasy feeling that perhaps he had taken the affair too hotly. In that more human mood, as he called it, he expressed a desire to be scrupulously fair to Henley, and *sub rosa* actually defended him. "Lord, man! I can't help loving the man," he exclaimed after one of his bitterest passages. "I know his merit—damn him!" The change was partly due to the conviction, for which he gave reasons, that Henley was not wholly or even chiefly to blame; that other influences were at work; and there swelled up in him tender memories of the comrade who had stood so long beside him, and was now, it seemed, forsaking him. But the mischief was done. The old friendship, the old intimacies, were irrevocably riven asunder; and there was nothing for it but to accept the rupture as complete.

In judging these frenzies of the wounded spirit, it should in fairness be borne in mind that Stevenson always wrote to Baxter with absolute unreserve. Except, possibly, Mr. Colvin (who was kept out of the Henley quarrel), Baxter was now his oldest friend, and there were circumstances which made the intimacy peculiarly close. The letters abound in expressions of confidence and affection; and there are touching references to the vanished time when the two were "heartless young dogs" haunting the taverns of Edinburgh together. Now in his confusion and distress he turned, like a stricken child, to the companion of his youth who knew him so well and was ever so ready with

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

sympathy and help. He was unutterably sore and depressed—sore because of what he felt to be a false and cruel charge ; depressed because of the tragic severance from one who had been his boon associate in so many trials and adventures, and who, despite everything, still held a deep place in his affection. “To be wroth with one we love doth work like madness in the brain.” It was so with Stevenson. In such moods we are all apt to exaggerate ; and if we are blessed (or cursed) with sensibility, passion, imagination, and the gift of expression, our madness is not unlikely to run away with us. One thing is certain, that the parting with Henley caused Stevenson the most poignant distress. Another thing is equally certain, that the parting was the result of no sudden explosion or fit of temper, but of a long sequence of antecedent events. Such are the facts briefly and impartially presented. Upon the issues involved judgment may be left to the impartial reader.

Towards the end of March, the 26th, to be exact, Mrs. R. L. Stevenson left Saranac for San Francisco (whence her letters relating to the Henley quarrel are dated), and on the 16th of April the other members of the family followed to New York. There they stayed at their old quarters, the Hotel St. Stephens, East Eleventh Street. Again Stevenson found gratifying proofs of appreciation and popularity. Admirers called in a steady stream, many of them carrying gifts of costly flowers, which (the recipient being generally in bed) turned his bedroom into a miniature conservatory. But he was also “out and about” more than formerly. One memorable experience just then

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

was a talk of several hours on a bench in Washington Square with Mark Twain (Samuel L. Clemens), for whose adventure-stories he professed an envious admiration. Never a city bird, however, he soon grew tired of New York, and there were circumstances, of which his friends knew nothing, to make him restless. At the suggestion of Mr. Low the party left on April 30 for Monasquan, the well-known New Jersey resort, where they stayed for the month of May at the Union Boarding-house.

All through that time Stevenson seemed the very incarnation of high spirits. Success, long delayed, had come with a rush, and he appeared to be enjoying it with a gleeful exuberance that was not merely boyish, but impish. His talk, his movements, his whole bearing, had the exhilaration of victory. With Mark Twain he discussed *Huckleberry Finn* and the art of comic adventure as if he had no other thought ; with equal zest he helped young Lloyd Osbourne to sail a cat-boat at Monasquan, and delighted Mr. Low, St. Gaudens, and other visitors with the overflowing vivacity of his talk. To correspondents in Britain, too, other than Charles Baxter, he wrote in a vein of abounding gaiety and buoyancy. Yet all the while he was as one living and moving in a nightmare which made life a terror and a misery. Do what he would, it was impossible to get rid of that haunting shadow which turned everything black. In sunlight and in contact with others he might, by an effort of will, disregard it and appear to be at ease ; but in the watches of the night, when terrors enlarge themselves spectrally, it came back like an evil spirit to darken and torment. Long before, Henley detected in him

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

much of Hamlet. Now he was all Hamlet with his
"To be or not to be."

. . . To die, to sleep !
No more, and by a sleep to say we end
The heart-ache and the thousand natural shocks
That flesh is heir to, 'tis a consummation
Devoutly to be wished.

It was a consummation then very suggestively present to Stevenson's mind. "This business," he told Baxter, "is my head-stone."

The series of letters began at Saranac and continued from New York and Monasquan. On May 21 his mother noted in her diary that "Louis gets some worrying letters, which upset and depress him very much," but gave no clue to their contents. His desire now was to get away to sea. Letters could not follow him there and the evil spell might be broken. The idea of a cruise among South Sea Islands had already been discussed at Saranac, and Mr. McClure, with a shrewd eye to business, was eager to have a series of descriptive articles by Stevenson for his newspaper syndicate, the price to be \$10,000. There were financial difficulties, however. But Stevenson was so depressed, so sick at heart and miserable, that he must get off somewhere at once or die.

Meanwhile, in San Francisco, Mrs. Stevenson was actively making inquiries, and one day there came a thrilling telegram stating that for \$750 a month she could secure a yacht which could be ready for sea in ten days. "Take it," replied Stevenson, "and expect us in ten days." The yacht was the *Casco*, seventy-four tons register, the first to be chartered on several such adventures. To obviate delay, funds were obtained from

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Edinburgh, supplemented, I understand, by an advance from Mr. McClure in part-payment of the forthcoming articles. Upon his father's death Stevenson was entitled to a sum of £3,000. Two-thirds of that sum he drew, explaining to Charles Baxter, who now had charge of his affairs, that he reckoned the amount would be sufficient to carry him over seven months. If the McClure proposals materialised satisfactorily, he hoped the proceeds would replace the spent capital. Moreover, he hoped to finish *The Master of Ballantrae* in six weeks on ship-board, and there were other projects in prospect. If his scheme failed, then the £2,000 would be gone ; that was all.

For himself he scarcely cared what happened. Probably it would be best if the *Casco* went down with him ; only there were others to be considered. With the dream of a lifetime realised in the forthcoming cruise, he could not help repeating, "Would to God I had died at Hyères !" Such was the mood in which he prepared for his long-planned, much-dreamed-of adventure among the enchantments of the tropics. Generally he is represented as embarking on the *Casco* in a bounding exhilaration of spirits. To give any such impression is utterly untrue to fact. The naked truth is that he was in the depths of a despondency which not merely robbed life of warmth and colour and incentive, but killed hope itself. Yet, in justice to all concerned, it must be put on record that even then he paid an eloquent tribute to the chivalry, loyalty, and rich temperament of Henley. The loyalty, alas ! had gone awry ; but deep down the old appreciation, the old intense fellow-feeling remained.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

WHO WAS TO BLAME ?

Henley, on his part, gave little or no sign. As all the world knows, he later wrote an article which has been denounced as a wanton attack on the memory of a dead comrade. Perhaps he had been wiser to consume his own smoke in silence. Anger, though a gift of the gods and an attribute of all great and good men, is not always in season, or always appropriate. As the wise man long ago divined, there is a time to be angry and a time to forbear being angry. Forbearance, however, was never Henley's ruling virtue. He was intolerant of humbug, of falsehood, and especially of fatuity run mad. In the case of Stevenson he tried to introduce some leaven of sanity and common sense into what he conceived to be a fatuously-engineered campaign of canonisation ; and the idolators turned on him savagely—as their way is. He was jealous, vindictive, churlish, and could not bear to see his old companion of Grub Street as the triumphant writer, adored and caressed by a world of worshippers.

The charge is ridiculously untrue. During his later time in and around London it was my privilege to know Henley with some intimacy. I retain grateful memories of his generosity, his readiness to recognise and aid a beginner. I have scores of letters from him, too, some mere hurried notes, others long and intimate, discussing and criticising all manner of men and subjects. They contain many pungent passages : he could not help being pungent ; but of meanness, jealousy, or rancour there is neither trace nor suggestion.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Of the early Stevenson, the gay and gallant soldier of fortune by whose side he had fought, he always spoke with admiration and affection ; the later Stevenson, canonised, all but deified, he refused to recognise as the man he once knew so closely.

It happened, moreover, that I was in touch with him when he was actually engaged in writing the peccant article which appeared in the *Pall Mall Magazine* for December, 1901. Ostensibly a review of a book, it is in reality a character-sketch done with the pen of a Tacitus. Partisans with a case to make seized upon it as a piece of spiteful depreciation done in a fit of ghoulish exultation, a passion of revenge that gluttled itself by dancing like a savage on the corpse of a fallen enemy. Nothing could be farther from the truth. In writing his article, Henley was in fact lacerating his own heart. His first resolution was to remain silent, to let the shouting and the rioting of sentimental or ignorant adulation pass unnoticed. But, as the one competent man alive who knew Stevenson to the core, he was urged to write, and after much dubitation he consented. Being what he was, he told the truth as he knew it, or as much of the truth as could be put into a magazine article. Read dispassionately to-day, his paper will be found, not an aspersion on Stevenson, but a protest against the fatuity of those who would make him out a "seraph in chocolate" and crown him with the halo of infallibility.

Let it be said once for all that it was not Stevenson's glittering success which provoked Henley's scorn ; for to that success he had himself materially contributed. Nor was it the vaunted

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

friendship with barbaric kings or the much-advertised retinue and sultan-like splendour of Vailima. Such a spirit would deserve nothing but contempt, and Henley was never contemptible. Stevenson might be rich and great and glorious, and Henley would have hurrahed and thrown his cap in the air with the rest. But he could not obliterate memories of the past or the knowledge of what had been. And, remembering, he refused to accept as genuine the celestial figure now presented for his adoration—a figure radiant as a young god, whose feet had never touched mire, whose dazzling robes of purest glory were never sullied by any human frailty, any stain of human grossness or folly. Hyperion for a satyr! It was too much. He revolted, not against his old comrade, not against the Stevenson he “knew and loved,” but against the grotesque apotheosis, the attempt to foist on the public imagination a paragon of flawless beauty and immaculate virtue.

There was another thing. In some quarters Stevenson was posed as the benevolent patron, the shining, beneficent Apollo graciously condescending upon a maimed and stricken man whom he had picked up in an Edinburgh hospital and who lacked the grace to be grateful for benefits bestowed. Henley resented the imputation, as any man of spirit would. I say so much because it chances that I know something of Henley's state of mind and the circumstances in which his article was written. Unhappily it was his farewell. He hoped to return to the subject, when a fuller statement would have brought out what it has remained for me to tell. But the infirmities of premature old

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

age were upon him ; the end was near, and he died leaving much unsaid.

FLEEING FROM SPECTRES

On May 28 Stevenson, with his mother, Mr. Lloyd Osbourne, and Valentine Roch, returned to New York, meaning to proceed at once across-continent to California. But Louis caught cold, and the start was delayed till June 2. The journey this time was not by emigrant-train in the company of brutally-unsympathetic men, but by *train de luxe*, at any rate as far as Chicago. At Sacramento Mrs. R. L. Stevenson met the party, and on the 7th they reached San Francisco. Thoughts of the past swept back upon Stevenson. The blackest days of his life were passed in that gay, bustling, flamboyant metropolis of the West. Amid her plenty, her riot of luxuries, he had starved ; amid her whirling pleasures he had been lonely, miserable, sick to the point of death. The best he could afford was a wretched room in Bush Street, with the husks of the stranded prodigal son for fare. Two ounces of food a day and such comfort as the destitute know—that had been his lot then. Now it was the elegance and rich fare of the Occidental Hotel, in Montgomery Street, one of the best in the city.¹

And he came, a famous man, to take possession of a rich man's pleasure-yacht. It was a romantic and dramatic change ; yet he had little enough heart to enjoy his shining fortune. For he was still

¹ Burned down in the great fire that followed the earthquake of 1906.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

wrapped in that black, cold, desolating cloud which his bosom friend had, as he thought, cruelly flung about him. Moreover, his wife's sentiments, a perplexing mixture of fury and despair, did not tend to tranquillity. He spent much of his time in bed, not caring to go round the city. But he took his mother to see his old quarters in Bush Street, only to find that both the house and the landlady, Mrs. Carson, were gone. She was discovered, however, and met her old lodger at his hotel, with what thoughts may be imagined.

The owner of the *Casco* was Dr. Merrit, of Oakland, reputedly a millionaire, who had fitted her out for his own pleasure with costly magnificence of polished upholstery, silks, velvets, Brussels carpets, and a wealth of gleaming metal. The report had reached him that Stevenson was "a long-haired crank," and, disliking the whole species, he wished to have the bargain "called off." But an interview at the Occidental brought a change of mind, and the transaction was carried out as originally agreed. A trusted skipper, Captain Otis, who began with a similar prejudice, was engaged, to become, as it turned out, friend as well as skipper, and later to figure as Nare in *The Wrecker*. The crew consisted of four men—three Swedes and a Finn—with a Chinaman as supernumerary. Stevenson found a certain pleasurable excitement in ordering stores and visiting the *Casco* to superintend preparations. For the sake of fresh air he sometimes slept on the yacht, and on the 20th the whole party went on board. By the 26th all was shipshape. On the 27th the *Casco* was towed across the bay from Oakland to the North Beach under Telegraph Hill, where she anchored for the night.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Next morning, the 28th, with the first streak of dawn, towed by the tug *Pelican*, she passed outward bound through the Golden Gate, bearing Robert Louis Stevenson for ever from all the lands he knew.

CHAPTER V

ULYSSES

STEVENSON was much at home on the sea. The brine, as he said, was in his blood, a heritage from the Broughty Ferry skipper and the lighthouse-builders who had braved the fury of the elements on many a perilous coast. He loved adventure as they loved it, as the enterprising French *émigré* must have loved it, as John Blair of Ardblair loved it when he sought out his enemy to take vengeance even in the kirk on Sunday. And here was adventure spiced with romance, of the most enchanting kind. It was a joy, therefore, to be afloat ; and in a very particular sense it was a relief as well. For on stepping aboard the *Casco* he was as one fleeing from spectres. Here, beyond reach of "man's inhumanity to man," his perturbed spirit might find some measure of forgetfulness and peace. The sea, in fact, was his only hope of regaining self-possession, escaping from the torments which he could not shake off on land. And by degrees they faded into the background of memory. Not that he forgot those terrible letters from Chiswick or the emotional havoc they wrought. But as the *Casco* spread her white wings to the favouring wind and bore him nearer and nearer the tropic isles of his boyish

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

dreams, he thought less and less of the past and more and more of the future.

The present, too, had its vivid interests despite the monotony of life on ship-board. There was the diversion of watching the pilot-birds and boatswain-birds, flying-fish and stray whales. It was exciting also to catch the first glimpse of the Southern Cross hung aloft the night like a glittering beacon. "Nothing," says the great Humboldt, "awakens in the traveller a livelier remembrance of the immense distance by which he is separated from his country than the aspect of an unknown firmament," and the passing from one hemisphere to another. And for the man accustomed to northern latitudes, to the clammy haars and piercing east winds of Edinburgh, to the snows of Switzerland and of Saranac, it was a delicious novelty to divest himself of all save shirt and trousers and tramp the warm deck with bare feet.

Progress was, of course, erratic. There were long calms when the *Casco*, a speck on an illimitable glassy expanse, lay as idly as "a painted ship upon a painted ocean." At other times there were gales when she danced giddily and raced under bare poles or with half her canvas set. She was a clean, swift craft, in reality built for racing, and occasionally swam too much with her "lee rail in the sea" for amateur sailors. But Captain Otis knew her qualities, knew how after every toss and plunge she would rise, cresting the waves lightly as a sea-bird and shaking the water from her gleaming sides as in sheer glee. Stevenson worked little; for once he was not in the working vein; but he had books, *The Woodlanders* among them, and in the intervals

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

of knitting his mother read Gibbon's *Decline and Fall* aloud.

Once out of the doldrums and into the trade-winds the *Casco* sped at a spanking pace, under a burning sky by day and the gorgeous southern stars by night. Stevenson often stood on deck gazing at them raptly, with thoughts of their everlasting duration and his own fleeting insignificance. Something of the feeling which he attributes to the Princess in *Otto* in her forest flight took possession of him. A great peace seemed to bathe his soul. That quarrel with Henley which had caused him so much misery, what did it matter? Both Henley and he would so soon cease to be, while those "patins of bright gold" would shine on for generation after generation of gazers. He remembered the philosophy of his favourite Marcus Aurelius, and for a little while at least was at peace.

Early on the morning of July 20 he roused the company with the excited and exciting cry of "land." Two clouds were dimly visible on the horizon; Hunhauna and Nukahiva; and by evening the *Casco* was swinging at anchor in the Bay of Anaho, off the latter island. He was in the region of a new kind of romance; for this was the scene, or part of the scene, of Herman Melville's entrancing South Sea story, *Typee*. A German named Regler, the only white man on the island, immediately went on board the *Casco* with courteous offers of help, and took the captain off in a native canoe to secure supplies of fresh food—milk, chickens, fruit, to which later was added "deliciously" tender pork. The young chief, Taipikikino, also welcomed the strangers; he was extremely handsome and proved very agreeable,

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

laughed good-humouredly at everything, and, remembering (for he was not without some tincture of culture) that handshaking was a civilised custom, punctiliously shook hands with each member of the party. Doubtless he understood the value of first impressions.

The effect on Stevenson of that first contact with picturesque heathendom is described with his customary gusto in the opening chapter of *In the South Seas*. To Mr. Colvin he complained humourously that it was "all a swindle." He had come so far to see the noble savage in his noble, savage state; and, lo! a population "more civilised than we." One example of civilised ways came pertinently home. With an up-to-date eye to business, natives crowded round the *Casco* to sell bananas, oranges, and other wares. The strangers shook their heads over the prices asked, whereupon one of the vendors, with a refined, smiling sarcasm worthy of the most highly bred cynic, remarked that the *Casco* was a very fine ship, but it was a pity she had so little money on board. Could London or Paris have done better?

Until a date little anterior to 1888, the highly-civilised population of Nukahiva had observed the rites of cannibalism as part of the routine of life, and it was suspected had still a lingering fondness for "long pig" on the sly. One celebrated visitor, Kooamua, a sort of Polynesian Rob Roy, greatly took Stevenson's fancy. He was now a model of respectability, living a hale, influential old age in a European house, where from time to time he entertained the French Governor in regal style. Yet not many years earlier this "amiable old gentleman," with the soft, almost cooing manner, "ate

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

his enemies as he walked home from killing 'em," and gloried in the exhibition. "So does Kooamua to his enemies!" he would cry exultantly as he strode, gory and ferocious, along the beach at Anaho, alternately flourishing and munching a dead man's arm. In his later regenerate state Stevenson described him as a "perfect gentleman."

Once Newman eloquently defined the attributes which might entitle one to that high distinction. It would have been a nice question for that accomplished casuist whether a man who kills and eats his neighbour as though he were lawful game may still deserve the title of gentleman. Perhaps it is no more a transgression of the laws of humanity to pot a fellow-man than is the manly, womanly sport of hunting a tame deer till it drops, and then exult as it is torn to pieces by dogs. Stevenson, at any rate, was charmed. The ex-cannibal, who probably could not help looking with fond eyes on the young and plump, was delightfully amiable and polite. No doubt the strange white man was safe; the least-discriminating cannibal would have turned from the lean, cadaverous, juiceless Stevenson with disdain.

Under the firm rule of France cannibalism had gone out of fashion. Moreover, French priests came with the ameliorating influences of the Church; and although they complained that the islanders had no spiritual life, the outward amenities of civilisation were meticulously observed. Like nearly all primitive peoples, they were sociable and hospitable. They gave native dances in honour of the white visitors, carried gifts of flowers and fruit to the *Casco*, and were filled with childish glee on getting ship's biscuits, jam, and bits of ribbon in

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

return. There came, too, the exciting throb of the war-drum ; for at Raiata (Society Islands) there was red rebellion and the chiefs were holding councils of war. It was Stevenson's first taste of Polynesian politics, which later absorbed so much of his time and energy, with dubious advantage to his reputation.

Three weeks the party remained at Anaho, enjoying a delectable hospitality, revelling in sunshine, bathing, gathering shells, and studying a new race. Then they sailed round to Taiohae, on the southern side, where Stevenson made his first acquaintance with missionaries. But the real interest lay in ceremonial visits to and by the celebrated cannibal Queen Vaekehu, a singular personality, of whom Stevenson has left a vivid picture. Tattooed from head to foot, she was " perhaps the greatest masterpiece of that art " then extant. The Roman Catholic bishop, Dordillon, noted in those parts for his zeal and humanity, sought her out and by the arts of Mother Church induced her to enter the fold. But prior to conversion, with its subsequent primeness, " her leg was one of the sights of Taiohae." Few ladies of any age or clime ever crowded into a single life more high romance, more thrilling adventure. In her youth she had been a beauty and she had been important. Renowned warriors fought for her, as so many centuries before they fought for Helen of Troy ; and, more or less like the ineffable Helen, she was passed from husband to husband, or captor to captor, as chance and the fortune of battle befell.

Moreover, in that gay old time she had looked with relish on cannibal orgies ; indeed, the strong white teeth were often red with the blood of men.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Now she lived primly in a neat wooden house, and received visitors, European fashion, with more than European politeness. Stevenson wondered, as well he might, whether in the peace and piety of the new life she ever "regretted and aspired after" the old, with its stir and colour. Questioned on the subject, her son, Stenilas, replied succinctly, "Ah! She is religious." The provident bishop may have provided safeguards for conscience (supposing that troublesome monitor to have existed); at any rate, there was no sign that the devout convert was ever haunted by the ghosts of those on whom she had feasted, or that her appetite was at all impaired by remorse. Stevenson was immensely impressed. It was weirdly strange to sit at table with a lady who had once, so to speak, kept "cold missionary on the sideboard." He may have shuddered, but he could not help being interested.

A month the novel hospitalities and felicities of Nukahiva lasted. Then early on the morning of August 22 the *Casco* put to sea again, carrying a new mate who was acquainted with those treacherous waters to act as pilot. The next objective was Tahiti; but Stevenson, who ever found the lure of adventure irresistible, insisted that the course should be set through the dangerous channel of the Bordelais Straits for Hiva-oa; and after some thirty-six hours of risky sailing they put into Taa-hauka, the so-called port of that lonely and depopulated island. There a stay of ten days sufficed.

By September 4 they were off again, this time for Fakarava, which was reached on the 9th after a "very difficult and dangerous" passage among the coral reefs of the Paumotus Archipelago, reefs which might at any moment rip open the fragile shell

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

of the *Casco*. The British reader may have some faint idea of the peril by picturing a strange ship among the jagged rocks off the coast of the Channel Islands, in the neighbourhood of the Casquets and Jersey, with little guidance from maps and no light-houses to flash a warning. The currents, too, were strong and unknown. Indeed, when land was sighted after leaving Taahauka, it was found that bearings had been lost ; and the *Casco* had to lie to within sight and sound of breakers which, had she run on in the dark, would have splintered her to matchwood. Next day, however, she was safely in the lagoon which serves as harbour for Fakarava. There a stay of three weeks was made, Stevenson and his wife occupying a small house in a cluster of palms.

Stevenson found the interest of the new scenes "incredible" ; he had never dreamed, he told Mr. Colvin, there were "such places and such races." In the same letter he sent love to Henry James, Henley, and other old friends. The thought of Henley still haunted him. Even the magic of tropic isles, corals, palms, sunshine, and primitive races could not banish or obliterate it. Early in October they reached Papeete, the capital of the Society Islands, and again Stevenson was charmed. The climate of Tahiti, he found, was the climate of Paradise. But his joy was short-lived. At Fakarava he caught cold, and now alarming symptoms developed. Thinking Papeete did not suit him, he ordered the *Casco* to be taken round to Taravao, on the south side of the island, and in the short passage was nearly wrecked. It was useless. The cold became a fever, and the fever speedily declared itself as congestion of the lungs. He

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

was on the verge of collapse, with no medical aid available. If he were not to die in that lonely spot, something must be done, and at once. But what ?

DUSKY ROYALTIES

With the energy and practical ability which always distinguished her in an emergency, his wife went ashore to seek help, and after frantic searching found a Chinaman who owned a wagon and a pair of horses. She instantly engaged them ; and Stevenson was taken to Tautira, a village sixteen miles distant, over roads which, in a springless vehicle, caused him excruciating torture. There, with some difficulty and at an exorbitant rent, a house was procured and he was put to bed in a state of collapse. But the good fairy of romance was still with him. Hearing that a sick white man had arrived in the village, the ex-Queen of Raiatea, Princess Moë, hastened to him, saw his danger, and did what she could for him with raw fish salads and other dainties. According to Mrs. Stevenson, she saved his life. Her goodness and his gratitude are celebrated in the graceful poem, "To an Island Princess." Something magical had happened. He lay in a stupor, opened his eyes, and behold there—

Generous and helpful, wise and good
The Fairy Princess Moë stood.¹

¹ To goodness and generosity the Princess Moë added a charming personality. It is scarcely necessary to remind the reader that she is immortalised in the pages of *Pierre Loti*.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Nor was the beneficent fairy content merely to be physician and nurse to the interesting invalid, she must provide him with fit lodging as well. Though her regal state was no more, she still retained rights of lordship over the persons and property of others, among them a petty chief, Ori-a-Ori, a clan-name which must have transported Stevenson back to the Highlands and Highland history. In the exercise of her rights the Princess commandeered the chief's quarters and there installed Stevenson and his party as her guests, a hospitable patriarchal proceeding suggestive of Biblical usage. In that delightful retreat, under the care of "a beautiful brown princess," Stevenson quickly regained strength.

He found Tautira an "earthly heaven," but a heaven, alas! tainted by the intrusion of a sordid outer world. The old problems of finance were much with him. At Tautira there were no letters and no accounts to disturb him; but on reaching Honolulu he expected a home mail and "a devil of an awakening." Meanwhile, however, as he informed his agent, Charles Baxter, he dreamed luxuriously "in the full lustre of millions." The people took him to be the "richest son of man" who ever visited Tautira; and, true to his own creed of happiness, he revelled in the novel, delicious sensation of passing as a millionaire. A debtor's jail, as he humorously suggested, lay ahead; but in the meantime it was great fun to have the reputation of unbounded riches.

Once more, through Baxter, he sent a message to W. E. Henley. He played the flageolet for the entertainment of Ori, talked of Henley's musical

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

accomplishments, and he wished Henley to know. Those repeated messages to his old unforgettable comrade have an infinite pathos. Chiswick was more than ten thousand miles away ; the past was gone ; the old friendship severed for ever. Moreover, the new life was full of novelty, adventure, and romance, to absorb and uplift. On every hand new scenes, new peoples, new manners and customs engaged his attention. Yet he could not get away from the quarrel with Henley and its consequences. While he studied picturesque natives in their primal simplicity ; while he listened to the booming of surf on coral reefs and took shelter from a blazing sun in the thick shade of palms ; while he gazed at the nightly miracle of the southern sky ; ay, and even while he was seemingly engrossed with his beautiful brown princess, his thoughts were back in a small house at Chiswick with the man of all men who knew him best. Fifteen years earlier he vaunted himself on an easy indifference to the sentiments and feelings of others ; but he found it impossible to be indifferent now. It is not too much to say that the vision of Henley's averted face in the far North poisoned all the joys of the odorous, gorgeous, seductive South.

It added to his unhappiness, his brooding misery, that from those about him he had to conceal his black mood. To have secrets which dare not be imparted is to nurse a scorpion in the breast. Stevenson suffered, smiled, and held his peace. For merely to mention Henley to his wife would be to pile fat on a smouldering fire. She hated Henley and all his circle with an intensity of hatred which, on the slightest chance remark, blazed into a fury of malediction. In temperament husband and wife

· ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

were poles apart. Throughout his whole strange life Stevenson, so far as I can discover, was not guilty of a single act of vindictiveness. In his queer, complex composition there was not an atom of the cad. Though so often strangely overlaid, chivalry was a basic quality of his character ; often he was quixotically generous ; and for Henley he certainly harboured no vengeful feelings. But he had learned the value and the convenience of judicious silence. There are occasions when the line of least resistance is the best policy.

At Tautira, therefore, he gave himself, heart and soul, as appeared, to the enjoyment of his privileges as the guest of royalty and the novel experiences of a life little trammelled by the forms and insincerities of civilisation. He took pains to be captivating, and was triumphantly successful. Charmed with her white protégé, the Princess Moë made his pleasure her own particular care. For his entertainment she organised native dances and exhibitions of native song ; and, like the gallant cavalier poet he was, he repaid her handsomely in verse which she cherished with adoration. Ori-a-Ori, a handsome, gigantic, yellow-haired heathen with a laugh that might have resounded straight from the pages of the Iliad, was equally enchanted. He heard of Henley's skill as a musician, and was moved to envy. More entrancing still were the mutual recitals of folk-lore and clan history. Stevenson captivated Ori with rousing tales of Highland clansmen and their feats of valour ; and in return Ori told no less rousing tales of island bravery, tales which were often mere variants of Northern sagas, so similar is human nature and human experience the wide world over. In that pleasant manner of

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

give and take Stevenson got much valuable "copy" for his book on the South Seas.

The habit of work, temporarily in abeyance, returned and he took up *The Master of Ballantrae*, adding several chapters; but conditions were not favourable for the concentration essential in creative work, and again it was laid aside. Turning to verse as an easier exercise, he wrote the ballad "The Feast of Famine," and most of "The Song of Rohero," both vigorous pieces of narrative, but scarcely distinguished by high poetic quality. Thus, with little work and much play, nine weeks passed like an exquisite dream of Eden realised. But the time for moving on came; and the *Casco*, which had remained at Taravao for repairs, was brought round (nearly foundering in a gale) to take the party on board.

Then an event happened which Thomas Stevenson would certainly have taken as a direct intervention of Providence. In appreciation of kindnesses received, the elder Mrs. Stevenson entertained a company of some thirty women and a few children on the yacht. The entertainment ended, and speeches and compliments made, an aged woman of the party prayed for the safety of the ship and all she carried. In particular she prayed that, if there were any defects in the vessel, they might be discovered before she put to sea or ran into danger. When the visitors were gone, Captain Otis, sailor-fashion, appears to have made a contemptuous reference to "praying, psalm-singing natives" and their absurd petitions. The *Casco*, the beautiful silver ship, as her wealth of glittering metal led admiring natives at Fakarava to call her, was sound in every timber and perfectly seaworthy.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

To prove his words he tested the mainmast, and lo ! to his horror and dismay, it was crumbling in the last stages of dry rot. It had, in fact, been unsafe throughout the whole voyage from San Francisco, and the miracle was that it had not long ago gone by the board in a gale.

Immediate departure was now impossible. The *Casco* must be refitted ; and under reefed mainsail she was with some difficulty taken to Papeete. New spars being unprocurable, the old ones were patched up. But there were unforeseen delays ; stormy weather set in and communication between Papeete and Tautira was cut off. Meanwhile a critical situation developed for the stranded travellers. The *Casco* became due, overdue, and did not return. The stores of food, landed for a brief residence, ran short ; worse still, funds gave out. Day followed day in anxious watching, and still the *Casco* did not appear. Pleasure gave place to anxiety ; anxiety to despair. The trim little craft must have gone down, and they were marooned. It was very short short-comings, or the charity of Ori-a-Ori. Stevenson, despite his studied blitheness, looked troubled ; his wife was in tears ; the rest of the company managed their feelings as they could. Ori-a-Ori saw, understood, and generously stepped into the breach. " My brother," he said to Stevenson, " why be troubled ? Is not all I have thine ? " Nor was he content with mere hospitality. Against all advice and persuasion, he went off with four of his young men in a crazy boat, half canoe, half whaler, got somehow to Papeete, and brought back news of the *Casco*, with supplies of food and money. To celebrate deliverance, a great feast followed at which Ori-a-Ori got merry on champagne, jubilantly

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

declaring it to be the drink of kings. Learning its cost, however, he was cured of any further desire for indulgence.

HOME SICKNESS

To Stevenson the period of waiting was acutely trying. Restless, impatient, and secretly gloomy, his thoughts took a backward turn, bringing a sharp attack of home-sickness. Tautira might be heaven; the South Sea breezes might be fragrant and warm; but he longed for the whistle of the wind off the Pentlands or Arthur's Seat, the splash of spring rain in Princes Street, or even a whiff of the murky atmosphere of the High Street or the Grass Market. "How often and willingly," he wrote a little while before, "do I not look again in fancy on Tummel or Manor or the talking Airdle or Dee swirling in its lynn; on the bright burn of Kinnaird or the golden burn that pours and sulks in the den behind Kingussie." He saw them all and more in fancy now. And what was he in this far Paradise of the South? A passing exile, a wanderer without a home. The tune and words of "Wandering Willie" ran hauntingly in his head:

Here awa', there awa', Wandering Willie.
Here awa', there awa', haud awa' hame.

Ah! if only his exiled heart could "haud awa' hame"! In forlorn mood he wrote to the old Scots tune the pathetic verses, characteristically

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

enclosed in a jesting letter to Charles Baxter, beginning—

Home no more home to me, whither must I wander ?

His body was held prisoner in Tahiti ; but his unfettered spirit was back with kindly familiar folk among the moorlands and by the rushing rivers of the North. Then, in fact, began the backward yearning which increased in pathos and intensity to the end.

The *Casco* came at last, gifts were exchanged with the hospitable Ori and others according to Tahitian custom, farewells taken ; and early on the afternoon of Tuesday, December 25, 1888, sail was hoisted and the course set for Honolulu, which was reached on January 24, after a " deplorable passage " of squalls and calms. So long was the party overdue that they had been given up for lost by Mrs. Strong, Stevenson's stepdaughter, then resident in Honolulu. There the *Casco* was paid off with much regret and sent back to her owner in Oakland, leaving behind her a taste for the sea, primitive peoples, and sun-drenched islands.

A POTENTIAL MASTERPIECE

But the need of getting to work immediately was imperative. In the preceding November *The Master of Ballantrae* began serially in *Scribner's Magazine*, and as yet was little more than half done. Stevenson had therefore to face the problem, familiar enough to novelists, of providing

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

“copy” with the printer in hot pursuit. If he broke down, if invention failed, as at the critical moment it was so apt to fail, then there would be trouble in New York, with consequent disaster to delicately-balanced finances. For greater quiet and convenience he went out to Waikiki, a small resort three and a half miles along the coast, with shady gardens, a long curving beach of purest sand, and pellucid emerald waters that were a perpetual invitation to bathe. There he rented a cottage of the bungalow type, landed his shells, savage weapons, and other bric-a-brac picked up among the islands, and sat down in earnest to finish *The Master of Ballantrae*. In his progress as a novelist the story marks a great and striking advance. *Treasure Island* was at best a book for boys; *Kidnapped*, though a more deliberate and serious effort, was yet another boy's story; *Prince Otto* was little more than an exquisite and very self-conscious exercise in style; *Jekyll and Hyde* was a piece of drugged morality, hastily thrown off for the sake of the cash it brought. But *The Master of Ballantrae* (in strict accuracy *The Master of Durisdeer*) was a strenuous effort in the novelist's art. All its author's preceding work had been in a sense experimental; here for the first time he was grappling with the complexities, the ironies, the tragedies of real life.

It is an attempt to render human experience on a large and impressive scale, and up to a point it succeeds. The opening, powerfully conceived and powerfully executed, strikes a note which, had it been maintained, might have resulted in a genuine masterpiece, something, perhaps, not unworthy of the hand that gave us *The Bride of Lammermoor*.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

The atmosphere is excellently, convincingly created ; the characters—the old lord, the master, his brother, his brother's wife, Mackellar, and the rest—are infused with the breath of life ; that is, they are individual, vital, alive. Some of the scenes, too, notably the duel, are extraordinarily vivid. Any novelist will immediately perceive that in those early chapters written at Saranac Stevenson worked in a glow of genuine creation. His imagination had seized its material and was working with ease and power. True, the style retains something of early conceits and preciosity, something of affected quaintness. Thus, when Mackellar carries the candles into the still, black night he remarks, " My teeth smote each other in my mouth." It would not do to say they chattered in fear. Again, in describing the dead stillness, he tells us that " a windless stricture of frost had bound the air," a piece of affectation of which Mr. Mackellar, left to himself, would never have been guilty. Stevenson, in fact, had not yet shaken off " the sedulous ape," the desire to achieve a sort of bastard originality. But in the first half such lapses are few and insignificant. " The thought constructs the tune " successfully and for the most part harmoniously. As he proceeded, however, or rather as he took up the tale again in Tahiti and Honolulu, there set in a sad decline. Imagination flagged and lost grip, invention became confused, and the story tails off into episodic lameness.

One significant circumstance partially explains the descent. In his youth Stevenson had heard from an uncle, John Balfour, an ex-Indian official, a grotesque story of a " buried and resuscitated fakir." Unhappily, in planning the conclusion of

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

his own story he remembered the absurd fakir, and decided to transplant him from India to the frozen wilderness of the Adirondacks. A surer creative instinct would have rejected the idea. But Stevenson, who was often at a loss to carry on, evidently fancied so weird a character would give his flagging story a fresh impetus. Accordingly Secundra Dass enters, and both in interest as in art the novel goes to pieces. In the end *The Master of Ballantrae* fails from weakness, bodily and creative. Nevertheless, it contains scenes and situations of impressive power and beauty. The "damned ending" greatly troubled Stevenson, because it was written mechanically on a bad plan. All the same, as he informed his editor, he considered the book "first chop, sir, first chop." And at the point in his career then reached he was indubitably right. On the ultimate roll of his works it stands only a little lower than *Weir of Hermiston*.

By May it was at last finished, leaving him in a stupor of exhaustion, a feeling not unfamiliar to novelists. Besides, his financial worries pursued him. In January, as he reported to Burlingame, he was "quite penniless"; a month later he was in the same doleful condition, with rapidly-mounting expenses and uncertain liabilities. March brought temporary relief, and more money followed in May. The result was that in June Wandering Willie would go home. Home in June! That intoxicating thought made his heart leap and his blood race. Coral islands were lovely, romantic, enchanting; tropical flowers gorgeous; tropical seas lucent and alluring; but oh! for the simple yellow broom, the purple heather, and the grey

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

links of Forth. To be sure, permanent residence in Britain was now out of the question. But why not Madeira? In Madeira, with its delightful climate, its variegated and beautiful scenery, he might reasonably count on faring well. And it was "only a week" from England—was, so to speak, within hailing distance, or at any rate within visiting distance, of his friends. They could go to him and in summer he could go to them.

But before March was out he was planning another cruise among yet other Pacific Islands. Even Honolulu was proving too cold. Besides, having seen so much of the South Seas, he desired to see more. The home-going would therefore be postponed for a year, but not a day longer. As we know, it was postponed for ever. Meanwhile he not only got *The Master of Ballantrae* out of hand, but helped Mr. Lloyd Osbourne with *The Wrong Box*, first called *The Game of Bluff*. This was offered serially to Mr. McClure for \$5,000 (£1,000) cash down, but the offer was declined. Refusal, however, did not damp his ardour for the story. "If it is not funny," he wrote to Charles Baxter, "I am sure I do not know what it is. I have split in writing it." This remark might give the impression that he was in the fullest sense joint-author. The tale, however, was written wholly by Mr. Lloyd Osbourne, and only revised, with perhaps a few interpolations, by Stevenson.

As his custom was, he speedily established friendly relations with the natives, in particular with Kalakaua, "the last of the Hawaiian kings," a picturesque, dusky *viveur*, with a good fund of common sense, more of human nature, and culture

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

enough, notwithstanding his colour, to discuss Herbert Spencer intelligently. His manners were courtly and ingratiating, and he had the kingly grace of being able to carry his liquor (of which there was plenty going) like the finest gentleman of Europe. Moreover, in the coiled intrigues and corruption of Polynesian politics, he was that fascinating object of interest, a prince with a grievance. He told the tale of his wrongs eloquently and effectively ; Stevenson, easily fired to enthusiasm or indignation, listened with something more than sympathy.

The result, the unhappy result, was a plunge into the muddy vortex of politics. His part was to enlighten Europe, especially England, and if possible awake sleeping consciences there. Accordingly he wrote the series of letters which, to use his own words, written in another connection, stand out as "Stevenson's blooming blunder." The first letter, dated February 10, 1889, was addressed to *The Times* ; the last, written at Vailima and addressed to J. F. Hogan, M.P., appeared in the *Daily Chronicle* on March 18, 1895, three and a half months after his death. He was thus for the last five and a half years almost constantly embroiled in embittered political controversy. The charming Kalakaua was responsible for much waste of time and energy.

For the second cruise there seemed to be but a single choice—the *Morning Star*—an American missionary-ship belonging to a Boston organisation. She was to start in late summer or early autumn on an annual round of stations, and her itinerary included several of the loneliest, most savage islands in the Western Pacific. Stevenson was fascinated ;

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

but there were difficulties about taking him, and even if these were overcome there were stringent restrictions—no tobacco, no liquor (champagne had lately been flowing with jovial freedom), no profane literature, and no light-hearted levity. The *Morning Star* was in effect to be a church afloat, with a daily and nightly routine of services, prayer-meetings, and Bible-readings.

Stevenson, as may be imagined, privily drew a wry face—and the delay irked him. One day, accordingly, he entered “a tin office” in Honolulu; when he stepped out again he had chartered the *Equator*, a seventy-ton trading-schooner, which carried in her contract no missionary restrictions. He was wildly elated. Rushing back to Waikiki, he electrified his family with the great news, himself as gleeful as a schoolboy unexpectedly let off to a cricket-match at Lord’s. His mother would return to Scotland, the adventure being too hazardous for her; the rest of them would visit the Gilberts, the Marshalls, the Carolines, and other haunts of enchantment. The *Equator* had first to make a business trip to San Francisco; but in June she would be back ready for any wild-cat enterprise that a sea-tramp might legitimately undertake.

Unluckily his health had suffered a sharp decline. There were no hæmorrhages, catarrhs, or other pulmonary troubles such as he had in Europe; only a general lowness of vitality that precluded the possibility of sustained, concentrated effort. In a fisherman’s cottage along the coast, however, he wrote or sketched *The Bottle Imp*. Much more important was his visit, towards the end of May, to Molokai and its leper settlement. He had heard

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

much of Pierre Damien, the Belgian priest, then lately dead, and his self-sacrificing devotion to the lepers. Now he learned the full story on the spot. His visit lasted a week ; and the horror, the tragedy, the hideousness, of what he saw has been described by himself with almost unendurable detail and vividness. The priests and sisters he admired to the point of veneration. For, like their patients, they too had taken leave of the world ; they too were in reality doomed, doomed by their own divine aspiration to give their lives for others. Here, if anywhere on earth, here in this foul, isolated lazaretto, where all must die together and lie in forsaken graves, was the sublime effluence of Divine love. One might almost hear a gracious voice saying, *Inasmuch as ye do it unto one of these ye do it also unto Me*. And of that noble band Father Damien had been the leader. Stevenson left the settlement with a haloed picture of the dead man, a veneration which, as we shall see, blazed into fury when, as it seemed, his hero was slandered.

The *Equator* returned to time ; and once more Stevenson "pulled up stakes" for fresh wanderings. Before embarking, he warned his friends "not to be in a hurry to think us dead," though the peril was considerable. They might be cast on some desolate savage island ; they might go down in a squall ; they might be ripped to death by fangs of coral ; they might even make a feast for jolly pagans. If any of those things happened, news of the disaster would reach Britain somehow ; but they should be in no haste to believe the worst. Adventurers often came to life again after being mourned as dead.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

FIRST GLIMPSES OF SAMOA

On June 24 they went on board ; and at the last moment Kalakaua, cordial and convivial to the last, drove up in state to say farewell and quaff a parting bumper of champagne. Then, to the strains of his majesty's own band, the *Equator* stood out to sea on one of the queerest voyages ever undertaken. By agreement she was to be free to go her own way and attend to her own business ; in reality her course was anywhere that fancy might suggest, and fancy took a singular turn. Once afloat, Stevenson speedily recovered his buoyancy of spirit and with it much of his old impish irresponsibility. The sea was delightful ; why not stick to it ? The golden age of piracy, alas ! was gone, with so much else that was stirring and romantic. Yes, the Jolly Roger was taboo ; but what of the trader's ensign ? A South Sea trader ! There lay the glorious road to fortune and felicity. The captain of the *Equator*, a vain, fiery, pugnacious, very efficient little Ulster-Scot, applauded, if he did not actually inspire, the idea. For in the splendid and lucrative venture he was to be a partner. There was money, heaps of it, in the scheme ; and if Mr. Stevenson was out for adventure as well as fortune, why, there it was galore. And Mr. Stevenson, with his facile ardours and passion for shifting scenes, was instantly on fire. A ship of his own with the trusty Denis in command, that was the grand ideal. Capital would be needed. Well ! he was master of a pen which had lately acquired a most encouraging commercial value. A new novel, a wild thing of the sea, seething with the blood and bluster, the trickery

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

and dare-devilry for which an amiable public was eager to pay, would be written and sold. Then, presto! a gallant little ship with a well-stocked trade-room. The partners shook hands in great elation.

Stevenson as a South Sea trader, exchanging amenities with beach-combers, alternately beguiling and bullying natives, fuddling in bars, doing a little illicit business in firewater, and ever prompt with his "shooting-irons," would be a theme for the comic Muse. Little Denis, whose favourite pastime it was to bathe among sharks, might have done brilliantly in such a part; Stevenson was scarcely cut out for the rôle. Luckily for himself and for literature, the splendid idea "petered out." The story, later named *The Wrecker*, was written and sold for a good figure; but the money it brought did not go into a tramp-schooner and shoddy second-hand European finery for Polynesian belles.

On July 13 the *Equator* reached Butaritari, the chief town of the Great Madin Island, to find the whole population frenzied with liquor. The place was much under American influence, and as a delicate compliment the people celebrated Independence Day by getting riotously drunk. Except a few missionaries who looked on hopelessly, and a few interested white traders, every man from his majesty the king down was, in Scots phrase, "roarin' fou" and ominously hostile. Hostility, however, did not prevent the Stevenson party from landing and taking up a temporary residence in the house of a friendly Hawaiian missionary. With a pertinent admonition touching the folly of "taking sauce from d—— niggers," Denis Reid proceeded with the *Equator* on business of his own. For a

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

little it seemed that the worst might happen, and that England would be startled by news of a horrible South Sea tragedy. Stevenson, venturing out on the verandah, was actually stoned, and there was a good deal of revolver-firing. In the end, partly through Stevenson's representations, the supply of liquor was cut off, and the drunken king and populace recovered their sobriety and their good manners. Then followed a month of rather monotonous quiet, while the Stevenson party awaited the return of the *Equator*.

Setting sail again, they made for the island of Nonuti; but, partly owing to change of programme, partly to change of wind, they changed their course, making for Apemama. There again they had a doubtful reception. Tembinoka, who ruled with despotic power, had tried white men in the shape of missionaries, and liked them so little that he sent them packing, with a succinct warning never again to set foot in his kingdom. "No white men" was thenceforth his fiat; and there were no white men. When the Stevenson party arrived, in daring contravention of his edict, he looked them over grimly and announced that he would take time to consider their fate. He took forty-eight hours. Then he looked them over again. His methods of judging were peculiar. He had never heard of Lavater, yet by a process of his own he had reached some of Lavater's conclusions. Physiognomy, he held, is the true index to character. "What's in the heart comes out in the face," he said crisply. Therefore he judged men by their faces, paying particular attention to eyes and mouth. Stevenson underwent the crucial test, passed, and was forthwith admitted.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Then came a sudden and singular change. Having satisfied himself, Tembinoka not only gave his royal warrant to land, but had a site cleared and four houses of wattle and wickerwork set up for the accommodation of his visitors. More, with a nice regard for comfort and privacy, he ordained that a circle should be drawn round the Stevenson encampment and that trespassers would pass it at the peril of their lives. To give a touch of realism to the ordinance, he took a rifle and fired several rounds in the air, in token of vengeance should his order be disobeyed. Occasionally, too, he honoured his guests with his company, and more than once dined with them royally on salt junk. They had their own cook, Ah Fu, a frowzy but devoted and ingenious Chinaman, picked up in more or less derelict condition at one of the stopping places ; but Tembinoka sent his own *chef* so that the cooking might be satisfactory. All that he did in the conviction that Stevenson was a great white chief on his travels, fabulously rich and the owner of innumerable slaves—with vast military and naval forces in the background. Probably the most graphic passage in the *South Seas* is that in which that dusky Napoleon, with his imperious temper and his Dante-like profile, is described. At Apemama, after the first flutter of excitement, Stevenson lived quietly for two months, studying native manners, customs, and folk-lore, witnessing native festivals and gleefully collaborating with Mr. Lloyd Osbourne in writing *The Wrecker*.

The *Equator* meanwhile was absent on another business of her own. She was to return in three weeks ; the three passed, then a month and most of a second month, and yet she did not appear.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Once more stores ran short ; and a little timorously the situation was explained to Tembinoka. Could he spare anything from the royal larder ? Spare anything ! With princely munificence he answered that all he possessed was at the service of his guests ; would they do him the honour to help themselves ? And once more the situation was saved. The *Equator* was so long delayed that she was given up for lost. But Denis Reid, who had a charmed life even among sharks, was not the man to founder or go to pieces on coral reefs. At last he came trim and smiling with the explanation that he had been becalmed on his way from Aroria Island, where he had been doing a little private "dickering" with the natives. To all but Tembinoka he was welcome and doubly welcome. That old enemy of white men had taken so strong a fancy to Stevenson, and indeed to the whole party, that he schemed to detain them ; when the inevitable hour of departure came he actually wept, laying his hand on his heart with vows of eternal friendship. As a parting gift he presented Stevenson with a set of corselets, precious family heirlooms which he particularly prized ; and Stevenson once again celebrated native chivalry and goodness in verse. Not to be outdone, Tembinoka also broke into verse some time later. Thus with mutual regrets and goodwill the visit ended and the good faith of the white man was vindicated.

By the end of October the travellers were again at sea, heading southward in a series of gales and calms. Early in December they "rose like whales from this long dive" in the track of civilisation. Before the week was out they sighted the wooded heights of Upolu, the chief of the Samoan or

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Navigator group of islands, as they made for Apia, the port and capital. According to his custom, Stevenson was on deck eagerly noting salient features and landmarks. Did his gaze by any chance rest for a moment on the green slopes of Mount Væa? He was fond of imagining himself a Gael, of ascribing to himself the Gael's intuitions and previsions. Had he any prevision then, any premonition of what was to be? Did an eerie voice whisper half audibly in his soul, "Behold the mountain!" In the brilliant sunshine it flashed and burned in dazzling green flame to the towering peak that was to be the Mecca of many hearts in many lands. The *Equator* all unconscious slipped a-bow, glided into Apia Harbour and cast anchor. Her stage was ended, another epoch opened strange, eventful career.

CHAPTER VI

FIRST IMPRESSIONS OF SAMOA

STEVENSON meant to make Apia a mere "mile-mark," a sort of half-way house on his rambling, circuitous progress homeward. The message to his friends still was that he would be home in June : and wouldn't that be a meeting ! He grew lyrical at the thought of walking into the Savile Club, a bronzed, lusty, striding figure, to take his friends there by surprise. There might even be a hurried visit to Edinburgh, with a run round the old dingy haunts in Leith Walk and High Street in the company of Charles Baxter. Some of the most ardent, most touching passages in his letters relate to that home-going in the June that never came. Destiny had other plans for him. He was to make yet other excursions and voyages, to visit yet more remote islands and strange peoples ; but little as he dreamt it, when the *Equator* cast anchor and he looked forth on the one straggling street of wooden houses which made the town of Apia, in reality he had reached his *ultima thule*.

But the future held its secret ; and, exhilarated by the fond prospect ahead, he was in the gayest holiday spirits. He was also in the gayest holiday attire—calico shirt, white flannel trousers, rakish yachting-cap—and bare feet, almost as striking a

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

figure as when he walked Piccadilly in black shirt and tasselled smoking-cap, or parti-coloured cloak and tiny sailor hat decorated with pink ribbon. The Samoans smiled as the people of Edinburgh and London had smiled ; but if amused they were polite, and he enjoyed the attention. Before landing he was greeted by Mr. H. J. Moors, an American trader well known in those parts, who had been advised of his coming. The accommodation and the fare at the single hotel in Apia being both primitive and defective, Mr. Moors invited the whole party to be his guests in his own house. There they spent several happy weeks ; then they rented a small cottage some distance above the town, but close to the Moors' residence.

Meanwhile, after a "celebration dinner" given by Stevenson in honour of Captain Denis Reid, the *Equator* once more hoisted sail and went off on her own trading ventures. Immediately Stevenson turned energetically to the task of collecting further material for his book on the South Seas. For that purpose he interviewed all and sundry—English, American, German, and Samoan (through an interpreter) ; made excursions, some of them extending over several days, with the Rev. W. E. Clarke, of the London Missionary Society, the Rev. J. E. Newell, and others.

First impressions of Samoa were disappointing. Compared with much he had seen, the scenery was tame, and the climate was much less heavenly than that of Tautira. Nor were the people so wholly to his mind as some he had met on other islands. The men, to be sure, were well set up and carried themselves with dignity ; and the women, as he did not fail to inform Charles Baxter, were "very

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

attractive and dressed lovely," that is, when they could be said to dress at all. In general, most of them "wore a smile and little else," save at dances, festivals, and religious services, for which they adorned themselves elaborately. One of his earliest experiences was to be arrested and fined for furious riding in the street, though, as he complained, the wife of a German store-manager nearly rode him down twice, and there "was none to say her nay." Of German influence and German insolence we shall see more presently.

Stevenson then was less in love with Samoa than with several other places he had visited; yet he was there but a few weeks when he reached a decision which was to alter the whole course of his life. A suggestion from Mr. Moors that he should buy land and remain set him thinking. With possible memories of Scott and Abbotsford, he was fascinated by the idea of owning an estate and being the master of many servants. After viewing "several desirable properties," he authorised Mr. Moors to purchase for him four hundred acres of jungle on the side of Mount Væa three miles above Apia. The price was to be \$4,000 (£800). The land was entirely virgin forest, and although Stevenson made much show of clearing and cultivating, the area cleared never exceeded fifteen acres. But it was a real estate, with possessions of cattle (could they be caught) and the prospect of a retinue of dependents. Clearing and building operations began at once, for it was necessary to have a house of some sort.

In the new conditions, which involved so drastic a change in his modes of life, Stevenson was much dependent on the practical and very effective

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

assistance of his wife, and scarcely less on that of his stepson. Then, or a little earlier, Mr. Lloyd Osbourne was offered the important and well-paid post of secretary to the newly-formed Samoan Land Commission which the three Great Powers were putting into operation under three special commissioners. The offer was a tempting one to a young man ambitious for a career ; but at Stevenson's pressing request it was refused. " I need you at Vailima," he said earnestly, and the matter was settled. The result was the literary partnership which lasted unbroken and harmonious to the end of Stevenson's life and was of immense service to him. After his death, as is well known, Mr. Lloyd Osbourne continued to write fiction, and made an independent reputation as a novelist of force and originality.

Meanwhile Stevenson was hungering for news from home. *The Wrong Box* and *The Master of Ballantrae* had both been published during his cruising, the first in June, the second in September, and he knew nothing of their reception by Press or public. When news at last reached him it was cheering. *The Wrong Box*, indeed, had been treated somewhat cavalierly ; but of *The Master of Ballantrae* the reviews, with some notable exceptions, were eminently favourable ; the sales too, though not sensational, were gratifying. There was, however, one particular fly in the ointment which poisoned all the praise. Henley disliked the book and said so without circumlocution. He found the story grimy, ugly, depressing, ill-constructed. Stevenson disputed the justice of the epithet "grimy" ; "grim" he owned, but not grimy. All the same, the judgment stung and

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

rankled ; for of all possible critics and readers Henley was the one whose good opinion he most desired to have.

In the circumstances Henley was not, perhaps, a quite dispassionate judge. Yet a little later so sound and impartial a critic as Leslie Stephen not only agreed with him, but added a severe judgment on Stevenson's whole work as a novelist. In general his old and very helpful editor found Stevenson's characters lacking in reality and often in charm. They had not, he said, the breath of life with which the great masters infuse their creations. They inspired no "very lively affection or sympathy." In *The Master of Ballantrae* he was repelled by "the utterly reprobate Master"; while the younger brother who is "blackmailed ought to be interesting," and not merely "sullen and dogged." "He is cramped in character, because a man of any real strength would have broken the meshes upon which the adventure depends."¹ Stephen, in fact, found the book wanting in the fundamental elements of power. Moreover, taste, the instinct which guides the artist in the selection and treatment of his material, had gone astray with deplorable results. Such in effect was his criticism.

Stevenson himself placed the book "on the line with *Kidnapped*"; but it must be remarked that even ardent Stevensonians have been compelled to concur in Leslie Stephen's judgment. And yet, as I have already indicated, *The Master of Ballantrae* contains, in my opinion, by far the most powerful work Stevenson had done at the stage in his career then reached. Once and once only was he to do better,

¹ *Studies of a Biographer*. Second Series.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

to show greater mastery, greater freedom of movement, greater vitality and creative energy. True, in *The Master of Ballantrae* the characters are unpleasant and the situations sometimes ridiculous. Hence sweeping judgments which are often, I think, distinctly unjust.

Every novelist knows that amiable, watery-eyed characters, sentimentally delineated, are an easy passport to the big, soft, childish heart of the public. Dickens (to take but a single flagrant example) traded on that knowledge to an extent which is often unconscionable and occasionally nauseating. In *The Master of Ballantrae* sloppy sentimentality was not Stevenson's cue. He is not, therefore, to be censured because his characters do not conform to the preconceptions of the sentimentalist who insists on sweetness and tears. Stevenson's real offence, one suspects, was, not that he failed in execution or that his characters and situations are disagreeable, but that in the eyes of worshippers he was false to himself, to his own engaging gospel of gaiety, of romantic and chivalrous behaviour; and for that defection even partisans refuse to forgive him.

DREAMS OF HOME—THE DAMIEN LETTER

Pending the necessary clearing and building, a work committed to the care of Mr. Moors, Stevenson and his family decided to visit Sydney, where longed-for home letters were expected. Accordingly, on the 2nd or 3rd of February, 1890, they embarked on the German steamer *Lubeck*, which called at Apia on her regular voyage from

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

San Francisco. In reality they were embarking for England, since Sydney was to be a mere port of call on the way home. There they would join a P. & O. or Orient liner, and by early summer—by June, the still magical June—they would be in London. Over that prospect Stevenson at any rate was in an ecstasy of excitement. Of all the words that the exile can utter or hear, the simple phrase “homeward bound” is the most thrilling. It reduces rough, hardened, bearded men to tears; it makes mothers frantically embrace their children in paroxysms of a joy too deep for anything but sobs. It moved Stevenson to a delirious intoxication. He was going home, home to the grey land of his dreams, with its eager, welcoming faces; and he was going with restored health, with an enhanced reputation, with the magic and the glamour of the tropics. In *A Child's Garden of Verses* he had pictured the wandering adventurer returning rich and famous; now he was that adventurer himself. With that feeling vibrating in his heart he entered the beautiful, landlocked harbour of Sydney, amid the crowded shipping of the world. But Sydney immediately disagreed with him. He caught cold, had a serious hæmorrhage, and took to bed. Still he was going home, only now the date was September instead of June. The delay of three months was disappointing; but, after all, did it not give a keener edge to the joy of anticipation?

Of Sydney and its sights and society this fresh collapse prevented him from seeing much. But the old habit of work remained; and soon after his arrival an incident happened which roused his

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

energies and fired his indignation to white heat. One evening, over the dinner-table, reference was made to Father Damien and the Molokai lepers. Someone asked if he had seen a newspaper letter written by Dr. Hyde, a Presbyterian minister or missionary whom he had met in Honolulu, casting grave aspersions on the moral character of Damien. He was shown the paper, a "religious" one, read the letter, and leaped to his feet in furious anger. He must reply at once, must "smash" the traducer of a dead man for whom he had conceived an ardent admiration.

But to give his thoughts and sentiments wing would land him in the meshes of the law. An action for libel would certainly follow—with disastrous financial results. What should he do? Relieve his soul, vindicate a maligned hero and face ruin, or hold his peace in a cowardly fear. A family conference was held, and the decision was "fight." Accordingly the famous defence was written. It was the work of a single morning, and stands now almost exactly as it was in the first swift draft. Thus hastily composed it was as hastily dispatched, "so that it was delivered to the London and New York dailies, the *Argus* and other papers, as nearly as possible on the same day."¹ The London papers do not appear to have used it—but it was printed in two instalments in the *Scot Observer* for May 3 and 10, and was immediately published as a booklet by Messrs. Chatto & Windus. Stevenson made the publishers a gift of it, because, as he informed his mother, he was

¹ A well-informed writer in the *Sydney Sun* to whom I am indebted for much information regarding Stevenson's visits to Sydney.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

not a cannibal and could not eat the flesh of Dr. Hyde.¹

The little book bears the marks both of the haste and the surging anger in which it was written. Inspired by an overheated chivalry, it runs too easily into unreasoned vehemence and personalities. Thus it lacks the deadly urbanity with which Newman pierced and demolished Kingsley. Its accuracy, too, has been impugned by those familiar with the circumstances. But when writing it Stevenson was in no humour to condescend upon such trifles as the verification of facts. He was in the mood for invective ; and invective, even when Juvenal is the writer, is apt to exaggerate ; in fact, it may be said that exaggeration of a biting kind is the soul of invective. By and by, when coolness and reflection brought a saner, better-balanced judgment, Stevenson himself regretted its violence. He confessed it was " barbarously harsh," and that he might have defended Damien equally well without inflicting pain on those who were innocent. Elsewhere he inculcated gentleness and kindness ; with Dr. Hyde he was the reverse of gentle and kind.

And the man whose " conventional halo " he was, so to speak, enlarging and burnishing certainly could not be said to have kept himself unspotted from the world. A year earlier Stevenson himself described the Belgian peasant turned priest as " dirty, bigoted, untruthful, unwise, tricky." It

¹ The late Andrew Chatto sent the author's share of profits to the leper settlement at Molokai, an act of grace which gave Stevenson much pleasure. An edition of the Damien letter was privately printed by the Ben Franklin Printing Company, Sydney. This was limited to twenty-five copies : a second privately-printed edition consisted of thirty copies and bore the imprint of an Edinburgh printer.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

is clear, too, that in the virtue of chastity he was lacking, not because of inherent viciousness, but because he was not strong enough to resist the horrible degrading influences which enfolded and penetrated him like an atmosphere. Dr. Hyde had, therefore, more justification than Stevenson in the first heat of outraged loyalty would see or admit. Moreover, it is fair to remember that the offending letter was not meant for publication, and got into print without its writer's sanction or knowledge. In the end, too, Dr. Hyde proved himself the better Christian if not the bigger man. For, instead of bringing an action for libel and pocketing a substantial sum as damages, he contented himself with the remark that his assailant was a "Bohemian crank," a negligible person whose opinion signified nothing. So no bones were broken, no purses depleted. But for four months the affair kept Stevenson in a state of painful suspense and agitation.

But agitated or tranquil, ill or well, his "dire industry" persisted. In collaboration with Mr. Lloyd Osbourne he was then busy with *The Wrecker*, and in random walks and excursions about Sydney he picked up suggestions and incidents which were utilised in that rambling, jerky, inchoate tale. With his usual readiness, too, he gave a Press interviewer his theories of the art of fiction. In his own practice he tried "to represent what was conspicuous and representable" in the world about him. "I try to do so," he said, "on the whole to give pleasure and rouse interest," an aim by no means peculiar to him. He believed "in looking to the characters and passions, getting over the ground, despising detail, and appealing

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

to the strong, common sentiments directly," again by no means a peculiar aim. As to methods of work, he liked to have several books in hand at the same time, because he found that "the whole secret of sustained intellectual effort lay in turning opportunely from one story to another." Thus, "although apparently entirely occupied with the immediate work in hand, one part of the brain was starting up new ideas."¹

The plan is interesting and has tempted many novelists ; but its wisdom or utility is doubtful. In general it may confidently be affirmed that the more intensely the imagination works, the more it is excited and absorbed, the less likely it is to divide its energies. A great creative mind, vigorous and fecund, may and does produce rapidly ; but it produces by concentration, not by dispersion of force. "One thing at a time" is its inexorable rule. Examined closely, Stevenson's method may be found to imply a defective power of concentration, in other words, of energy, or at any rate an impatience or inability under the strain of prolonged creative effort, and a consequent desire to seek relief by "switching off" to something that seems more agreeable or less exacting. It may also account for the extraordinary number of fragmentary stories and sketches, works often begun in a burst of high inspiration and dropped abortively, which, as I have said, strew his course. But here we touch the question of his whole native equipment as a novelist, a question which must be deferred.

After eighteen months of comparative well being, health was again the most urgent of problems.

¹ *The Sydney Sun*.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

In the beginning of March he announced to Charles Baxter that the Sydney visit had "smashed" him, brought, in fact, the old prostrating sequence of disorders—cold, fever, and hæmorrhage, with an inevitable droop in spirits. One thing, however, remained—the inspiring hope of that ardently-projected home-going, though now the risks were visibly increased. In the harbour out yonder, whence came the hoarse clamour of steam-sirens, there swung at their moorings British ships which would presently be setting their glorious course for England, for Tilbury. And was not one of them his ship?

Oh yes, one day soon, very soon, he would go bravely up Channel, with bunting spread to the breeze, hail the white cliffs of Albion with ineffable rapture, and hear bands and riotous merriment on Thames pleasure-steamers; ay, and, dearer yet, hear the bugles blow, as once he heard them on the castle esplanade above Princes Street, or, better still, thrill to the music of the pipes as the Black Watch went gaily past to the quick-step of "The Highland Laddie" or "The Campbells are Coming." Such ardours of hope are at once the joy, the inspiration, and the pathos of life. "It is better to travel than to arrive," was a favourite sentiment with Stevenson. In imagination he did much enchanting, intoxicating travel just then.

The home-going, as we have seen, was postponed for three months; and now, as the weary weeks passed, keeping him prisoner in his bedroom on a diet of drugs and egg-nogg, it became increasingly clear that there must be yet another postponement. As he waited, coughing, spitting blood,

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

rolling interminable cigarettes with lean, stained fingers, a terrible foreboding began to possess him. What if he should never go home at all, never again behold the land he loved and the dear familiar faces beam in welcome? The breakdown at such a point in his homeward journey seemed a wanton outrage, a piece of pure, premeditated malice on the part of a jealous Fate. So many thrilling visions dimmed; so many beautiful castles vanishing into thin air. But the hope that "springs eternal in the human breast," and especially in the breast of the consumptive and exile, dies hard; it was false philosophy to be glum; therefore he was cheerful; he even yearned to entertain himself (and incense others) with his beloved flageolet, only, unfortunately, the rules of the Union Club forbade performances which might cause a breach of the peace.

THE PACIFIC—OR DEATH

But unless there was to be a swift end to everything—hope, joy, even life itself—one thing was imperatively necessary—to get away with all utmost speed from Sydney. "The Pacific—or death" was the stern decree. Only whither and more immediately pertinent, how? For at the moment shipping was paralysed by a seamen's strike, a less familiar form of paralysis than it has since become. On Mrs. Stevenson fell the duty of finding means of escape, and, as always in a crisis, she proved the resourceful, beneficent angel. Scouting in dockland, she discovered that a trading-steamer, the *Janet Nicoll*, was about to start for the Gilberts and

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

other outlying islands with a "make-up" crew of Solomon Islanders. Here was her chance. Would the *Janet Nicoll* take the Stevenson party on board as passengers? The answer was a decided negative. The request was repeated, and again came a scornful refusal. But the need was terrible; life or death, that was the dread issue, and it was not in Fanny Van de Grift Stevenson to resign herself to failure. From clerks and underlings she went to the owners or agents, who bore the good Scots names of Henderson & Macfarlane. They too shook their heads. They were sorry; but they could not allow a woman on board; it was against the code even in the free-and-easy South Seas. Besides, a superstitious "black-boy" crew, in certain easily-imagined contingencies, might regard a sick man as a Jonah—with tragic consequences.

But her resolution was invincible; few women have ever been more resolute. "Think what you are doing," she said, not perhaps without a minatory gesture. "My husband is at the point of death. It lies in your power to save him, and you leave him to die." Thus nakedly put to common humanity, the appeal prevailed—aided, it may be, by Scots clan-nishness. It does not appear that Messrs. Henderson & Macfarlane were at all acquainted with the writings or reputation of their distressed but distinguished countryman. When at last all was ready, Stevenson was in such a condition of feebleness that he had to be carried to the quayside, pulled in a special boat to the *Janet Nicoll* and lifted like a helpless invalid on board. He was just in time to see a drunken member of the crew, a white man, who had fallen off the gangway, fished out of

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

the water and set on the deck, dripping and hiccoughing, to recover his senses.

It is not necessary to relate in detail the incidents of the new cruise, for in the main they were the incidents of the former cruises repeated with little variation. The only real novelty was that the craft was a steamer, with engine-power which made her more or less independent of the weather. There was the added advantage of size ; for by comparison with the *Casco* and the *Equator* the *Janet Nicoll*, with her 600 tons register, her two bathrooms, her spacious deck, and her business-like screw, had almost the magnificence of an Atlantic liner. She did not flop or drowse idly in calms ; but in squalls or rough weather she was fiendishly freakish. " The worst roller I have ever been aboard of," was Stevenson's description of her. Yet he enjoyed the rolling, and once properly at sea picked up as by magic. The company, too—Henderson, head of the Sydney firm, Ben Hird, super-cargo, an adventurous Aberdonian with a romantic record, and Jack Buckland, stated to be the original of Tommy Haddon in *The Wrecker*—were all jovial good fellows ; and it may be supposed that in the saloon of an evening, when the *Janet Nicoll* was not too frisky, Stevenson added volubly to the hum of voices.

In the general entertainment Jack Buckland supplied the comic element and supplied it effectively ; Jack was extremely handsome, and on the score of his good looks had once " walked on " in a Sydney theatre. Ever afterwards, as Mr. Lloyd Osbourne informs me, " he naïvely regarded himself as an actor, and often referred to the time when he was on the stage," adding that he always meant

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

to take it up seriously later on." It chanced that, lashed to the deck, the *Janet Nicoll* carried as part of her cargo an immense pulpit. "Jack Buckland," as Mr. Lloyd Osbourne tells me," announced he would give the company a Shakespearean recitation. He was much keyed up about it, was intensely serious, and without the least feeling of incongruity, and dressed in pyjamas, he mounted the pulpit and began to mumble Mark Antony's speech over Cæsar. R. L. S. laughed till it almost killed him; he was speechless, purple, and though he did not actually roll on the deck, it was the next thing to it. And he not only laughed then; but I think he laughed the whole succeeding week whenever any reference was made to it." They were all, however, so fond of Jack that, as Mr. Lloyd Osbourne remarks, they "would not have hurt his feelings for the world, which, of course, intensified the hilarity we tried in vain to conceal."

The first part of the voyage to Auckland was made in an extraordinarily heavy sea; Stevenson took the tossing and pitching of the ship like a veteran mariner; but Mrs. Stevenson, who "hated the sea," was in distress, as she often was on board ship. A stay of a day was made at Auckland; but the party appear to have seen little or nothing of the town, being probably, in no mood for sightseeing. An incident which for a little caused intense excitement and alarm marked the departure. The enterprising Buckland had stowed some fireworks in his berth. They exploded, causing a blaze which threatened serious damage. In a sudden panic the "black-boy" crew seem to have lost their heads. At any rate, they made an indiscriminate rush to get

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

rid of all articles that were on fire or might take fire. Just in time Mrs. Stevenson came upon two of them as they were about to toss a burning trunk overboard ; with a startled cry she stopped them. The burning trunk contained all Stevenson's manuscripts and papers. By a vigorous use of the hose, in which Stevenson and Lloyd Osbourne aided gallantly, the fire was extinguished. Some clothes and a valuable collection of photographs were lost, and considerable damage was done to the ship's fittings, but luckily not enough to detain her ; and, recking of charred timber, she put to sea in weather so glorious that it made amends for all discomforts.

From that point we may follow the course of the party swiftly in a sort of bird's-eye view. They put in at Apia, staying just long enough to enable Stevenson to inspect his new property, see how his new home was progressing, and learn from his agent, Mr. Moors, how ex-cannibals were behaving as workmen. Thence they proceeded to the Gilbert and Marshall Islands, which were reached without accident or incident worth recording. They saw some old friends, in particular Tembinoka, now, alas ! fallen on evil days. His people were ravaged by measles, probably a gift from the white man ; and in general things were gone sadly awry with him. He received Stevenson with tearful joy, knowing he should never see his strange white friend again. Some months later he died in pathetic circumstances. Such are the meetings and partings appointed to the children of Adam in every clime, in every age, in every condition.

On the whole the cruise was not exhilarating nor

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON†

in the grand essential to any degree successful. Health, after the first upward bound on leaving Sydney, had once more drooped dismally. There was again blood-spitting, with other disquieting symptoms, and a lassitude harder to bear, perhaps, than active disease. Nor were external circumstances of a particularly inspiring kind. Interesting moments there were when he mixed with natives innocent of civilised manners and creeds, though human enough to be covetous, sometimes with the most engaging *naïveté*. Thus at Savage Island "one pretty, stalwart minx with a red flower behind her ear" picked his pocket of tobacco and matches, and then coquettishly returned *one* match, as he gleefully reported to Mr. Colvin. But on the whole interest was neither deep nor lively. Five-and-thirty islands, as he noted, were visited, some of them for an hour only; and he found that hackney-cabs had greater variety than low atolls. The one saving compensation was the quality of the company and the fare on board the *Janet Nicoll*, both of which were excellent.

MISDIRECTED ENERGY

Meanwhile he gave every available moment, every atom of energy, to work, in conditions little conducive to success. His small cabin or work-room was close to the engines, and, penetrated by their heat and oily odours, intensified by a tropical heat from without, the atmosphere was not merely oppressive, it was prostrating. He sweltered in semi-nudeness, liquefying till there scarcely seemed

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

a scrap of the lean, wasted body left. And the work was those South Sea Letters which his most discriminating admirers wish had never been written. It was indeed work which he should never have undertaken. For his was not the facile pen of the Special Correspondent who arrives upon a new scene, glances at an object, a situation, or a people, and proceeds to write *currente-calamo* as if describing the fruits of a life-long study. There were many writers of his own day, lightsome, peripatetic journalists much inferior to Stevenson in all essential qualities of vision and of style, who nevertheless could and would have written descriptions of romantic roamings among savage tropic islands far exceeding his in vividness and human interest.

Mrs. Stevenson, with a quick, critical acumen, protested against the whole basic scheme of those unfortunate South Sea studies, and even invoked the aid of Mr. Colvin to get it altered or modified. But, having once resolved, Stevenson was not the man to be either persuaded or dissuaded by the logic or the sentiment of others. Now he was determined to be grandly spacious, impressively scientific. He would write the history of those dusky Southern peoples, so interesting and so little known, as it ought to be written. He would be an anthropologist, a mythologist, a folk-lorist, a philologist; he would explore witchcraft and statecraft, the glories of war and the achievements of peace, with equal rigour and impartiality: in a word, he would be at once the Herodotus and the Thucydides of a race. And to realise that ambition he toiled till his eyes were half blind and his senses swam from sheer fatigue. Looking back upon

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

misapplied, misdirected effort, we may regret his obstinacy ; but it is impossible to withhold our admiration for his strenuous, dogged persistency.

At the same time he was busily evolving yet other schemes of labour. To Burlingame he wrote from the *Janet Nicoll* proposing a new series of essays which he sketched in some detail. Andrew Lang was then contributing, and for several years afterwards continued to contribute, a monthly causerie to *Longman's Magazine* under the title of "At the Sign of the Ship." It was light, literary, readable, often personal, and nearly always piquantly spiced with prejudice. Thus, nimble in style and individualistic in tone, it interested Stevenson, as it interested bookish coteries in London ; and somewhat on the same pattern he proposed to model his projected series. Burlingame, however, appears to have been lukewarm, or entirely indifferent ; at any rate, the scheme went to swell the long list of Stevenson's abortive enterprises. He further made suggestions for a volume of verse, already written in part, and in part hanging nebulously in the very uncertain future.

It is essential to bear in mind that Stevenson loved writing for its own sake ; that he never suffered that strange repugnance to the simple act of taking up a pen which so many writers, some of them men of genius, have experienced. Yet it is not to be supposed that all that persistent, anxious, overheated activity came of an innate love of work. In "An Apology for Idlers," which simple people like to take as a quintessential piece of Stevenson's philosophy, he had written with

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

contempt of the arduous, agitated, purposeful souls who are for ever afflicted with a passion for useful, lucrative labour. Such people, he said, "cannot be idle; their nature is not generous enough; and they pass those hours in a sort of coma which are not devoted to furious moiling in the gold-mill."

That was the view of seven-and-twenty, when life seemed a delectable promenade through gardens of spice, or at least a delightful progress through a world rich in vibrating interest and exquisite sensations to anyone with wit enough to catch and enjoy them. But Time, the great disenchanter, had shattered those beautiful illusions. Now at forty the gay apostle of idleness was discovering what the Greek poet had discovered so long before, that, of all forces operative in the universe, none is mightier than necessity. The glory of morning had passed to dusty noon, and the heat and burden of the day were becoming grievous. Not airy romance, but the conventional commonplace problem of bread and butter, was now the engrossing, compelling interest. Stevenson *had* to work, to moil furiously in the gold-mill. The new nomadic life, with its strange Odysseus-wanderings, its swift vicissitudes, and driftings to and fro by land and sea, was terribly expensive. If he were not to sink under a piled-up load of debt, or fall back on his mother—and pride revolted against both ideas—the busy means of keeping the coffers from running empty must be plied unceasingly.

Even with all his efforts he did not know whether he were solvent or bankrupt, though his fears ran uneasily on bankruptcy. He was still haunted by the Damien-Hyde affair. Had Hyde turned on

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

him to make him a beggar? He did not know, for he was away from all means of communication. And there was another thing. Behind, beneath all like a secret spur, often like a spectre that awed and unnerved, was the ever-present thought that he "stood environed with responsibilities," that he had others dependent upon him. His failure would mean suffering to them, how dire he dared not imagine. Hence those prodigious labours over his History, his Letters for the McClure Syndicate, his fiction and his projected essays.

On her return voyage the *Janet Nicoll* touched at Noumea, New Caledonia, the French penal settlement, and there Stevenson left the ship, allowing his wife and stepson to proceed to Sydney without him. In regard to health the cruise was a failure. Utterly worn out, he tried to get rest ashore away from the malodorous heat of the steamer. A further reason was that he wished to delay his return to Sydney in the midst of what was there the cold season, that is, August. Furthermore, his insatiable curiosity found fresh interest in investigating the French convict system. He remained a week enjoying the society and the hospitality of French officers, whom he found exceedingly civil and pleasant.

Their civility, indeed, was at one point embarrassing. The Governor, invited him to a reception; he was without dress-clothes, probably did not possess that despised symbol of social convention which he had ridiculed in his Edinburgh days. But as it was necessary for the moment to bow to convention, a dress-suit made for a large, stout man was hastily cut down for his "gossamer dimensions." The remodelling was done with

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

so free a hand by a Polish tailor that the wearer appeared at the official function a "sight inconceivable," as he humorously told Charles Baxter. The coat bulged at the waist "like a bustle" (those were the days of bustles), the flaps embraced in front, and the sleeves were not sleeves but shapeless bags. To none was the comic appearance more amusing than to himself, and he bore it with an air of invincible gaiety.

At heart, however, he was all sadness and gloom ; for his battle was daily becoming sterner, more complicated and difficult. Before landing, he had reached the momentous decision which was to cut him off for ever from the past, the decision that in reality demolished all hope of returning to Europe save as a potential summer visitor. Already, indeed, arrangements were in progress for the transport of his household possessions to Samoa. Finances, unhappily, were at a low ebb, but, as he explained to Baxter, he had no alternative. He must preserve his life even at the risk of bankruptcy.

In itself the Samoan venture might or might not pay, in all likelihood it would not ; but it held the only promise or possibility of recovering some modicum of health. With restored vigour, if Heaven were kind, he could at least work—surely that last resource would not be denied him—and by the earnings of his pen he hoped not only to save against contingencies, but to replace the capital he had taken for cruising-trips and land-purchase. In any case, it would give a comfortable feeling to have a "roof and a farm" of his own. The rest he must leave to Fate.

Before the end of August he was again in Sydney, trying to adjust himself and his affairs to the altered

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

conditions. Mr. Lloyd Osbourne, with a hired assistant named King, had already gone to arrange and complete the final "fitting" from Skerryvore to Apia, thus severing the last link in the chain with home. It had undergone many wrenches ; it was now for ever cut. So much had been that could never be again ; and the future was dismally dark and foreboding. To casual observers, and even to correspondents, Stevenson maintained his air of philosophic cheerfulness, but beneath the smiling exterior was deep, intense depression. There was still that faint-glimmering hope of a summer flight to Europe, perhaps to some spot in Southern France where his friends could visit him but it had become too weak, too remote to yield any real solace.

A PALMIST'S DELINEATION

Again he was a prisoner in his room at the Union Club (Mrs. Stevenson was in lodgings), where he worked languidly over proofs of verses written before and during his recent voyagings—presently to emerge as the volume of "Ballads" we know. In connection with those Sydney visits, so disappointing in themselves, I am able to present a document of singular interest. In the museum there was a cast of Stevenson's right hand and wrist, the work, I judge, of Mr. Allen Hutchinson, an English sculptor, for some time resident in Honolulu. During a professional visit to Sydney, Mrs. K. H. St. Hill, well known as an exponent of the science of hand-reading, was allowed to make a drawing of the cast, to which she had added a

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

minute study. With great courtesy she has supplied me with her reading, which I believe my readers will find an illuminative delineation of no little psychological interest. Mrs. St. Hill writes :

“ It is a great misfortune that we have only one hand to consider. The artist who cast the late R. L. Stevenson’s hand was not a cheirologist ; he had no idea of the value attached to both hands as a correlative mental study ; his desire was to possess a representation of the hand that carried out the work of the brain. Having only one hand, therefore, upon which to form our cheirological conclusions, it was necessary to study carefully the back of the cast, for the back of the hand is in a less degree very important in palmistry ; we judge the shape and length of fingers and thumb better from the back, and it gives us the outline of the nails, which is denied in a flat drawing.

“ The hand was long, narrow, and slim, delicate in outline, very refined. The palm was thin, almost to attenuation, the small, threadlike bones were clearly defined under the skin, and from the appearance of the outline, one would easily conclude that the hand must have been very supple and flexible, but without much physical strength or any force at all. It is almost a womanly hand, and the nature must have corresponded with the type.

“ Taking first the back of the hand, we perceive that the fingers—measured anatomically from the knuckle to the tip of the middle finger—are longer than the palm, which gives great sensitiveness and culture, the rule of the qualities of the mind over the emotions and senses. The joints, or knots, appear somewhat strongly developed, but this is occasioned, I think, by the thinness of the hand,

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

the flesh having shrunk between the joints, and not from any particular development of these latter parts of anatomy, as, taken by themselves, they are fine and small in keeping with the type of hand. There is a certain amount of order, therefore, due chiefly to fastidiousness, but no great incredulity, only the hesitation and doubtfulness due to a considerable mixture of the Saturnian temperament.

“The short, round nails differ in size and appearance on the several fingers. Temper must have been hasty in some matters and patient in others. In the question of control, as shown by that of the first finger, which is the shortest of them, there must have been considerable rebellious feeling, and irritability under criticism from the Saturnian, or second; but the Apollo, or third, finger-nail is longer, the temper is sweeter in affairs of art, and in management, the Mercurian, or third, finger shows much greater patience. One would have earnestly studied the colour of the nails and the marks on them, had it been possible, but unfortunately no record of this important point has been kept. That would have shown at once if temper was affected by health, and to what degree, and this would have been a keynote to all those things in which the mind is liable to be influenced by the physical temperament. When we look at the spaces between the fingers, they appear rather closely set, yet this is due rather to the angle at which the thumb is set on the hand, which is very much to the front of the palm, after the fashion of the Greek statues, which always makes it appear as if the thumb is set very close, especially from the back view. The independence of thought is very apparent in the spaces between the fingers, much

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

more so than that of action. The thumb is long, and conical in shape. There is much will-power, but it is easily influenced and somewhat changeable, open to ideas, and not obstinate. The fingers are long and delicate, and had they been less fragile and quite straight, they would have come near to the sculptor's ideal ; but the dominant Mercury, the fourth, is the only one that rises to real perfection in shape. They show the idealistic temperament with the reasoning ability combined, and, the two principal fingers being those of Jupiter and Mercury, it gives the tendency to cultivate literature, the inspiration for which is given by the line of head and the Mount of Luna, the imagination.

" The index-finger is straight and well formed. It is on a hand that would influence more than rule, where liberty is more desired than command. Yet there is a semblance of authority about it, of dignity, of reverence. The second finger is rather over-developed, there is much of the Saturnian type in the disposition, it gives a certain hesitation, a fear of consequences, will make the mind very analytical, at times a trifle morbid. The third finger on such a hand is certainly a surprise. The finger of the Sun is much spoiled by being crooked ; this is so unexpected that one is inclined to wonder if it might not be the result of an accident. If not, it would cause great concentration of brain-power and imagination on literature, to the exclusion of art. But if there is a disappointment suffered from the crooked Apollo, it is with great satisfaction that we can turn to the beautiful finger of Mercury, the fourth. The power of carrying out the talent of the head, and the genius of the imagination, is undoubted : it is shown by the dominance of this

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

finger over its fellows, and in its position, set away from the palm and from its feeble and crooked companion. Language and style are given by the long, square first phalanx acting together with a long line of head, the only fault being the low setting of the finger on to the palm, which has its outcome generally in the difficulty experienced by its owner in achieving his natural superiority in his earlier efforts in life. Of the Mounts I can say but little. The palm was very flat. There was some Mercury, enough for the sense of fun, a little Jupiter, sociability, but not much ; a flat plain of Mars, giving courage, but not much self-control, unless the lower mount was hard ; little Venus, but a fine Luna. This mount, that of imagination, coupled with a long, sloping line of head, was the source of his genius, the line on which it had to be carried out being shown by the shape of the fingers and palm.

“ As to the lines, evidently the original cast was made when the owner was very ill. They were very faint, and gave the impression that they were fading out, which, as is well known, is one of the most serious signs of bad health known to cheirology. The line of heart was affected physically, being underlined and broken, the place of the lungs on the Mount of Jupiter being marked with a broken branch of the heart, showing grave signs of consumption. The life-line is short, and gives no promise of continuing its course, the fork on the line seems final. The heart, mentally speaking, shows a cold nature. It is very straight, and compared with the rest of the lines it was deep, which, with the long, slim thumb, will show him constant to the few he will care for. The curious

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

bar-lines above, like a pair of crossed swords, are an uncommon example of the ring of Saturn, and mark one or two great and bitter disappointments in early life.

"There must have been at an earlier period, doubtless, many more lines in the hand than are shown here, but evidently they have faded with the greater lines of which traces still remain, but from the broken marks of the heart line and the fading of the life, I should conclude that at the time when the cast was taken the subject had come through a period of great suffering, and that the blurs on the head line would be the effect on the brain of some sort of drugs or opiates taken to relieve pain. I do not know if this was the case, but it is what I should read from the facts on the hand before me."

I am not a cheirologist, and must therefore take this very suggestive delineation of my subject in the spirit of the appreciative layman over the delicately-technical work of an accomplished specialist. But the reader will find in it, I think, curious confirmation of much that has been said or suggested in the course of this narrative. The angle of view is different, but in the result there is little essential or intrinsic difference. To one point I may direct particular attention—the reference to drugs and opiates has perhaps a deeper significance than Mrs. St. Hill herself realised.

SETTLED EXILE

When the final decision to make Samoa his permanent home was announced, certain of his

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

friends, fearing the effects of such isolation, argued against it with some warmth. Self-banishment to an outlandish island in the Pacific, they said, must cut him off from the big throbbing world of humanity, with fatal consequences to his work and reputation. Why should he thus jeopardise his career just when he was achieving popularity? His mood in response was the mood of Job with his counsellors. *Doubtless ye are the people and wisdom will die with you.* The counsels, he admitted, were well meant; but did his friends imagine he was exiling himself for fun, or to gratify a mere wanton whim? He might, indeed, go home, as some of them suggested; but if he did, it would only be to die. If he were to live, above all if he were to work, he must keep to the Pacific; and he had vital reasons both for living and for working. It must therefore be "the lone trail" or nothing. There was no choice of paths; surely they would understand that.

They did not understand, at all events immediately, any more than they had understood his desperate plight in the black days in California. It was, indeed, his misfortune, at more than one critical turn in his career, to be misunderstood by some who fancied they held the key to all his inmost thoughts, all his secret motives. And, lacking the gift of imaginative foresight, they did not perceive that the withdrawal they deprecated was to prove the happiest, most fruitful event of his entire career, that, instead of isolating him, it was to give a mighty impetus to the world's interest in him and his works. Some people are amazed by his immense vogue, personal and literary; they may find at least a partial explanation in that self-exile which caught

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

and held the public imagination as one of the most pathetically romantic adventures in the whole history of literature. External circumstances have much to do with an author's fortune ; and in the final phase of his life Stevenson must be accounted the most fortunate writer of his time.

It may be said that Nature herself gave the stern admonition, pointed out the way for him. But there was more in it than that. Human motives are complex ; when a driving vanity impels, they soar easily to the grandiose and the spectacular. Stevenson had been taken for a great white chief on his travels. What if he were to establish himself as a chief in reality, a sort of island nabob, with a barbaric splendour and a dusky retinue all his own ? Samoa held at least a promise of that delightful consummation. Accordingly, in a spirit of high animation, he proceeded to take possession of his new estate in the primeval forest of Upolu. The date was late September, 1890.

CHAPTER VII

VAILIMA—THE JOYS OF CHIEFTAINSHIP

FOR the choice of his last home Stevenson had his own characteristic, whimsical motive. In some respects Honolulu or Tahiti would have suited him better ; but he chose Samoa " for the simple and sufficient reason " that it was less civilised. It was " awful fun," he said. The fun may be taken *cum grano salis* ; but to one who, Timon-like, affected to despise civilisation and all its hampering conventions, the simplicity and *naïveté* of unspoiled human nature were, it may be thought, irresistibly attractive. In any case, he must observe a decent regard for his own proclaimed love of the primitive and savage.

During his absence his agent, H. J. Moors, got some acres of forest cleared and a sort of improvised shed or " rough barrack " of two rooms built. That cramped structure, the work of native carpenters, Stevenson and his wife occupied for several months, with a German servant, and practically no furniture or other domestic comfort or convenience, till better accommodation should be available. The property bought from a " blind Scots blacksmith " (how the vagrant Scot wanders !) stood six hundred feet up on the green slope of Mount Væa and three miles from the town or port of Apia, with an outlook over

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

a sweep of tropical luxuriance upon the gleaming Pacific and within sound of its surf. It was a place of streams, hence the name *Va'i lima*, contracted to a single word *Vailima*, which in Samoan bears the pretty meaning of *Five Waters*.¹ Since then the name, as the world knows, has become a household word, not only wherever the English language is spoken or understood, but wherever men and women take an intelligent interest in literature.

The "barrack," as later its more commodious successor, was built in a "deep cleft" overlooking a gorge, or more correctly on a platform or tiny plateau on the mountain-side embowered in forest. It is a far cry from the grey, cold metropolis of the North to that ultimate isle of Upolu in the midst of the resounding Pacific; but so far by devious unforeseen ways had Destiny led to a home which, in the strictest sense, was to be permanent. Over yonder, across the measureless waste of waters, was the old land, with all its associations, bitter and sweet, now alike hallowed. It was a long, long journey thither, a journey which the new resident of Upolu was never to undertake. Like those half-fabulous Celtic warriors whose descendant he fondly imagined himself, it was his fate to go bravely forth, but not to return. The lights of London, of Paris, of Edinburgh, the dim, always semi-befogged, lamps of Leith Walk and Lothian Street had shone on him for the last time. Quite other lights were now to be his—the light of a tropic sun by day, the light of a tropic moon and wondrous tropic stars by night—and those but for a little while. For here were both an end and a beginning; or, rather, here

¹ Owing to changes in the configuration of the land the number of streams, I learn, is now reduced to two.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

was the beginning of the end, the last lap in that strange, hot, flurried race for life, that headlong flight from the pursuing enemy. In the lone isle far from kith and kin, far from his "beloved dead," the wounded soldier was to make his last stand, wage his last grim fight. Henceforth we must figure Stevenson to ourselves as a man fighting with his back to the wall, all avenues of retreat or escape inexorably cut off.

He knew, and was not dismayed nor even dispirited. Life still held much that was sweet, precious, enchanting. For one thing, to make a habitable nest in the wilderness there was much to be done—clearing, fencing, planting, weeding, building, and he set about doing it with a zest that took no thought of the swift abbreviation of time. A new joy, a new ambition possessed him—such as his adored Sir Walter once knew. And as Scott planted with his own hand the woods and designed the walls and keeps and turrets which were to glorify his name and perpetuate his family more effectively than the Waverley Novels, so Stevenson planned and worked upon his Pacific Abbotsford.

He laughed at himself occasionally for his folly ; but it was "awful fun." That exquisite sense of fun carried him out alone into the bush with a finely-ground cutlass to slash a path hither and thither in the jungly undergrowth, trip, get bruised and well stung by stinging plants, which have the virility and a good deal more than the venom of Scotch thistles. Nearer home he toiled like a navvy, with axe and hoe and hammer, as if to infect indolent Samoans with something of his own feverish zeal. It was equally good fun to stalk

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

young pigs, catch and thrust them squealing into pens which he had himself helped to construct, or watch the pair of horses (beautiful dappled greys, imported from Auckland) break loose and stampede over the beds of lettuce, radish, onions, and sweet-peas. At least, the excitement brought an agreeable variation of the sick-room routine and the nauseating egg-nogg of Sydney. But the prime, the supreme pleasure was to direct and control the gangs of brown workmen engaged in "improving the estate." Ah! what it was to be a landed proprietor, to fell one's own trees, cultivate one's own soil, and be revered as a great chief by a crowd of dependents. Sweet indeed were the joys of ownership.

Into the grand enterprise of home-making Mrs. Stevenson entered with at least equal spirit and perhaps greater practical efficacy; for while, despite all his zeal, *he* was somewhat out of his element, *she* was completely in hers. Nature, one might say, had fashioned her for just such a situation—that is, a situation requiring for its due management initiative, energy, decision, an unfailing hold on reality, and, above all, the invaluable faculty of making the best of things. The pioneer was in her blood; she came of a pioneering race, and not only maintained the family tradition, but added elements of her own. Her life had, in fact, been a series of pioneerings—often with frightfully exiguous means—and neither courage nor resource had ever failed her. What she had done in California she did now at Vailima on a more imposing scale. Her activity was incessant. She cooked and baked, raised flowers and vegetables; saw to livestock—poultry, pigs, cows, and even horses; took a

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

dominant part in superintending workmen, particularly in directing white carpenters at work on a new house, and arranging details with a woman's eye to external effect and internal convenience. Nor did she shirk her share of manual labour. In a blue overall and slouch hat, "with tucked-up skirts and bare feet," as she had been described to me by one who often saw her at work, she weeded and planted in sunshine and rain with an absorbed eagerness that shamed even the phenomenal industry of the master.

All this indicates fervid enthusiasm; and in truth the enthusiasm in those early months was fervid. Tanned, tired, perspiring, often aching, but invincibly happy, the adventurers took hardships and discomfort with the ebullience of children rioting in the ecstasies of a new game. From Stevenson himself the ailments, the languor of Sydney fell away, as if they had never been. The note was no longer elegiac; if life was not exactly epic, it was at least enchantingly, wholesomely active. All those activities and enterprises brought an ever-increasing need of money. Even in the Pacific you cannot make a paradise without cash; and to augment funds Skerryvore was sold. The house had been Thomas Stevenson's gift to Fanny, and now Louis consented to the sale on condition that she should take Vailima in exchange.

From the fascinations of farming, felling, planting, building, and overseeing labourers, Stevenson had to turn to his "damned literature." The work thus profanely designated was that undertaken for the McClure Syndicate, the unlucky South Sea Letters which cost him so much vexatious labour, with results so entirely unsatisfactory. He was

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

also toiling at *The Wrecker*, manifestly with little inspiration; and to that time, too, belongs the "Beach of Falesa," first called "The High Woods of Ulufanua," which, as "Uma," appeared eighteen months later in the *Illustrated London News*. This story has been much praised and much condemned. Stevenson himself thought it good; "indeed, to be honest, very good." Its peculiar merit, in his eyes, was its realism. Other writers on the South Seas had lost themselves in mists of romance; he had held doggedly to the beaten path of fact. He did not deny that it might seem extravagant; but he avowed it was true.

I am informed by persons well acquainted with the scenes and people it depicts that the claim is justified, that, indeed, in no other of his South Sea writings did Stevenson get so close to living reality. That, I think, is certainly the impression it leaves on the mind of an attentive reader. To me it represents its author in one of his happiest, most vitally creative moments, a moment when the imagination, roused and touched to a peculiar intensity, seized upon fact and reproduced it with all the illumination of consummate art. Moreover, it has, what his stories too often lack, a refreshing smack of originality. It was not done from a model, for no model existed; it was a fresh, independent creation, or, if you like, a page of South Sea life torn, so to speak, from the raw and translated with extraordinary skill and vividness. Grave exception has been taken to its style; to me, I confess, its style is entirely admirable, since it is the best conceivable for the subject and the narrator, as apt, in fact (other things apart), as the style of Burns in "The Jolly Beggars," that

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

matchless rendering of unregenerate human nature. One does not write of South Sea traders and their moral eccentricities in the manner of Milton's *Paradise Lost*, nor yet in the manner of Bunyan's *Pilgrim's Progress*. If (within its limits) *The Beach of Falesa* is not a masterpiece, then it may be affirmed with some confidence that Stevenson never produced one. Here for once he dispensed with models, looked with his own unaided eyes, and the result is supremely admirable.

All the while he was intermittently writing and revising verse—"The Woodman," "Tropic Rain," and other pieces, by and by to appear in the volume *Songs of Travel*. Of reading for pleasure he did little; but just then he read, strangely enough for the first time, *The Highland Widow*, which he was "half inclined" to reckon Scott's masterpiece, though it is generally thought a failure. "Strange things are readers," was his meaning comment. And amid such varied and engrossing employments he found time and inclination to attend to the intellectual interests of his dependents. Some of them already called him "papa," an appellation of trust and affection which he interpreted in terms of paternal responsibility. He began instruction with gentle experiments on Henry, a "Swaii Chiefling" who held the onerous post of ganger or squad foreman. Unlike the easy, lazy, pleasure-loving Samoans about him, Henry had an appetite for useful knowledge. To encourage it, his master fed him on decimals and English grammar as rudiments of the white man's culture. It was stiff fare for a child of nature; but it must be recorded as a compliment to teacher and pupil that for an hour daily the lessons in "long

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

expressions," as Henry called English, were made part of the routine.

In solitary moments Stevenson found a more æsthetic pleasure in his flageolet. After sundown, when the strange birds on Mount Væa had ceased their shrill cries, its jerky, tootling strains often floated weirdly on the primeval silence. "Auld Lang Syne" must indeed have sounded odd in the forest solitudes of Upolu, though it had probably no suggestion whatever of "the horns of elfland faintly blowing." And there were other delights. Perhaps the most entrancing of them all came when, in the cool of the evening, husband and wife strolled over freshly-made paths, inhaling ineffable fragrances as they viewed their possessions, their little Eden, embowered in forest. On Stevenson himself there was what his master, Walt Whitman, calls "the mania of owning things"; and behold, were not all things about him his own? There were also free sociable hours with Moors, pleasant, informative hours with the missionaries, Mr. Clarke and Mr. Whitmee, with the American Consul, Mr. Sewall, the German Consul, Dr. Stuebel, and others. Interesting visitors also put into Apia—Henry Adams, the American historian, Lafarge, the American artist—bringing a delicious breath from the outer world of literature and art.

One ominous portent there was. The cauldron of politics was beginning to seethe and boil over; and unhappily Stevenson fancied himself a politician when he was merely a man of letters with a conscience and a romantic instinct for the oppressed or losing side. But as yet he was not deeply involved and was able to devote himself to domestic affairs. Occasionally

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

there were unpleasant interruptions. In her excessive ardour to subdue the forest and turn the jungle into smiling lawns, Mrs. Stevenson was apt to overtax her strength. She was also careless how she went about among drenched grass and underwood, or how she took risks under a tropical sun. Her indiscretions brought rheumatism, headache, earache, and once or twice yet more serious disorders which brought Stevenson hurrying at dead of night with mustard poultices, laudanum, and ginger. But they were trivial perturbations in a life of enchantment, a life which day by day grew richer in promise of good fortune and felicity.

Thus Stevenson passed his fortieth birthday, and thus, for him, the year closed in what on the whole was serene weather, with fair horizons. He was in radiant spirits; and for once the radiance was genuine. I have said that we are to figure him as a man fighting with his back to the wall. Here I may seem to be contradicting myself. But the contradiction is seeming, not real. To the moralist, the student of human destiny and human vicissitude, the situation may suggest a cynical, catlike Fate indulging its victim with a momentary happiness, for sake of the contrast to come.

One trouble, alas! was chronic. For the glorious projects in hand money, and ever more money, was needed. The new house, the clearing, digging, felling, planting, ornamenting were cruelly expensive. It was delightful to play the chief and plutocrat, to direct gangs of workmen and behold one's estate emerging beautifully from the wilderness, a thing for pride, almost for adoration. But the cost was frightful; and the incomings were slow, uncertain, and all too meagre. With all his might Stevenson

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

laboured at half a score of things, prose and verse. Yet the drained coffers ran lower and lower, threatened, indeed, to run dry. Since the cheques for the *Master of Ballantrae* no cash had come in, and on all sides costly obligations were piling up.

And then, for the moment at least, he was isolated, groping, fighting in the dark. At Vailima he poured out his capital ; but the sources of income were far off in New York and London, and, worse still, he neither controlled them nor knew what they were likely to yield, or when. The financial problem caused him moments of acute anxiety and depression. Yet even then he could smile as if he were hail-fellow-well-met with Fortune. Even a shortage of provender was a joke, or at worst an inevitable incident in pioneer life, and therefore to be taken with a gay countenance. Sometimes husband and wife dined on "one avocado pear" between them ; sometimes the master's dinner ran to nothing better than bread and onions. Yet his only complaint was that such a larder made the entertainment of guests impossible. To make up, there were days and hours of feasting, with beef in plenty, new bread, baked bananas, and goblets of claret, when in truth they were, in Stevenson's own phrase, "belly-gods."

Meanwhile Mr. Lloyd Osbourne had settled affairs in England and was returning with Mrs. Stevenson senior. In January, after much debate and dubitation about leaving his wife alone, Stevenson went off on the *Lubeck* to meet them in Sydney, and enjoyed an exciting experience on the voyage. Off Fiji the *Lubeck* broke her shaft and seemed helpless ; but by a clever bit of engineering and seamanship she was able to proceed, partly

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

under steam, partly under sail, and reached her destination only three days late. There had been fear of a delay of as many weeks. Again Sydney brought a relapse, "a smoking, hot little malady," as Stevenson told Charles Baxter, which resulted in forty-eight hours of semi-delirium. Helped on board for the return journey, he reached Vailima without further ill effect. But the place was still in too much confusion for his mother; and after a brief stay she returned to Sydney till the new house should be ready. In April she was back again, and thenceforth, save for one absence, was with her son to the end.

Her joy in the reunion was inexpressible. For his sake she had borne much, sacrificed much, and not least in giving up home and friends for that far exile in old age just to be with Lou. He was still Lou to her, still the child, the boy whose first lisplings and prattlings she had fondly chronicled as with a prevision of his coming fame. And her faith, her adoring affection, were justified more splendidly than her dearest hope could have foreseen. Lou was famous. She was infinitely proud of him, proud of his success, won she knew how. Before her eyes, as it were, he had achieved the impossible, turned the absurdest dreams of his youth to reality. "I mean to be an author," said the small boy of six; and now the man of forty was a world-figure in literature. And she was his mother. His mother! There were moments when it was hard to realise that strange, thrilling, almost incredible, dreamlike fact. On his part Stevenson had learned to value his noble-hearted mother; and it is pleasant to record that, when she became a member of his household, nothing that love and

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

gratitude could suggest for her happiness was left undone. The tenderest, noblest passages in Stevenson's life are those connected with the mother who understood him so well, loved him so deeply, and in many a crisis stood by him with such devoted loyalty. With her came other additions to his family in his stepdaughter, Mrs. Austin Strong, and her son, who accompanied her from Sydney.

A month before their arrival he went off with Sewall, the American Consul, on a "malaga," or boating expedition, to Tutuila and others of the smaller, remoter Samoan group of islands. Before leaving Apia he had seen a dead man with women keening over him, much after the ancient Celtic fashion—Captain Hamilton, once American Consul; and the vision of the peacefully-folded hands and serene, restful face haunted him even amid the distractions of new scenes and people. He envied the man "who had gone out of life's battle," a sad little touch of feeling significant of much. At Pago-Pago, the beautiful harbour of Tutuila, where he lived for some days in the house of a trader, he was immediately on the track of "copy." A few months earlier a sensational murder had been committed in the place, and the event suggested a curdling story, "The Bloody Wedding," which for a time greatly excited him, as did so many of his abortive projects. But his real purpose was to collect material for his book on the South Seas. To that end there were various sailings to and fro, partly in a tiny schooner, partly in a whale-boat, and interviews (through an interpreter) with petty chiefs, fishermen, and indeed with anyone, native or beach-comber, who would be likely to yield an

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

authentic touch of local colour. On April 13 he returned to Vailima, after a day and night in an open boat, an adventure which cost him several days of prostrating fever.

SOUTH SEA STUDIES

Already in January his volume of "Ballads" was published by Messrs. Chatto & Windus; and in February "The South Seas; a Record of Three Cruises" began serially in *Black and White* (a weekly periodical long since defunct), with simultaneous publication in the United States. In regard to the "Record," all the author's worse forebodings were immediately realised. Disappointed readers asked in amazement: "What on earth has come over Robert Louis Stevenson that he gives us stuff like this?" Surely the man who wrote *Treasure Island*, *Kidnapped*, and so many charming essays, who was held up as a master and model of style, could not have produced this dull hash which was neither fish, flesh, nor good red herring. He had gone off to realms of magic, and behold, what he wrote of them was totally devoid of all magic whatsoever. In some quarters there was an irrepressible disposition to gibe. "Ah! ha," cried a derisive chorus. "So this is your great stylist, your great writer; the genius who sits on the Olympian heights just a little above Shakespeare." At the same time the editor of *Black and White* was "snowed under" with letters from readers, some regretful, some angry, some fiercely sarcastic; but none laudatory. When it was discovered that several of the articles were held back because they

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

were actually too tedious to be published, there was no surprise.

Perhaps in those ardent days we all expected too much. More moderate expectations would have produced a more lenient and therefore a fairer judgment. But a little clique of devoted Stevensonians had lately been extremely vocal concerning their idol's unmatched merits and had aroused false hopes. In the result Stevenson suffered for the extravagance of his eulogists. They called him a supreme genius, the foremost stylist of the day ; and here was stuff of which any second-rate journalist would be ashamed. In the shock of disappointment and the condemnation that followed one important fact was forgotten—the author's purpose. To take note of that, or at any rate to make some effort to ascertain it, is surely the first duty of criticism ; yet how seldom it is performed !

It is much easier, of course, to say that *Paradise Lost* is not quite on the same plane as *Hamlet* than to fathom the intentions of its author. What did Virgil mean by the splendid episode of Dido in his great epic?—the best thing he ever wrote. Was it merely to leave the impression that his hero was a sneak and a cad, or that he was obeying behests that made him independent of human judgment ? In recent times a great humorist wrote a serious book, and it was pronounced a failure because "Joan of Arc" is not as comic as "Huckleberry Finn." In writing the *South Seas*, Stevenson did not set out to be sprightly or humorous or hauntingly imaginative, but simply to be true. And if truth in his case is found to be dull, the book nevertheless contains some excellent

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

writing, as, for instance, in the brilliant character-sketch of Tembinoka, a little masterpiece of its kind. Further, if the impartial critic, dealing wholly with the question of intrinsic merit, weighs the work and finds it wanting, the general reader, whose interest is not critical, will in fairness remember the conditions in which it was produced. It was in the most literal sense a "pot-boiler." The "dibbs" which it brought were necessary; and Stevenson, bracing himself for an uncongenial task, did galley-work to procure them. But it was the first and last contract of the kind he undertook.

Simultaneously he worked on *The Wrecker*. That tale, as is well known, was only partially his. The plot, the skeleton, was Mr. Lloyd Osbourne's, the filling-in being a dual affair. With work done in collaboration the attempt to analyse it into component parts is always hazardous and seldom profitable. In *The Wrecker*, however, perhaps because the fusion is imperfect, the marks of separate workmanship may be distinguished with comparative ease. Several of the most striking incidents and much of the character-drawing are admittedly the work of Stevenson, although, indeed, to the student of his style and his history the admission is superfluous. The Paris chapters are wholly from his pen. The experiences described in them were his own experiences in the gay days before he knew the chastenings of care or the oppressive respectabilities of a family. The San Francisco scenes likewise bear his impress, as do also the characters of Loudon Dodd and Jim Pinkerton. The gory, sensational events at sea we owe to the lurid invention of Mr. Osbourne. To Henry James, Stevenson described the story

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

as " machine-made " ; but he was elated over the gruesome conclusion as " one of the most genuine butcheries in literature." Not till November was the " endless yarn " out of hand. He heaved an immense sigh of relief as he dispatched the final portion to Burlingame for *Scribner's Magazine*, where it ran serially from August, 1891, to July, 1892.

On publication in book form it enjoyed an immediate popularity. Though the story was found rambling, confused, in parts absurd, in parts revolting, yet through all its queer twistings it was imbued with a certain wild buoyancy, an infectious zest for action, picturesque or horrible, as might happen. In no sense is it a masterpiece, even if the standard of comparison be Stevenson's own work at its best. It has not the compactness, the directness of *Treasure Island*; as little has it the felicity of *Kidnapped* or the moving, gripping power of the earlier sections of *The Master of Ballantrae*.

But once the real action begins it is lively, bustling, and plenteously spiced with sensation. Ruthless men perform ruthless deeds, the scuppers run with blood, and there is a general air of " hell let loose " which keeps the reader agreeably excited and engrossed. Pious Stevensonians have shaken their heads over its gore, its utter disregard for the Ten Commandments, forgetting that the author of *A Christmas Sermon* and *Vailima Prayers* had at times a gluttonous appetite for horrors and a lively feeling for characters far, far outside the pale of the Shorter Catechism. In the spring of 1891 " The Bottle Imp," an eminently successful tale of the South Seas, appeared in two numbers of *Black and White* and was also translated into Samoan.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

On getting rid of *The Wrecker*, he announced his freedom with "a whoop of joy"; but in reality it was only freedom to engage in fresh work. For it was necessary to keep on grinding out "copy" to feed the insatiable maw of the devouring monster—finance. To *have* to write, to be blithe, amusing, charming, thrilling, to please careless readers and supercilious critics over yonder in America and England, when imagination seemed dead and inspiration was a mockery—that was his grim task. "The Courser of the sun harnessed to a dray." In our wisdom after the event we may blame Stevenson for the folly of squandering his resources, physical and intellectual, on four hundred acres of jungle and a dusky retinue on an island of the Pacific. And doubtless it was folly. Abbotsford killed Scott; and it is certain, I think, that Vailima, with its ever-increasing strain, did much to kill Stevenson. He did not shrink; at any rate he did not shirk. True, there were moments, many of them, when there came upon him a wistful longing for the simple life, say at Hyères; for in simplicity lay peace of mind and to peace of mind he was becoming a stranger, though externally he bore up with a brave show of happiness. Contrary to all that has been said of the glory and the felicity of Vailima, despite even a seeming improvement in health, the lights were beginning to burn low. Once in a period of unrest and weariness, when writing to Charles Baxter, he quoted with significant meaning the pathetic words of Scott: "*No rest but in the grave for Sir Walter*," adding, "Oh! the words ring in a man's head."

Flagging energies told heavily on his work. One delightful book he was still to write, rather,

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

however, as an aftermath of one that went before than as a new creation ; and two others, one of them his supreme achievement, he was to drop in mid-course, broken fragments, suggesting all too pitifully what in happier circumstances he might have done. The rest, comparatively speaking, are nothing. But he planned and wrote, wrote and planned, with a dogged persistency which in the retrospect is infinitely sad. Had he been a little less anxiously diligent, less painfully eager, he had perhaps achieved more. But "needs must when the devil drives" ; and the devil of necessity was driving Stevenson cruelly hard.

In the intervals of more exacting labour he read the diaries and letters of his grandfather, Robert Stevenson, whence by and by came the posthumously-published volume, *A Family of Engineers*. At the same time he was sketching two new stories, which, as usual, roused him to much ardour—"The Shovels of Newton French" and "Sophia Scarlet." Neither was ever written. His immediate work was *A Footnote to History*, the result partly of his general studies of South Sea conditions, but more particularly an account, with pertinent comments, on current events in Samoa. The greater part of the book was written in the house of Mr. H. J. Moors and with the active assistance of Mr. Moors, who supplied much of the information.

THE MIRE OF POLITICS

We touch here on old, unprofitable controversies and animosities which unhappily consumed much

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

of Stevenson's time and energies. Compared with events which have since shaken the world, the whole Samoan trouble was a tempest in a teacup. But the principles of justice are not affected by the magnitude or pettiness of the interests involved. To a strict equity the poor man's one ewe lamb and the riches of a great empire are of equal importance. Stevenson's intervention in local affairs was not political, but humanistic, though his actions took on a political colour. Civilisation vaunted itself as the uplifter and guardian of man ; and lo ! here it was treading him down, robbing him of his birthright, simply because it had guns and ammunition to blow his opposition into space, its ruthlessness with implements of destruction being made legal by a document concocted and signed in Berlin. The white man came in the shape of three great Powers, England, America, and Germany, to turn the natives into pawns in a game that permitted neither protests nor interference. Stevenson was shocked and indignant. "So this," he said to himself, with a quickening of the pulses, "this is what my white brothers bring to civilise the heathen. It is iniquitous." With that feeling he wrote those impassioned letters to *The Times* and other newspapers which brought him into violent conflict with official opinion. To the seeker for adventure, the storyteller out for incident and atmosphere, there was all the exhilaration of danger ; to the humanist all the intoxication of a losing cause. It was Charlie and his clansmen over again, in a new but equally picturesque setting.

The essential facts of the situation are simple. There were two rivals for the throne, or, rather,

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

two puppets made rivals by the wire-pullers abroad. Malietoa Laupepa was first deposed by the Germans, then banished, then recalled and reinstated. His rival, Mataafa, a much abler and more popular man, had presumed to fight "the mailed fist" and had actually cut up a small German force in an early skirmish. That victory was his undoing. In his island pride he thought Germany was humbled to the dust and that he had but to dictate terms. On their side the Germans, smarting under such an affront from "a nigger," sang themselves a little "hymn of hate" against the day of reckoning. Mataafa was thus an enemy to be crushed.

Now Stevenson championed the cause of Mataafa, whom he described as "the nearest thing to a hero" in his history; and "a fine fellow," with the manners and attributes of a gentleman. Berlin, however, did not desire a gentleman, only a tool; and since Stevenson chose to range himself with the offending Mataafa, he too was an object of hostility. To make the official wheels revolve, a Chief Justice and a "King's Adviser," who was also president of the Municipal Council, Conrad Cedercrantz, a Swede, and Baron Senfft von Pilsach, a German, were dispatched from Europe. When, in 1891, those two arrived on the scene, discontent was seething, and, with a crass stupidity remarkable even in such functionaries, they proceeded to pile fat on the fire. Those four, two native princes, one of them an outlaw, and two despotic, obstinate, bungling foreigners, backed by the combined might of three great nations, formed the storm-centre. Around the two white officials were grouped other officials—three consuls and three land

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

commissioners—invested with powers which might be, and often were, arbitrary. Around the two contending chiefs gyrated more or less uncertainly the entire native population and many of the white people.

Stevenson, with his fiery impulses, his quick sympathies, his impetuosity, and, it must be added, his love of excitement, found it impossible to hold aloof. The grossest wrongs were perpetrated under his eyes. He saw people arrested, imprisoned, deported, with the most cynical disregard of justice, and all his feelings flamed into anger. Ostensibly, in the name of the white population, he took the lead in addressing certain awkward questions to the German baron ; and was smartly snubbed. Looking down from the Olympian heights of authority, and very full of the insolence of office, the baron refused to recognise his right to speak for anybody. Thus balked and insulted, Stevenson appealed to London in the letters above mentioned, with little enough satisfaction. A Foreign Office that had to consult a map to discover just where those troublesome Samoan islands lay was not likely to be deeply interested or impressed. Besides, it relied on its own consular reports, not on stray newspaper articles. And who was this Mr. Stevenson who wrote to the papers in the spirit of an irate taxpayer having a fling at the Government ? A peripatetic writer of fiction meddling in delicate affairs of State ! Preposterous !

A smart, blithely-cynical under-secretary, overflowing with the superiorities of Eton and Oxford, plus a swelling sense of his own exalted functions, said quite emphatically it would not do. There would be a Blue Book some time soon, and such as

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

desired enlightenment or guidance could get it there. People must understand that diplomatic questions were managed according to old, well-defined diplomatic rules. And having delivered himself thus, the efficient under-secretary, it may be supposed, went off to luncheon, with a righteous sense of having put a fussy meddler in his place.

Stevenson, in fact, was "up against" a circumlocution office clad in the triple brass of a three-Power diplomacy. He might write eloquent letters, displaying every excellence of style, full of generous feeling and sound common sense; his appeals beat in vain on the securely-encased official mind. In one thing, indeed, he succeeded—in getting himself classed as a nuisance to governing persons. As I have said, Germany in particular was savagely indignant with him. Who was he to say that might was not right, or deny that the strong had Divine sanction to do what they would with the weak? There was even a threat of expulsion from the scene of his pernicious activities. Perhaps that would awe him. They did not understand their man, the official mind being little distinguished for perspicacity or psychological acumen. They were wrong who fancied that he could be terrorised into silence and docility; they were equally wrong who fancied that official insolence could divert him from his purpose.

This attribute of greatness at least was conspicuously his—that, having once resolved, he knew not how to yield or turn back. We may regret his grievous dissipation of energy. We think of the books he might have written had he held aloof from political agitation, gone on unheedingly with his own work. We count those eruptions into Samoan

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

politics a loss to mankind. Doubtless they are. Had he been like his own favourite, Sir Thomas Browne, who sat down amid the tumults of civil war and wrote his immortal *Religio Medici* and *Urn Burial* as composedly as if the whole world were steeped in tranquillity, then literature might be a little richer to-day.

But nothing in Stevenson's life is more truly characteristic, more vividly illuminative, than those incursions which the literary enthusiast deplures. They may for a moment obscure Stevenson the writer : assuredly they reveal Stevenson the man as few events of his career do. He envied Gordon both the felicity of his life and the glory of his death. To live so and die so were a happiness indeed. And here was his last grand opportunity to do something splendidly self-sacrificing for his fellow-men—men not of his race or colour—and he seized it with both hands. On second thoughts we should hesitate, I think, to blame him. The great battle for humanity is not so commonly nor so hotly waged that we should censure the soldier who perhaps proves his courage at the expense of his prudence. At any rate, Stevenson did what he did precisely because he was Stevenson ; and not Solomon or another.

CHAPTER VIII

A WAVERLEY HERO

THOSE external affairs, he said, hypnotised him, because he lacked the power of resistance. Yet other extremely essential affairs had to be carried on simultaneously, and he toiled with a grim determination, a desperate hope, scarcely surpassed by Carlyle in his darkest days. He was an early riser, finding, like other creative writers, that the imagination is at its best, its strongest, and freest in the morning hours. Breakfast, consisting of tea, bread, and a couple of eggs, was brought to him by his servant at half-past five, and by six he was usually at his desk or, as was more generally his habit, writing with a pad on his knee. At eight he allowed himself a short break, and at eleven a longer halt for early dinner, and, as often happened, a little recreation with the flageolet, or an occasional siesta. To make up for the early rising, he was in bed by half-past eight, or at latest by ten o'clock.

Sometimes in the afternoon he mounted his brown pony, Jack, a spirited animal bought from Mr. Moors for ten pounds, and rode down the steep, palm-shaded way to Apia. But such excursions had to be cautiously made because of those hypnotic influences above mentioned. Generally, at any rate in the early days, he preferred the allurements

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

of his estate and the laughing, merry gangs of brown workmen, pushing back the forest foot by foot. When tired of writing or dictating, he would go out in a fury of enthusiasm to his weeding and clearing, slashing and tearing at recalcitrant roots till, as he said, his hands were in ribbons. More rarely he went off by himself to enjoy the solitude of his own forest and the music of streams and waterfalls. But he did so mostly with the conscience of a truant, and was soon back at his work.

His industry was the industry of one driven by sheer need; for there was "a hell of a want of money." The new house and its appurtenances, though built entirely of wood, which was plentiful, cost nearly £3,000, and though his earnings exceeded that amount by £1,000 per annum, the extra was swallowed up in collateral expenses. To meet such expenditure there was but one way—work, incessant work. In the final stage of *The Wrecker* and the *Syndicate Letters*, he produced 60,000 words in a month—"elephant's work," as he remarked. Yet it made him "sick to think of Scott turning out *Guy Mannering* in three weeks." Heavens! he exclaimed enviously, "what thews and sinews!" He envied, too, the flexibility of mind which enabled Scott to turn from one subject, one interest, to another with a brain that was ever fresh and nimble.

And, remote as he was, he had many interruptions. Apart from political distractions, visitors came in increasing numbers—white traders with dusky wives, missionaries (Roman Catholic and Protestant), petty chiefs, wandering sea-captains, officers from the warship *Curacoa*, the latter especially welcome. Friends, too, were constantly

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

dropping in—the bluff, plain-spoken, ever-helpful Moors, who aided and criticised with equal readiness; Mr. Carruthers, a local solicitor; Mr. Bazett Haggard, land commissioner and brother of the better-known novelist. Most notable and exciting, however, of all the visitors was Lady Jersey, wife of the Governor of New South Wales, who came with her brother, Captain Leigh, and her daughter, Lady Margaret Villiers. Lady Jersey has herself recorded how she and her party met Stevenson “either at the house of Mr. Haggard or in Mr. Stevenson’s own delightful mountain home, and passed many hours in riding, walking, and conversation.” But her experiences were not confined to those tame, conventional pleasures. Stevenson had a romantic scheme of his own for her entertainment, which he carried out with courage and address.

In a simmer of glee, doubt, and excitement, he conducted the party on a private and surreptitious visit to the rebel Mataafa in his camp at Melie, several miles distant from Apia. “The wife of the Governor of New South Wales,” relates Lady Jersey, “could not pay such a visit in her own name.” Therefore she became Stevenson’s cousin, “Amelia Balfour.” To his own romantic imagination here was a chapter out of Scott; and he, “in velvet coat, cords, and yellow half-boots,” a hero on an adventure both of gallantry and of danger. The enemy was furtively vigilant; but the expedition was carried out as gallantly as if the stage were set in Drury Lane. Nor was that all. In honour of the occasion Mataafa graciously conferred on his friend a new, indeed a unique, dignity.

A king can mak’ a belted knight, a marquis, duke an’ a’ that—

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

but it is not every day he can exercise the Royal prerogative to the extent of elevating another to his own rank. During his first visit to Apia, Stevenson was introduced to a public meeting by the Rev. J. E. Newell as Tusitala, the Teller of Tales, a name by which he was thenceforth affectionately known among the natives. But he was also *Suenga*, Chief. Now at a stroke Mataafa advanced him to the regal honour of *Afioga*, Majesty. Miss Amelia Balfour, it was suspected, was a great white queen, and the shrewd suspicion doubtless suggested Stevenson's elevation. He was himself greatly amused and not a little flattered. "Mine has been a queer life," he remarked, in reporting the incident to Mr. Colvin. But in that instance the queerness was delectable, even slightly heady.

In the social activities of the natives he took more than a Platonic interest ; and, since the Samoans were extremely sociable when they were not burnishing their arms for war, they made much of him. As an honoured guest he attended balls and other social functions ; and on several occasions gave balls himself which were described in the local newspaper as models of lavish hospitality. Through all, too, ran the thrilling consciousness that at any moment the war-drum might sound, making the woods and valleys of Upolu alive with armed men. " This is one of the finest places on earth," an Irish visitor is reported to have observed gleefully. " You can have a fresh conspiracy every day." The air, indeed, was thick with conspiracy, with threats and rumours of bloodshed. Stevenson suffered some uneasiness from the fact that his house could not easily be turned into a garrison of defence ; could

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

indeed, be fired like matchwood. Nevertheless, as a precaution he laid in a sufficient supply of Colt revolvers and ammunition to arm his family in case of need—a circumstance which drew on him the suspicion of his enemies. Thus the *Samoa Times*, which Stevenson averred was bought by the opposition out of public funds, made a violent attack on him as a person who was secretly fomenting sedition and rebellion. More than once the situation became tense; and the enemy seemed to score when, with vindictive glee, it quoted a paragraph from a German paper suggesting “the complete disarming of the whites who meddle in internal affairs, *including Mr. R. L. Stevenson, the novelist*.¹

Possibly to soothe his nerves in the midst of such turmoil, he undertook to teach his “step-grandson” French and mathematics. At the same time he took up on his own account the study of the Samoan language, first with a half-caste clerk employed by his friend Moors, and afterwards, more scientifically, with the Rev. S. J. Whitmee, who has given an interesting account of his relations with his distinguished pupil. It will be remembered that Stevenson similarly “took up” the study of Gaelic and Spanish, without making much progress in either. With Samoan he appears to have been more successful. According to Mr. Whitmee, he was able both to read and write it with considerable fluency.

“CATRIONA”—STEVENSON’S HIGHLANDERS

One grave disadvantage of his isolation was a scarcity, almost a famine, of books. For such

¹ The *Vossische Zeitung*.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

works as he desired, or could be sent, he was dependent on the good offices of his friends in England and the States. Of contemporary literature he read comparatively little ; but all new books by Meredith and Henry James were sent to him as they appeared, and he was especially attracted by the early Sherlock Holmes series of Sir A. Conan Doyle and the short stories of Mr. Rudyard Kipling, whom he modestly regarded as the most promising new-comer, "ahem !—since I appeared." He read Renan's *Origines*, which he found "devilishly interesting," though he thought the method "sheer lunacy." Over another French book he went "crazy"—Paul Bourget's *Sensations d'Italie*. So enchanted was he that he forthwith dedicated his volume *Across the Plains* to the new idol.

The book appeared in April, 1892, with the imprint of Messrs. Chatto & Windus, and a copy was sent to Bourget. Stevenson waited in a fever of eagerness for the response ; and was "surprised into apoplexy" when the idol proved as dumb and indifferent as any graven image of old. In the reaction of disgust he asked bitterly if the French, his old admired friends, the French were not a polite race ; or if a flattering dedication was not worth a letter of acknowledgment. Since no letter came, his ecstasies speedily abated, and he cared no more for Le Sieur Bourget and his incomparable production. So do enthusiasms wax and wane. One other book he read with profound and peculiar interest in the summer of 1892—a new volume of poems by W. E. Henley. He was full of generous admiration. To Charles Baxter he wrote of Henley : "There is no more genuine poet living" ; and to Henley himself he wrote a brief note which,

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

in spite of all differences and disagreements, must have made the recipient's heart glow.

He was, as usual, brimful of new schemes, and each scheme was a masterpiece in embryo. It is a condition of successful creative work that in its first flashing conception the imagination should be more or less in a frenzy of ardour and optimism, that, in fact, its geese should be all swans. Certainly Stevenson's goslings were very frankly cygnets. "Sophia Scarlet" and "The Shovels of Newton French" have already been mentioned. With another, "The Young Chevalier," first named "Blair of Balmyle," he made an actual and brilliant start. Here he was on his native heath; for the setting and characters were to be Scots with a leaven of French. What he wrote of the story was so good, so strong and vivid, his admirers must always regret that it was left a tantalising fragment.

But at the stage we have reached his grand, his absorbing passion was *David Balfour*, known in England as *Catriona*. It will be remembered that when he finished *Kidnapped*, or rather ended abruptly without finishing it, he had on hand a large quantity of what editors call "overmatter." In a letter written from Bournemouth to his father, he explained how he meant to use it in a sequel; and he thought, as proved to be the case, that the second part of David Balfour's story would involve comparatively little labour. The amazing thing is that, with such admirable material in his possession, its use should have been so long delayed. And the amazement is increased when we consider his literary course in the interval. Between *Kidnapped* and *Catriona* there lies a long stretch of work so poor that to-day it would be utterly

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

forgotten but for the saving fact that it appears under his name.

In strict accuracy, the period between *Kidnapped* in 1886 and *Catriona* in 1893 (to take the dates of publication) contains but one really notable success : and even that is partial—the first half of *The Master of Ballantrae*. For reasons often mistakenly ascribed to health alone, he went off on those panoramic excursions into the South Seas which were so full of promise and so sadly disappointing in result. Through all that period the artisan was strenuously at work ; but the artist for the most part was in abeyance. The volumes *In the South Seas* and *A Footnote to History* contain much curious information, and here and there are lighted up by gleams of imagination ; there are also passages of remarkable vigour ; but the total effect is something over which the most ardent Stevensonian yawns in spite of himself.

With *Catriona* it was wholly different ; for there Stevenson found himself afresh after many wanderings. The “ tropics vanished ” and he was once again among familiar scenes, to the fond, retrospective imagination, all the more familiar because in reality so remote. The blended scents of heather and peat were once more in his nostrils ; his face was wet with the cold, delicious spray of Northern seas, and his heart leaped within him as he re-explored, in beating excitement, favourite nooks and by-paths in his beloved East Lothian. It was home—in an eternal exile. Moreover, in all his moving adventures he was with old friends—David Balfour and Alan Breck, the two characters in all his varied gallery he knew best.

The effect was a quickening of the pulses, a

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

joyous renewal of youth and animation. Style and characterisation brightened, as they brighten when the imagination works eagerly and easily in an element of its own choice. In the Pacific he fought, so to speak, with wild beasts at Ephesus ; now he was happy among kin and comrades. In consequence his tale flowed with unaccustomed rapidity ; the book was, in fact, the most quickly written of all his longer narratives, the actual writing occupying him, not too strenuously, for four months. In his own opinion, he had touched yet another high-water mark. Like most authors, he had many high-water marks, the latest being always the highest

Under the title of " David Balfour " the story ran serially in *Atalanta*, a magazine for girls, long since dead, from January to May 1893, and was published by Messrs. Cassell & Co. in the following September. In serial form it was not a success. The editor complained to me that, instead of increasing the circulation of the magazine, as was hoped and expected from the price paid, its effect was the exact reverse, and he was bombarded by letters from his readers begging him to " stop this stuff " and give them " something with a little more grip in it." His own editorial opinion was that it was " one of the thinnest stories " he had ever read. In book form its reception by the Press and public was appreciative without being at all effusive. But such masters and judges of the literary craft as Henry James and Bret Harte were fervent in their admiration. James was jubilant, and the author of *Miss* found it " simply delightful "—a judgment in which a multitude of readers have agreed.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

It was complained that the early part of David Balfour's story suffered from a lack of feminine interest. Possibly with that complaint in his mind, Stevenson, in the second part, introduced a heroine, or more properly two heroines, Catriona and Barbara Grant. Catriona represents the ideal, her creator's ideal, of innocent, spirited, unspoiled Highland womanhood; while the volatile, over-vivacious Barbara represents his conception of the capricious, incalculable feminine, slightly sophisticated by eighteenth-century Edinburgh society. Between them stands David Balfour, a Lowland dolt, awkward, tongue-tied, conventionally clumsy, his clumsiness being emphasised for no better reason, one suspects, than that the novelist was greatly in need of a contrast. James Mhor (Big James), Catriona's father, is a sort of foil to his daughter, illustrating the darker, fiercer, less admirable qualities of the Gael. But from the moment he appears on the brig in *Kidnapped*, the real protagonist, the star of the piece, is the redoubtable Alan Breck. His appearance has, indeed, much the same effect as the appearance of Sam Weller in the *Pickwick Papers*, that is, he vitalises the whole story, makes it vivid and keeps it moving.

Considered as a piece of construction, *Catriona* is rather a series of episodes than an organic whole. In unity, as in vitality, it stands on a lower plane than *Kidnapped* or even *Treasure Island*. Its feminine interest does not greatly aid, because it is too patently experimental. Stevenson's women, it may be said once for all, have nowhere the arresting, compelling personality which makes the women of the great masters, the magicians of the creative imagination, often seem more real, more intensely

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

alive, than their sisters of actual flesh and blood. Barbara Grant, for instance, sparkles and scintillates with most engaging airiness and spirit ; but the secrets of her being, the underlying complexities of thought, emotion, and motive which really actuate her behaviour, remain unrevealed. Catriona, notwithstanding her prominence in the story, is even more of a surface character. In delineating her, Stevenson found her dialect hard to manage and wished he knew Gaelic. She apes very prettily the speech, manners, and emotions of a Highland maiden flung into the maelstrom of misfortune ; but she remains dim, for the obvious reason that at heart she was dead to her creator ; and in essence she is not Highland.

Neither, for all the praise lavished upon him as the incarnation of a race, the best Highlander in fiction (a nonsensical claim) is Alan Breck. In the course of his researches Stevenson discovered that the conventional or stage Highlander is vain, proud, touchy, quick to sniff affronts, and quicker still to avenge them. Therefore the theatrical, swash-buckling Alan must be endowed with vanity, pride, touchiness, and an overweening aptitude for picking quarrels. But with him also the deeper, finer traits and qualities remain undisclosed. The reserves of sentiment, the depth, intensity, and delicacy, the timidity and shyness, so strangely and intimately blended with burning ardours and head-long audacities, which distinguish the Highland character—all these were beyond the ken, or at any rate beyond the reach, of Stevenson. Once, in a critical moment, he remarked that Scott never knew the Highlands, that he was ineradicably a Borderer. If it is true that even Scott has not fathomed the

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

deeper, finer shades of Highland character, it is doubly, trebly true of Stevenson himself. And there is another thing. To me it is obvious that, were there no Rob Roy in fiction, there would be no Alan Breck ; though it must be added that in the composition of " honest Alan " there is a strong dash of the Gascons of Dumas. Originality is nowhere the characteristic note of Stevenson, either in character or incident.

A peculiar and pathetic interest clings to *Catriona*. It was the last complete book that came from the hand of Stevenson ; for *The Ebb Tide*, which followed a few months later, was at least as much Mr. Lloyd Osbourne's as his. In leaving *Catriona* behind, therefore, we pass into the looming shadow of the end. Night and the Inn, where the weary traveller is to take his rest, are not far off. Yonder, but a little way in front, towers the lonely summit of Mount Væa, soon to be hallowed ground. What now remains of the amazing, eventful journey is lined, not by stately finished works of art, but by broken columns. As he well knew, Stevenson had gone into far lands to die. " I shall not even return like Scott for the last scene," he wrote to Craibe Angus, in connection with a Burns Exhibition at Glasgow. Burns Exhibitions, with so much else not to be put into words, were to him for ever over. " They pass away, these years of time, my brother : their months are reduced to weeks, their weeks to days ; their days to hours and their hours to moments, which latter alone we possess, and those only as they fleet."

Earlier in the year—in February, to be exact—he went off with his wife and stepdaughter for a brief holiday to Sydney, his last visit. The

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

colder climate brought a touch of pleurisy, fortunately not serious. Otherwise there was much to cheer and inspirit. Since his former visit his reputation had grown, that is to say, had travelled from London to New South Wales. He was now a personage, a literary lion whom intellectual and artistic Sydney delighted to honour. As the guest of an art club he repeated for one glorious hour the Bohemian delights of Barbizon and Grez. In art circles he became the intimate friend of Mr. Julian Ashton, "the grand old man of the art world of Sydney." Once Mr. Ashton, calling on him, found him in bed, with an armful of books. He was reading, as Mr. Ashton reports, "a blue-covered volume, which he tossed to me, remarking, 'That's damn good stuff by a new writer, and with a name like that he should go far.'" The good stuff was one of Wheeler's Indian volumes by Rudyard Kipling.

Stevenson was also the guest of the General Presbyterian Assembly, where he gave an address on missions, and in serio-comic vein some reminiscences of his ancestral connection with the Church. He was invited to Government House, but, I am informed, refused the invitation "unless he could wear his favourite white suit—generally worn with a red cummerbund." To Pressmen he gave further views on literature, on reading, on the literary craft, and with some vehemence on Samoan politics. One of his notable experiences was a meeting at Auckland with Sir George Grey, then at the height of his reputation as the "great pro-Consul" of the Southern Hemisphere. Among others of whom he saw a great deal was Mr. H. B. Wise, a well-known public man of Sydney.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

THE THROB OF THE WAR-DRUM

He returned to work but not to peace. Every day there were flying reports of sudden war, with appalling atrocities ; every night the household at Vailima expected to be in a state of siege. Workmen were excitedly decorating themselves in war-paint, and Mrs. Stevenson was warned that the Samoan warrior on the trail for heads was a devil incarnate. At the same time Stevenson himself was suspect, so much suspect, indeed, that by order of Chief Justice Cedercrantz his letters were stopped and opened, in hope of securing a conviction for treason. Moreover, there were sinister attempts to get at him through his own servants ; and once at least the effect was comic.

A half-caste whom he had sometimes employed as an interpreter was suddenly arrested and charged with being a spy for Mataafa. Stevenson leaped to the conclusion, probably a correct one, that this was an underhand attempt to implicate him. According to Mr. H. J. Moors, his agitation was extreme and painful. He was sure, he said, to be called as witness, and once in the box he might commit himself. "I don't know what I'll be saying if once I start talking," he remarked dolefully. The risk was cleverly averted. In the island there were but two solicitors ; both were promptly engaged for the defence ; and Mr. Robert Louis Stevenson, "Advocate of the Scots Bar," was briefed on the same side. The case for the prosecution collapsed and the situation was saved—though Stevenson was too agitated even to make an appearance in court.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

The enemy, however, was neither silenced nor defeated. There were fresh demands for Stevenson's deportation, and the story goes that plans were actually laid for kidnapping him, like his own David Balfour. No serious attempt, however, was made. But the High Commissioner for the Western Pacific was induced to issue a "Queen's Regulation" for "the maintenance of peace and good order in Samoa," an ordinance which Stevenson at once took as another sinister attempt on his liberty. Comments in the British Press and questions in the House of Commons followed—in a tone of some asperity. Fortunately, the Colonial Secretary, Lord Ripon, a good natured man of large common sense, intervened; the offensive order was cut down, and local autocrats and would-be dictators were instructed to abate their "opposition to Mr. R. L. Stevenson."

A further triumph was the dismissal of Cedercrantz and Pilsach. The struggle had been bitter, and on the official side had been conducted not only with personal rancour, but in violation of every code of honour. Yet in the hour of victory Stevenson evinced no disposition to gloat. "There was no man born with so little animosity as I," he said of himself with perfect truth. He was the last man in the world to descend to the meanness of kicking a fallen enemy. When all was over, he even expressed a certain affection and admiration for his defeated opponent. Not every victor in "the vile game of politics" is so generous.

Meanwhile discontent, verging on rebellion, continued to simmer and splutter among the natives. To white observers it was plain that an outbreak could not be long delayed; and suddenly

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

the charged elements flared and thundered. Warriors hideously streaked, and drunk with the lust of blood, infested the bush by day, and at night stole furtively across the lawn at Vailima, their savage weapons gleaming with ghastly suggestiveness in the moonlight. Mataafa's men clamoured for the heads of the men of Malietoa, and against the better judgment of their chief went out to take them. A good many heads were, in fact, taken, several of them, to Stevenson's horror and disgust, the heads of women. Yet his sympathies were red hot with the rebels. In the first wild excitement he even visited Mataafa's lines and returned delirious with the passion of war. There was nothing else on earth so glorious, nothing that sent the blood surging and racing in such maddening exhilaration—a sentiment which will bring a smile to the faces of men of a later day who have endured the agonies, the terrors and hardships of real warfare.

Unhappily, in the first shock Mataafa was beaten, and his defeat was made decisive by British and German warships. Against the forces of the dummy king, Malietoa, he might hope that superior valour and strategy would in the end win ; but with European shells from European naval guns he could not cope. He surrendered and was banished to Jaluit, one of the Marshall group of islands, while his followers were plundered and imprisoned. Great was the disappointment of Stevenson. For Mataafa he had a genuine admiration and even affection ; and on his side Mataafa's regard was a profound reverence. Years after Stevenson was gone, he paid a noble and touching tribute to the memory of his friend Tusitala, the

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Great White Chief Tusitala, the man of wise counsel and steadfast friendship.

THE GREAT WHITE CHIEF

These things concern us to-day, not at all because of their intrinsic importance—relatively they are insignificant—but wholly because Stevenson was involved in them, and they were therefore to a certain extent part of his life and work. Perhaps his energies might have been given more profitably to other things. Had he calmly or callously shut his eyes and stopped his ears in that imbroglio of intrigue and mismanagement, he might have written more. But he would not be the Stevenson we know—the impulsive, impetuous, often quixotic enthusiast, the fiery enemy of injustice, the chivalrous champion of weak causes and oppressed peoples. Those events in fact reveal him as in a mirror; and if the author is overshadowed, the man stands forth with an added lustre and impressiveness. Let us not too much regret his turning-aside.

In material things his fortune was steadily in the ascendant. At last, after many difficulties and much heavy expenditure, his new house was complete, and according to Apia standards was a marvel of magnificence. To a critical or unfriendly eye it might, and did, seem “a ramshackle wooden bungalow” devoid of “barbaric” or any other splendour. But to wonderstruck natives it was the acme of human grandeur, an incontestable proof of the Great White Chief’s boundless opulence. Was not Tusitala also *le ona*, the man

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

of great possessions. He came, and behold this wonder, the like of which had never been seen before in the islands. By comparison kings' houses were mean, a truth, indeed, easily demonstrable in those regions.

Nor was the wonderful green palace all. Everywhere were signal marks of the same abounding wealth. Gangs of workmen, mostly wearing Roman Catholic medals slung about their necks (the Roman faith being the popular one), were busily engaged extending gardens and lawns, laying out tennis-courts, making and remaking roads, turning the heart of the obdurate forest into a smiling oasis. Truly it was great magic, and denoted great riches. The road-making was but an indifferent success. To the end the heights of Vailima were too difficult for wheeled vehicles, transport being wholly by pack-horses—but the more primitive, the more picturesque and romantic. Internally the house seemed a nest of luxury, with its queer assortment of china and Sheraton furniture from Skerryvore and solid mahogany and horsehair from 17 Heriot Row, its pictures, books, silverware, ornaments, and general air of civilised grandeur.

A distinguished traveller and public servant who knew Samoa well, and was a frequent guest at Vailima in those latter days, has kindly given me his recollections of the house and surroundings.

On the ground floor of the last and most imposing addition to the residence you entered a spacious apartment capable of accommodating a hundred or more people. This was used as both reception-room and banqueting-hall, when Stevenson, in the rôle of chieftain, entertained his fellow-chiefs, his

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

course, by means of Horace's *Callida iunctura*, the artistic arrangement and juxtaposition of words, a device which would naturally appeal to Stevenson. Yet his own style bears little trace of real Latin influences. Newman, according to his own confession, got his style from Cicero ; but there is little that is Ciceronian in the style of Stevenson, and still less that is Tacitean, though here and there he may seem to borrow something of the pictorial manner of Livy. The borrowing, however, is rather seeming than real ; and for Livy we may substitute Sir Thomas Browne. The balance, the studied antithesis of Latinised writers, like Pope in verse and Johnson in prose, are wholly absent in Stevenson. He is seldom epigrammatic, his talent being rather for pretty, graceful fluency than for point or pungency.

The library, then, was not large, yet it was eminently characteristic. Notwithstanding his devotion to books and his zeal for literary masterpieces, he was never what is called an omnivorous reader. No man, not even the most ardently acquisitive man of letters, can take all literature for his province. In the prodigious conquests of the Carlyles and Macaulays, the men who read with miraculous speed and remembered with miraculous tenacity, there are large blank spaces. Inevitably so, in view of the brevity of human life and the meagreness of human faculty. But even in his own department Stevenson does not appear a deeply, widely read man. He had neither the amplitude, the varied and curious knowledge of Scott, nor the keen, questing scholarly instinct of Meredith. All his life he was rather the devoted adherent of a few favourites than the roving, discursive lover of a multitude, a

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

circumstance due, probably, to his inveterate, too-long-continued habit of imitation.

A man, said Dr. Johnson, in his pleasantly-emphatic way, should have his reading done by five-and-twenty, the implication being that if delayed till later it will not be done at all. Certainly, at Vailima, Stevenson had little leisure for any reading save what was directly essential for his own work. For one thing, the duties and responsibilities of a patriarchal position were becoming more and more exacting. He was, as he said, not without a touch of pride, the head of a small clan, a clan that ultimately reached an aggregate of a hundred or more. Being natives, its members were, as a rule, good-natured as they were lazy. Nevertheless, among themselves frequent disputes arose, and Stevenson had to intervene in the dual capacity of master and judge. He enjoyed the double function, bearing himself with as high and impressive an air of judicial power as if he were visibly clothed in the ermine and horsehair of constituted authority.

Usually his efforts as arbiter and peacemaker were completely successful. Hence, while others had difficulty in getting and keeping servants, his rarely left him from any cause of dissatisfaction. I am informed, by one who had particular opportunities to observe the facts, that in the selection of household servants Stevenson took a direct personal interest, and that they always included half a score of the most attractive native girls in the island. Indeed, among the white population the female staff at Vailima was somewhat profanely known as "Stevenson's harem" and was the subject of some ribald jesting.

His position involved other responsibilities which

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

to a man of his tastes and temperament, one may suppose, were at times a trifle irksome. Though devoid of any real moral sense, any hampering respect for the Decalogue, the Samoans observed the rites and ceremonies of religion, not only with meticulous care, but even with ostentatious gusto. They went dutifully to church or mission, the women suffering martyrdom in tightly-laced corsets (which they discarded at the first chance), but gay in silk stockings and flamboyant hats, often made of bark and dyed to rival the rainbow ; the men each in spotless *lavalava*, a sort of rude native kilt, and white shirt worn loose and flowing like a surplice. They sang like cherubs in the choir, were prompt with the responses, and showed an avidity, which would shame British and American Sunday-school scholars, in committing the Scriptures (in Samoan) to memory. In a word, they were living testimony to the zeal and success of their teachers, the nuns and missionaries, who pointed, not without reason, to the religious fervour of the simple-minded islanders.

Nor was the devotion all Pharisee-like for public places. In Samoan families prayers were part of the daily routine, or, rather, an act of decency which it was disgraceful to omit. On the principle, therefore, of doing in Rome as the Romans do, Stevenson not only conformed to local custom, but was so punctilious in observance that he put off Sunday visits in deference to native sentiment.

The White Chief, the head of a clan, must set an example ; and he did, though, as he confessed, the daily exercise soon became too much for him. On his mother's arrival at Vailima family worship was

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

held twice a day, morning and evening, then once a day, and finally once a week, on Sunday evenings. The company assembled in the large hall, and the chief part of the service were the prayers composed by Stevenson himself.

CHAPTER IX

VAILIMA PRAYERS "

THOSE celebrated *Vailima Prayers* have been the theme of much admiration and not a little controversy. On one side their religious fervour and exalted spirituality have been taken as incontestible proof of what, in theological language, is called a change of heart. The sinner has repented and has returned to the fold, confessing his sins, humbling himself, seeking Divine aid and guidance. On the other it is affirmed, with equal assurance, that the prayers, so pleasing to the elect, are the utterances of a patent insincerity, a cloak ostentatiously worn as a sop to convention.

Such modes of argument imply that a man must either be impeccably virtuous or radically, incurably impious. In either case, there is surely a gross error in reading or interpreting human nature. Since the dawn of history humanity and fallibility have gone together. The man after God's own heart sent the unfortunate Uriah to his death from the most abominable of motives ; yet the prayers and psalms of David are not generally regarded as hypocritical. There is no incongruity in the *Vailima Prayers*, any more than there is incongruity in the outpourings of saints who were often so appealingly, pathetically human. The man who

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

wrote *Jekyll and Hyde* and *Lay Morals* could write prayers without any insincerity, any contradiction of his essential nature. To some who saw a good deal of him in Samoa, Stevenson was the very pattern of purity and piety ; to others, who saw him at least as much and as intimately, he was the free-and-easy Bohemian, with an unmistakable dash of the sensualist, the libertine ; and both were right according to their lights. They contradict each other because their views of the man they judged were partial and imperfect, because, in a word, their vision was defective. One imagines with what scornful joy Stevenson himself would have enlightened and corrected them.

In my opinion the *Vailima Prayers* have no taint of hypocrisy, however sharply they appear at variance with some incidents of conduct. Which of us is granted grace to live up to the full spirit of our prayers ? If there is anything insincere in Stevenson's prayers, it lies in their ornateness, for at times their author seems to be presenting the Deity with specimens of his literary skill. But then, again, literary skill was second nature to him, and as natural, almost, as his own skin. The charge of hypocrisy may therefore be dismissed. But we are not, therefore, to conclude that conduct was an undeviating progress along a sub-celestial highway of goodness and virtue. Stevenson was no Pharisee ; but equally he was no saint, except in the haloed caricatures of his idolaters.

Like most reflective, and all sensitive, imaginative souls, he had in those latter years moments of rapt brooding on human destiny, on the unspeakable mystery of the infinite and man's piteous need of a Power greater than himself. One might say that

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

the gloom of Thomas Stevenson at times overshadowed Vailima, and that as the father had been so was the son. Certainly he had got completely away from the shallow "schoolboy blasphemies" which had once won him so much applause and so much opprobrium. The prayerful moods were intermittent, for man is not always of one mind or one texture. As Stevenson himself pertinently observes in his early essay on Pepys, we instinctively adapt ourselves to circumstances. "We are merry with one, grave with another, as befits the nature and demand of the relation. . . . For man, being a Protean animal, swiftly shares and changes with his company and surroundings; and these changes are the better part of his education in the world."

By being all things to all men—religious with missionaries, worldly with men of the world, Bohemian with Bohemians—Stevenson, like versatile natures in general, too easily gave an impression of inconsistency. The dull, the stupid, alone enjoy the felicity of being always and everywhere consistent: and Stevenson was neither dull nor stupid.

As an offshoot, or extension, of those domestic exercises he turned his attention to mission Sunday-schools, and actually undertook to teach a class, an enterprise not, perhaps, without its touch of satire. The effort proved disillusioning. To interest his scholars he was obliged to resort to bribery, beginning with the lure of sixpence and gradually rising to half a crown. But even that bait failed to evoke any marked enthusiasm. "I don't know what you mean," said an astute Irishman under similar temptation, "and if I did it isn't

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

enough." Stevenson's bribe was not enough for the cupidity of the juvenile Samoans, who evidently had just civilisation enough to expect a double profit from religion. Besides, the work was tedious; there were interruptions from illness, and, deciding that he was not a Heaven-born Sunday-school teacher, Stevenson retired abruptly.

VAILIMA SPLENDOURS

Socially life flowed pleasantly into ever-expanding channels. Cedercrantz and Pilsach were gone, leaving only a muddle and memories none too fragrant. With the new Chief Justice, C. J. Ide, a genial, efficient American, Stevenson was soon on terms of intimate friendship, made the more agreeable by familiar family intercourse. His status as a chief, a person of soaring importance, was recognised by an ever-widening circle; and he cultivated his semi-feudal prestige with undisguised relish. It was costly, but it must be maintained. Vailima ranked as the "show-place" of the island. Distinguished visitors found their way thither, as in England they find their way to cathedrals, castles, and great country houses. One such visitor was Signor Nerli, the Italian artist, who painted Stevenson's portrait and was himself made the subject of a set of comic verses.¹ More and more Vailima got a reputation for a generous, even

¹ The Nerli portrait is now in the National Portrait Gallery, Edinburgh. It was purchased in New Zealand by the late Mrs. Turnbull, of Southfield, Kelso, and by her taken to Scotland.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

a lavish hospitality. Tusitala, the wonderful, gave splendid feasts that crammed the great redwood hall with the élite of Upolu, feasts which were always ordered with a fastidious regard to lordly ceremonial.

Tales of those banquetings, richly embroidered, appeared in the British and American press ; and were read with amazed eagerness by multitudes who almost dreamed they were reading a new chapter of the *Arabian Nights*. Henley, eking out life on a meagre civil list pension in an English cottage, read them with the crowd, and had his own thoughts of the old days when the magnificent being in Samoa shared his bed, his crust, and his whisky-and-soda. Times were indeed changed. The Shorter Catechist, the writer of beautiful prayers, the novelist of world-wide renown, the Chief among Chiefs, shone gloriously. But where was the crony and comrade of Lothian Street, Ealing, and many another haunt ? 'The indigent scribe had become the bountiful, fabulously-grand Lord of the Manor ; the atheist who had outraged orthodox Edinburgh was the bosom friend of priests and nuns. " Splendid," roared Henley, " splendid ! " and permitted himself a burst of ironical laughter.

In Samoa itself all tongues were not tuned to praise or adoration. Certain of the white population affected to be amused ; certain others, more candid or less well bred, tittered, jeered, and whispered. " A bouncing egotist who loves the limelight as a beach-comber loves rum," they said. " Kind of drunk over that little bit of land up the mountain-side," said others. All the same he went on unabashed, playing his mimic game as chieftain. Always friendly with the natives, he became in an

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

especial sense their patron. Was there a festival or dance he was present, and his gallantries to native belles were, I am informed, the cause of much chuckling in the stores and saloons of Apia. Imputations were made and denied; and I gladly chronicle one emphatic denial. "The honour of a native girl," writes Stevenson's friend, the Rev. S. J. Whitmee, "was as dear to Stevenson as the honour of a white woman."¹

In a mass of petty gossip truth becomes obscured; and Apia in Stevenson's day was notoriously a "poisonous gossip-hole." It spared nobody, least of all its most conspicuous figure, whose free, unconventional ways all too easily made him a target for malice or detraction. In this connection Mr. Charles Whibley, in his brilliant essay on Rabelais, has furnished an unanswerable plea in defence of the man of letters stupidly or maliciously accused of loose living. "It is easy for priests and pedants," writes Mr. Whibley, "from the depths of their arm-chairs to charge with the grossest vices of debauchery and drunkenness a writer they cannot understand. Yet one thing they forget . . . vice is for the idle, not for the life of invincible energy. . . . It is the story of Harry Fielding over again—of Harry Fielding whom the critics have seen stained with claret and tumbling upstairs drunk to bed, *as though the reveller could rise in the morning to the easy composition of a masterpiece.*"²

Meanwhile the banished Mataafa was eating his heart out under guards on a distant island. For him Stevenson could do nothing; but many of Mataafa's adherents were in prison in Apia, and

¹ The *Atlantic Monthly*, vol. cxxxi, No. 3.

² *Literary Portraits*. London, Constable & Co.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

towards them he acted with characteristic generosity, often at no small personal risk. For the forces of Malietoa were jealous, vigilant, eager for a chance to be vengeful; and whatever the white officials might feel in their hearts, the ruling powers were pledged to support the puppet they had themselves placed on the throne—with the munificent allowance of some fifty dollars a month to maintain a regal state. Stevenson even feared an attack on Vailima, and again took what precautions for defence were possible with his tiny arsenal and his little band of helpers. But Malietoa and his advisers had too fond a regard for their own skins to endanger them by attacking one who, though he held no official position, was fast becoming the most powerful white man on the island.

“THE STERN VOICE OF DUTY”

Such things, however, were external, incidental. Stevenson had set one clear ideal before himself—the ideal of work, and to that ideal he clung when wisdom would perhaps have counselled him to relax. In language that has thrilled millions of ardent, ambitious young souls, Goethe and Carlyle have extolled the nobility and the virtue of work. So far as I know, the history of literature furnishes no more inspiring example of heroic endeavour than Stevenson exhibits in the closing period at Vailima—often in the most disabling conditions. In a passage familiar by repeated quotation, he told George Meredith something of the hard, long-sustained fight, how he had “wakened sick and gone to bed weary,” and yet did his “day unflinchingly.”

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

And he added, "the battle goes on—ill or well is a trifle, so as it goes." The battle went on till the fighter dropped.

It is just there, in that splendid devotion to his task, that Stevenson deserves the title of hero—for nothing but innate heroism could have carried him on in the face of such odds. We need not arch our eyebrows and remark that of course it was his own fault, or that he deliberately chose that descent to the sordid labour of "pot-boiling." Wisely or unwisely, he put his neck into the yoke; and, however the flesh might sink or fail, the spirit was unyielding. As time passed the yoke grew no lighter. His income was large and was steadily increasing; in the last year it reached £5,000. Yet there was neither ease nor rest for the driven brain. For with every increase there came new demands. Luxury creates its own necessities, and Stevenson was their slave. For the artist the position was pitiable; but it glorified the man. And let it always be remembered he toiled for others, not for himself.

As his custom was, he had several things on the anvil, turning from one to another, as interest or inclination suggested. His share in *The Ebb Tide* gave him trouble out of all proportion to the result achieved. It will be recalled that the first draft was written at a gallop by Mr. Lloyd Osbourne in Honolulu. Stevenson now undertook to "work it over," and in effect the working-over meant that he wrote the second half *de novo*. With the finished work he was almost savagely dissatisfied. The style was sensationally bad (he dreaded that he was losing his style), being a "mere veil of words," while the characters, as he remarked to Henry James, are

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

"such a troop of swine," a description which his staunchest admirers reluctantly accept as accurate. He greatly desired that the story should appear in the *Illustrated London News*, with illustrations by Gordon Browne. Instead, however, it appeared in a much less artistic form in *To-day*, a short-lived weekly paper edited by Mr. J. K. Jerome, where it ran from October, 1893, to February, 1894. It failed to please the big serial public, while discerning readers found in it ominous signs of degeneration. Why all this violence, they asked, this wallowing in the ugly and horrible? Had Stevenson ceased to be an artist, or did he care no more for wholesome, clean romance? His answer was that he had a family and must live.

Among his other projects in fiction was a Breton love-story to be called "The Owl," of which only an introductory page was written; and "Heather Cat," a tale of Cameronian doings and the disastrous Darien scheme, already mentioned. He also worked occasionally on a long-promised volume of *Fables* and sketched a history for children, in which, however, he found he could not compete with Scott. With far more interest and ardour he continued his history of the Stevenson family, a work which, in my judgment, has never received the appreciation it deserves. There, of course, pride and affection were both closely engaged. The author was writing with his heart as well as his head, and the effect is an enthusiasm which carries the reader triumphantly over incidents and characters by no means intrinsically interesting. The work involved considerable research for which he had mostly to depend on Charles Baxter and other friends in Scotland. His mother, then on another visit to her

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

home, also did much to aid in verifying obscure or difficult questions. One point on which he laboured with immense zeal to the last was his fancied descent from Rob Roy or some other Highland chief. He was still seeking proof when he died.

In September 1893, feeling, as he said, utterly "worn out," he went off to Honolulu, meaning to make but a brief stay. But a cold caught at the end of the first week developed into pneumonia so severe that his wife had to hasten to his side and nurse him. The visit nevertheless had its pleasant incidents. In Honolulu there was, and I believe still is, a strong Scots colony—who received Stevenson as a literary and social lion. Before falling ill, he delivered an address at the Thistle Club, which he promised to repeat before a public audience. Excusing his inability to keep the engagement, he remarked humorously that it would be foolish to risk his life for "a two-bob" lecture. He was, however, elected an honorary chieftain of the club, a compliment which greatly gratified him; and was presented with one of the small silver badges worn by members on their coat-lapels. He wore it pinned to his breast, and in the end it was buried with him. It was then, too, that Mr. Allen Hutchinson made the bust of him which was exhibited in London at the New Gallery Summer Exhibition in 1895; as well as the cast of his right hand and wrist from which Mrs. St. Hill has given so delicate and interesting a delineation of character.

Early in November he was again at Vailima, recuperated and "redder than a cherry." His birthday, the 13th, was celebrated royally by a

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

feast, held a week late because of an inconvenient little ailment on the right date. Another feast followed at Christmas ; and there were gifts, made with much graceful ceremonial eloquence from grateful chiefs whom he had befriended in jail and who were now at last free. There came to him, too, during that fall what was probably the most heartening intelligence he had ever received in regard to his position and popularity as a writer—the proposal for the Edinburgh edition of his works. The origin of that enterprise was singular, and for particulars of its inception I am indebted to Mr. W. Macdonald Mackay, of Toronto. During a residence of several years in London, Mr. Mackay knew Charles Baxter intimately. Besides frequent meetings in “the beaten way of friendship,” they had a standing agreement to meet once a week in Baxter’s rooms, which were, I think, in Chancery Lane. One evening, as Mr. Mackay relates, Baxter and Henley were dining together at a London restaurant, and the talk, as may be supposed, turned on Stevenson. On getting to sleep that night, Baxter “dreamed he saw a shelf of books by Stevenson, like the old Edinburgh edition of Scott ; and when he woke he hied himself to Andrew Chatto, told of his dream ; and forthwith had a number of dummies made up and settled on, exactly as the Edinburgh edition was issued. It netted the Stevenson estate £6,000, I understand, the result of Baxter’s dream.” Stevenson professed to believe in dreams ; here was a dream that “came true” in the most practical and delightful manner.

Thus the year 1893 drew to a close. The world, as the phrase goes, was flowing upon Stevenson.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

In the islands his name was one to conjure with, not figuratively, but literally. Natives looked up to him as to a father ; he was consulted on all manner of business, public and private ; and though he complained that such consultations wasted his time, he liked, and indeed invited, them. They were part and parcel of his chieftainship, and as such to be endured and enjoyed. Vailima became a word of magic in Samoa, and not in Samoa only, but also in the great outer world which interests itself in the doings, the achievements, and the eccentricities of celebrities. People talked of Byron in Greece and Robert Louis Stevenson in his Pacific island as parallel instances of high romance, with just the essential touch of tragic drama. For as Byron seized the public imagination by the glory of his final effort for liberty, so did Stevenson by the strangeness of his destiny and the valour of his behaviour. To thousands and tens of thousands who had never seen his face, save in counterfeit presentment, he became a hero, a prophet, an exemplar in lofty courage and nobility.

GLORY AND UNHAPPINESS

Materially his success was dazzling. The most ardent, the most optimistic of partisans in early days could not have foreseen that the laughing-stock of Edinburgh, the " weevil in a biscuit " of Bournemouth, the unspeakable fool who preferred literature before law and engineering, could ever soar to such fame and fortune as novelist and grandee. He had confuted the sceptics, silenced the prophets of evil, vindicated himself gloriously

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

by realising the wildest of his boyish dreams. It was all a magnificent triumph, won before a fascinated and admiring world !

And yet—and yet he was not happy. Man, it has been well said, carries heaven or hell in his own breast. It might be too much to say that Stevenson carried hell in his breast ; but it would be the wildest exaggeration to say he carried heaven. Why was he unhappy ? He had fought and conquered brilliantly. What was there to poison the joy, the elation of victory ? Was he another illustration of the moralist's text that worldly glory is but a shadow and worldly prosperity but dust and ashes ? The moralist, I think, is not at all concerned in the matter. The truth is that in the midst of success Stevenson was haunted, in moments horrified, by a sense of failure. Though cheques came to him in larger and ever larger amounts, he bemoaned declining powers and a declining popularity.

Even the Edinburgh Edition, with all that it implied, failed to assure him. As a matter of fact, the friends who planned and carried through that excellent venture were hurt because he did not appreciate its significance, or its almost certain effect on his fortunes. Nothing could dispel the idea that he was "a sucked orange," already in the current slang, a back number. With a sort of jesting earnestness he wrote to Henry James of softening of the brain. The passion for work continued, indeed increased, without the power. The imagination, once so eager and nimble, grew feeble, sluggish, and at last seemed to refuse its office. As we have seen, it was nothing new for him to begin a work, write a few chapters with

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

intense ardour, and then stop suddenly because invention failed. But now, even when he found promising material, he was unable to use it, or if he did, it was in what he called a "left-hand style."

Under this sense of impotence he became depressed and irritable. In general, men of high talent have what is called "a temper." Without it probably they would not be men of high talent. But Stevenson, losing self-control, was more and more prone to break into ungovernable transports of anger. "Nerves," says the discerning reader succinctly. Doubtless ; but the cause went deeper than temporary irritation. The whole man, mental, moral, physical, was unstrung. He was as a dreamer who wakes to find all his pleasant dreams false ; an idealist rudely stripped of his illusions—at best a painful, and, to a temperament like Stevenson's, a dismal, shattering experience. With that loss came, perhaps inevitably, a yet greater, the loss of the gay, buoyant self-reliance, the self-faith which in so many a crisis had been the sustaining principle of his life.

We touch here on the uncertain region of morbid psychology, in which things are distorted out of all true proportion and perspective. In more than one eloquent passage Stevenson dwelt on the imperative need of faith. It was a tragic irony that his own faith should have failed when his need was the sorest. He knew, none better, that to be without faith is to be impotent ; that to lose one's ideals is to lose the wellspring of hope and the mainspring of action. Many things, many mysteries, vexed and troubled him. Questions arose in his soul

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

clamouring for an answer ; and he could find none.

Oh ! I would like to ken, to the beggar wife, says I,
The reason o' the cause an' the wherefore o' the why :
Wi' mony anither riddle brings the tear into my e'e.
It's gey an' easy speirin', says the beggar wife to me.

In moments of gloom his whole life's work appeared to be summed up in one word—Failure. After all his strivings, what was it ? A few essays, a few tales for boys, a losing fight with destiny ; and, last satire of all, possessions which were bestowed only to kill. He brooded and grew morose—with flashes of the old gaiety which, like midnight lightning, but emphasised the darkness. He found offence where none was intended. Thus he complained with some asperity that so sterling a friend as Mr. Colvin was a “ little too cockney ” with him, and suggested more imagination in critical judgments. Even the well-meant efforts of affection close at hand were often an irritant ; and it may be (human judgment being fallible) that such efforts were not always judiciously made.

One delicate point must be mentioned. It was a common remark in Apia—and the remark has been repeated to me on first-hand knowledge—that Stevenson was “ far too much under the thumb of his womenfolk,” that they ruled and directed his life, that, in fact, he was their puppet, if not their slave. We know the graceful tributes in prose and verse he paid his wife ; we also know his appreciation of the services of his step-daughter, Mrs. Strong, as amanuensis when he was disabled by writer's cramp. Possibly their

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

interest was somewhat too exclusive, too exacting. Moreover, it may be that Stevenson, in weakness and weariness, surrendered his freedom and his judgment too easily. It is not suggested that he had any need to take to himself the pungent lines of Burns on "the crouching vassal to the tyrant wife."

But as I have had occasion to remark, Mrs. Stevenson was pre-eminently a manager. She was efficient and she was ambitious. In any orchestra in which, so to speak, she played, she liked to be first fiddle ; and at Vailima she was first fiddle in all save the power to earn money. Stevenson's interests, which were also her own, she guarded jealously. He must work : and she did her best to protect him from interruptions. Were her care and her authority a little too stringently exercised ? It is hard to graduate affection and solicitude with perfect wisdom. Affection may be too assiduous, solicitude too anxious. But one point is beyond, that his wife's incessant care and watchfulness prolonged Stevenson's life, and enabled him to work as he did.

But whatever his secret thoughts and feelings might be, whatever the domestic irritations or spurts of rebellious temper, Stevenson resolutely kept a smiling face to the outside world. Life flowed on with all the old brave show of enjoyment. He rode down into Apia on his brown pony Jack, or on a more conspicuous piebald steed bought from the proprietor of a stranded circus, exchanging blithe greetings with all and sundry, white and brown ; attended native festivals and fêtes ; and even shocked the orthodox by organising a " paper-chase " on Sunday—a lapse which brought trouble

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

with the missionaries. The stream of visitors, too, continued, and among those who were especially welcome were three fellow-novelists, Mr. Sidney R. Lysaght, Mrs. E. H. Strain, and Mr. Safroni Middleton, who brought a grateful whiff from the active world of literature from which he was shut off. There were travelling journalists also, whom Stevenson generously supplied with "copy" of a varied and occasionally a comically contradictory kind. Other guests were expected who never came—Charles Baxter, Mr. Rudyard Kipling, Mr. J. M. Barrie, and above all Mr. Sidney Colvin. "You must come, you simply must," he wrote Mr. Colvin again and again. In case Samoa were too remote, there were plans for a meeting in Honolulu, in Ceylon, in Egypt; but the meeting never took place.¹

Usually callers found him negligently attired and apparently very much at ease in tight-fitting, sleeveless shirt, and trousers rolled up half-way to the knee—with bare feet. While talking, one interviewer reported, "he rested his right foot across his left knee. It was a symmetrical foot, long and slender and beautifully arched; and as he talked he gently toyed among his shapely toes with his disengaged hand." The interviewer added that "his face is gaunt and haggard, with an expression of continual weariness." Alas! his heart as well as his face was haggard.

Throughout the first half of 1894 he was busy with *St. Ives* and *A Family of Engineers*, after having twice laid aside *The Chief Justice (Weir of Hermis-*

¹ Charles Baxter was actually on his way to Samoa when the telegram announcing Stevenson's death reached him at Aden.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

ton). Both the novel and the family history transported him back to Scotland. Once more he was in Edinburgh, at Swanston, among "the green folds" of the Pentlands, or with officers of the Northern Lights, braving the dangers of the wild western or northern coast. It was like a return to his lost youth and the land and people engraven on his heart. He had in hand also *The Amateur Emigrant*, which he undertook to condense or recast for the Edinburgh edition. That edition went forward so prosperously that, after some captious objections due to a lack of understanding, he was delighted with the scheme; and wisely left it to Baxter and Mr. Colvin—surely two of the most devoted friends any author ever had. In June his mother returned from Scotland, and he was gladdened by news of the old home and the people with whom he dwelt so much in imagination.

THE ROAD OF GRATITUDE

Thus spring passed into summer—our summer—and summer into autumn. In September came one of the most exquisite surprises of his life, when a deputation of chiefs gave him the first hint of the Road of the Loving Heart, of which so much has been written. It was to be "a token of gratitude" from those he had befriended in the day of calamity. Knowing Samoan ways, he imagined it was but a polite, politic device for getting money out of him; in other words, that what he did not pay in wages he should be expected to bestow in presents. He was most agreeably undeceived. The road, made to connect his house with the public way lower down,

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

was to be an absolutely free gift. In a month it was finished and presented ; and Stevenson, as he might well be, was immensely gratified by the " unheard-of compliment." When all was ready, there was a feast of celebration at which donors and recipient made graceful, eloquent speeches which may still be read with interest. At the road itself was a board bearing an inscription in Samoan, of which, I am informed, the following is a fairly literal translation :

" THE ROAD OF GRATITUDE

" Considering the great love of His Excellency Tusitala in his loving care of us in our tribulation in the prison, we have prepared this splendid gift. It shall never be muddy ; it shall endure for ever, this road which we have made."

That was early in October. Five weeks later, on the 13th of November, his birthday was celebrated with unusual grandeur and enthusiasm, by a company, native and foreign, that packed the great red-wood hall. Completely in his element, Stevenson seemed to overflow with happiness. Later, on the 29th, American Thanksgiving Day, he entertained his American and other white friends to a dinner in honour of the occasion. Again he appeared to be in exuberant spirits, was, in fact, as one of the guests afterwards remarked, the soul of the party. In a speech infinitely touching in the retrospect, he made grateful reference to each member of his family individually, beginning with this beautiful tribute : " There on my right sits she who has but lately from

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

my own loved native land again come back to me—she whom, with no lessening of affection of others to whom I cling, I love better than all the world besides—MY MOTHER.” Let us note the date well—November 29, 1894—for it marks his last speech and the last of his many entertainments. Did anyone present perceive a shadow over that scene of happiness, gaiety, and good-fellowship? In the old legend the sword of Damocles was suspended over the feast by a single hair, as a warning to those who feasted how uncertain was life and how sudden calamity might come. Had anyone who sat festively that night, at Stevenson’s table any premonition of what was so near? Four days, a little, little span of four days: and then——

If anyone present had any foreboding, it was Stevenson himself, the host, the man who seemed all life and joviality. Was his joviality a mask? Of late, in the stillness of the evening hour, it had become very much his habit to steal off alone and gaze wistfully at the top of Mount Væa; indeed, the frequency with which he was found in that attitude and the expression on his face troubled his wife, his mother, and other members of the family. What were his thoughts as his eyes rested on that lonely peak? Was he, in the language of his own people, fey? Had he some weird, supernatural intimation of what was so close at hand? or was he, like his own Will o’ the Mill, ready to welcome the friend who finally resolves every doubt, cures every ill? He knew he had come to Upolu to die, and had chosen his burial-place. Did he long to lie down and be at rest? I think there can be no doubt he felt the end was near, and I believe he was not

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

sorry. In mind and body he was inexpressibly weary, tired of the battle, and like a spent warrior longing to take off his harness. The first volume of the Edinburgh edition of his works reached him and gave an exquisite thrill of pleasure. It was a sign, a tangible sign, that he was remembered and loved in his own "inclement city" by the people who mattered most: and he was pathetically grateful. It lifted the curtain of gloom for a little: but it did not pluck from the heart the rooted feeling within.

"LAST SCENE OF ALL"

And yet even then he was displaying yet another contradiction, in a life, one may say, made up of contradictions. In October, about the time when the chiefs surprised him with their gift of the Road of the Loving Heart, he had thrown aside *St. Ives* in a mood of self-disgust, and for the third time took up *Weir of Hermiston*. And then something like a miracle happened. As by magic the jaded mind, the stagnant imagination, not only recovered tone and spring, but developed new and unsuspected powers. It was as if the creative artist gathered all his energies for a last supreme effort and brought into action powers above and beyond himself. *Weir of Hermiston* stands out not merely as its author's masterpiece, but so incomparably his masterpiece that it almost seems the work of another and greater writer. The freedom, the strength, the originality of genuine creation are on every page. Here at last was the real novelist doing his real work, the creator who had put

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

imitations and dilettantism behind him, and was squarely facing the passionate, throbbing, motley world of human nature. Stevenson himself was awed by the ease with which the story came. After his recent difficulties and inabilities, there seemed something uncanny in this new power, this exuberant energy which enabled him to dictate the moving, gripping tale as fast as Mrs. Strong could take it down.

But if he was amazed and even startled, he could not help being delighted. Long before, he had written of the joy of the artist in successful work. That joy was now his own in fuller measure than ever before. For he knew, with the assurance of a knowledge beyond all doubt, that what he was doing was good, was, for him, super-excellent. This, he said, was to be his masterpiece ; and he was right. For six or seven weeks that burst of new creative energy lasted, and *Weir of Hermiston* progressed at a speed not unworthy of Scott himself.

December came with no visible flagging of inspiration or of power. On the last day there was, I have been informed, some small incident which greatly agitated Stevenson. In his excitable condition he was easily agitated ; but he did his daily task as usual, dictating to his amanuensis with complete ease and mastery. In the evening, after a successful day's work, he descended from his tiny workroom, and, apparently with a complete recovery of spirits, joined his wife in making a salad. He produced, too, a bottle of a favourite brand of Burgundy, meaning, perhaps, to atone for the morning's impatience or outburst. As he talked, suddenly, like the child of Scripture, he

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

cried out, " My head, my head ! " and clutched it with both hands. Turning away quickly, meaning, it is supposed, to go to his bedroom, he staggered upstairs ; at the top he fell insensible, and never spoke again. Two doctors, Dr. Robert W. Anderson, R.N., who was with his ship at Apia, and Dr. Funk, a local physician, were quickly with him, but only to inform the stricken family that he was dying.

He had been carried into the great hall, and laid, first on his grandfather's chair, and then on a sort of bed-stretcher. His wife, distracted by the suddenness of the tragedy, paced the room wringing her hands ; his mother knelt quietly by his side, her tears falling upon him. Brave, fond mother ! She had seen the beginning of his life ; she had watched over him, loved him, helped him through all the vicissitudes of his strange career : and now she was seeing the end. No more trouble for Louis, whatever there might be for her.

From one part of the room his father looked down on him from Sir George Reid's portrait ; from another his grandfather's marble bust. He was thus not so far from home, after all. He lay breathing stertorously, his face flushed, his wide, unseeing eyes staring at the ceiling which had been his pride. Two hours he lay thus, while prayers were said over him. Then of a sudden came a long, convulsive breath ; then two or three short, gasping breaths ; then a long, fluttering sigh, and he was still for ever. *Unarm, Eros ! the long day's task is done, and we must sleep.* The date was December 3, 1894, the hour ten minutes past eight in the evening.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Thus suddenly and almost painlessly passed Robert Louis Stevenson. His age was forty-four years and twenty days. The cause of death was cerebral hæmorrhage, or apoplexy. In a sense it was characteristic that he should die in such a manner. When the brief cablegram announcing his death and its cause reached Britain, many refused to believe the report; indeed, his uncle, Dr. George W. Balfour, actually wrote to the *Scotsman*, stating it was impossible that he should have so died. The medical explanation, I am informed, is that the blood-vessels were weakened by early disease; and therefore on sudden pressure, such as comes from great agitation, easily ruptured.

He was dressed and laid on the great hall table, with the flag¹ which he had flown on the *Casco* over him, and throughout the night watchers intoned the Roman Catholic prayers for the dead. Next day he was buried, quick burial being necessary in that climate. First, however, a way had to be cut through the jungle in order to make it possible for the funeral-party to reach the top of Mount Væa. The task, it seemed, could not be accomplished in time; but at dawn an army of willing workers, under the direction of Mr. Lloyd Osbourne, began the work, and soon after noon the path was made. At two o'clock a dozen Samoans, chosen for their strength and stature, bore the coffin forth, and the long, hard climb, emblematic, in a sense, of the dead man's life, began. By four o'clock all was over, and he lay at rest. As the mourners departed, an old chief, whom Stevenson

¹ Now the treasured possession of the Speculative Society, Edinburgh.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

had many times befriended, turned on the edge of
the descent and looked back.

"Tofā, Tusitala," he murmured, his eyes moist.
"Tofā, Tusitala. Sleep, Tusitala."

And after life's fitful fever Tusitala sleeps well.

CHAPTER X

†

CONCLUSION

STEVENSON'S mother did not long survive him. Soon after his death she returned to Scotland, and spent the last two years of her life among the scenes of her girlhood and youth, the scenes that he had consecrated. What Stevenson owed to his mother I have tried to show. As she was the first to perceive his uncommon abilities, so, more fondly than any other, she fostered and cherished them. "Oh! there is an enduring tenderness in the love of a mother to her son that transcends all other affections of the heart," wrote Washington Irving in a passage of immortal beauty. "It is neither to be chilled by selfishness, nor daunted by danger, nor weakened by worthlessness, nor stifled by ingratitude."

So it was with Stevenson's mother. When all others were hostile, when even his long-suffering father reached the limit of patience and endurance, she clung to Louis. She saw him disgraced by folly, ostracised in the town of his birth, made a laughing-stock and a by-word among her own people, and her love but enfolded him the more closely. She did not suspect (as he did not) that many of the qualities which outraged the respectabilities and pieties of the "unco' guid" of

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Edinburgh were a heritage from her; that the foreign blood, which, to us, accounts for so many of his peculiarities, was a maternal inheritance. Yet had she known, had she been making atonement for such hereditary transmission, her devotion could not have been more tender, more ardent, or more steadfast.

And in those last years she had her reward for everything. She saw his fame established; she saw him, no longer the writer of promise whose boyish productions she had praised and preserved, as with clear prevision of what was to come, but acclaimed as a master of his art, and one of the best-beloved writers in recent literature. Sweeter still, she saw him honoured where once he was ridiculed and contemned. On December 10, 1896, a great meeting was held in the Music Hall, Edinburgh, to inaugurate a movement for a memorial in his native city.¹ Lord Rosebery presided, and the hall was packed, for Edinburgh, a little conscience-stricken, perhaps, was at last beginning to appreciate something of the achievement of its famous son. When Mrs. Stevenson arrived in the midst of a crowd, there was some difficulty in finding room for her. "His mother is with us," said Lord Rosebery; and there was an ovation as she was conducted to a place on the platform. What she heard in the next two hours must have been the rarest cordials to her heart. That meeting was the culmination of her joy. Five months later, on May 14, 1897, she died of pneumonia, at 8 Randolph Crescent, overlooking the Water of Leith. It is said she breathed her last with Lou's name on her lips.

¹ The result was the replica of the medallion by St. Gaudens which now stands in St. Giles's Church.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Mrs. R. L. Stevenson survived her husband by twenty years. She had returned to California ; and at Santa Barbara on February 18, 1914, she died as suddenly as Stevenson had died, and, like him, from the bursting of a blood-vessel in the brain. Her body was cremated, and a year later the casket containing her ashes was taken to Apia and built into the side of his tomb on Mount Væa.

STEVENSON'S LATER APPEARANCE

Stevenson's face is familiar from manifold reproductions of portraits, some of them of no great truth to physical detail. Of his general appearance, the best description is that in Henley's famous, much-quoted sonnet :

“ Thin legged, thin chested, slight unspeakably.”

In the end the thinness became a pitiable emaciation. A clear-eyed observer who saw him in Samoa a short time before his death described him as “ almost a skeleton and wasted to a mere shadow. He seemed light enough to lift with one finger. A blow would have killed him.”¹ In height he was some three inches short of six feet, and for all its disabilities the fragile figure retained a youthful springiness, litheness, and nervous energy strikingly at variance with his wasted, weary look. His hair, flaxen-fair in childhood, deepened in colour to a very dark brown scarcely distinguishable from black, and was worn long, at any rate until residence in the tropics minimised

¹ *The Academy*, December, 1896.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

the risk of catching cold. Copious in youth, it became towards the last thin, straggling, and streaked with grey. His eyes too were brown, and for the narrowness of their setting seemed disproportionately wide apart. All accounts agree they were singularly expressive, especially in moments of joy, when they were, as Henley observed, "radiant with vivacity."

His head was by no means massive, nor for such a man was the rounded forehead at all remarkable, either in breadth or height. The mouth was not without a suggestion of sensuality, and in certain aspects had a somewhat unpleasant look. One observer found it suggestive of vindictiveness, surely a misjudgment.¹ Mr. Frederick Greenwood, once editor of the *Pall Mall Gazette*, referring to Stevenson's portraits, wrote: "There are many of them, but all of them have the same strange stamp of something more than personal singularity. The face of him in these portraits is the face of a man from another and *not* a superior world. To me it is the most threateningly elfish face I have ever seen in print or paint."²

The voice, though not strong, was rich, mellow, and resonant on the middle notes, but apt in moments of excitement to rise to a thin piping treble, partly inherent, partly, perhaps, a reminiscence of the high-pitched Edinburgh intonation. In repose or reflection his expression was often unattractive, some even found it repellent; but all observers agree that when Stevenson smiled his whole countenance was transformed and transfigured. For laughter in the deeper sense he appears to have had little real

¹ Sir Berry Cusack-Smith, for some time British Consul at Apia.

² *The Sphere*, December 7, 1901.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

gift. Even when strongly moved to mirth his laugh was a sort of convulsion, as though the effort hurt him physically. Indeed, setting aside the effects of ill-health, his physical characteristics corresponded very strikingly to his mental and moral. Lightness, audacity, fiery impetuosity of heart and soul, an eager, ever-ready enthusiasm rather than depth or power, characterised the whole man. At no period of his life had he the repose of quiet strength ; without metaphor it may be said that he was for ever effervescent ; and in that fact, indeed, lies no small part of his charm.

A BASELESS FEAR

Stevenson died in the fear that his popularity was waning. The fear, as we know, was baseless. Thirty years have passed since his death ; and not only has his popularity not waned, it has soared to a height beyond the wildest dreams of his lifetime. How is that popularity to be explained ? Is Stevenson the supreme writer who nestles in the universal heart of humanity and plays upon its strings---that is, does he by virtue of sheer genius captivate and enthrall mankind, or is his triumph achieved by lower, but, to the multitude, perhaps more attractive qualities ? The answer, if I have written to any purpose, is given in the course of these pages ; yet with the record closed and the finished achievement before us, it may be convenient to consider very briefly both the reasons for his continued vogue and his place in the hierarchy of letters.

Setting aside for the moment the question of

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

intrinsic worth, the circumstances of his life, and the uses made of them, unquestionably account for much of the interest attaching to his career. The public likes the picturesque and spectacular, with a touch of "the penny plain and twopence coloured" spirit. Byron will always cast a spell while Wordsworth may merely excite a yawn. In his own life Stevenson supplied the elements of a picturesqueness often verging on the bizarre, in a measure and a manner unique in his generation. At the beginning I said he not only wrote romance, but lived romance; and the romance he lived was pre-eminently of the kind to engage the public attention.

Those queer wanderings in the South Seas; those flights from death; those levities and eccentricities of behaviour and appearance; the penury, the hardship, the invincible determination, and then the sudden blaze of splendour as a Pacific island chief, so romantically reported—all these in their varied and cumulative effect were well calculated to fascinate the public imagination. Moreover, his death was most singularly of a piece with his life. The hero, it has been said, should above all make a striking and dramatic exit. Wolfe Nelson, Lincoln (to take convenient examples) gave the crowning touch of glory to their lives by the manner of their death. Stevenson's exit was the most arresting event in his history, a fitting consummation of a strange, unparalleled career. As he had lived a life of contradiction, so it seemed meet that he should die tragically of an impossible disease, in the very moment of victory. It seemed that Fate, the supreme and final artist, could not have arranged a more startling, more dramatic passing.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

PERSONALITY

There has to be added the fascination of a bubbling and infectious egotism. "Stevenson," wrote Henley out of the fullness of knowledge, "was of his essence what the French call *personnel*. He was, that is, incessantly and passionately interested in Stevenson. He could not be in the same room with a mirror but he must invite its confidences every time he passed it ; to him there was nothing obvious in time or eternity, and the smallest of his discoveries, his most trivial apprehensions, were all by way of being revelations, and as revelations must be thrust upon the world ; he was never so much in earnest, never so well pleased (this were he happy or wretched), never so irresistible as when he wrote about himself." In personal and social relationships egotism is a cardinal sin against good breeding; in literature of a certain kind it is a celestial virtue, to be encouraged and adored. Stevenson, as we have seen, cultivated the art with a sleepless assiduity throughout his entire career. And he had his reward in the doting fondness of a host of readers who innocently fancied he was laying his heart bare for their delight and edification. There, they said in tones of rapture, was the most beautiful, the most adorable personality in contemporary, or, as some courageous souls averred, in all, literature. Nothing like his frankness, his charm, had ever been known. *Le plus grand des plaisirs c'est l'abandon de soi-même.* He let himself go ; and the effect was pure enchantment to a world of worshippers. It was a triumph that contributed enormously to his popularity.

It follows that this radiant personality shines

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

resplendently in all his works—essays, letters, books of travel, poems, stories. In the essays, letters, travel-books, and poems it is, as already remarked, in place ; for there it is of the essence of the charm. But they pay him a doubtful compliment who gleefully discover it as the predominant ingredient in his novels and romances. Every creative writer must have personality, else he were no creator. But the greater he is the more successfully will he merge himself in his characters, the more cunningly, that is, will he conceal himself behind his creations. Out of their divine affluence the master-spirits of imaginative literature create a whole bustling, throbbing, variegated world of humanity ; but of the magicians themselves we catch scarcely a glimpse. What do we know of Homer from the Homeric poems, or of Shakespeare from his plays ? What should we learn of Cervantes from *Don Quixote*, of Goethe from *Faust*, of Scott from *Ivanhoe*, of Thackeray from *Esmond* ? To be sure, two great creative artists, Hugo and Meredith, allow personality to romp, on the principle, seemingly, that man is greater than art. He must be, since art is man's creation. Nevertheless, the real triumph of the creative artist lies, not in self-assertion, but in self-suppression, or at any rate in self-surrender and complete absorption in the art he practises. Notwithstanding their superb achievements, Hugo and Meredith stand rather as warnings than exemplars, the exception, if you like, that proves the rule.

While Stevenson's personality is an abiding charm in his miscellaneous writings, it is, so far as it obtrudes itself in his fiction, a blemish, in reality a cloak used, perhaps unconsciously, to cover meagreness of creative power, a limitation sharply

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

emphasised by the frequency with which, so to speak, he throws himself on the screen. "From the mysterious decree which prescribes the vocations of men," says Renan, in a memorable farewell address, "Tougenief received the noblest gift of all: he was born essentially impersonal. His mind was not that of an individual more or less richly endowed by nature; it was in some measure the mind of a people." Stevenson was not born with the supreme gift of being impersonal; and to say that is, in effect, to exclude him from the first rank of novelists, and perhaps even from a high place in the second. An ebullient, restless personality (and his was both) so attractive in essays, letters, and occasional poems is, in the higher region of creative literature, a positive bar to supreme excellence. Scott was very nearly impersonal, and his creations have a rare richness and variety; Shakespeare was completely impersonal, and his creations are—human nature itself.

At the time of his death Stevenson was producing work which, even in its fragmentary state, is beyond all question his masterpiece. What it might or would have become, had he been permitted to finish it, must be fairly obvious to any novelist who takes the trouble to think the problem out. What might have followed it, had longer life been granted, is only a fond speculation. Would the heightened and heightening power have lasted; would it have soared still higher? Manifestly Stevenson was reaching after the true creator's ideal of the impersonal. As he proceeds the broad note of human actuality is sounded more and more clearly, and the vaunted personality obtrudes itself less and less. Would he have gone on; would he

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

have forgotten himself entirely in his creations and given us characters quick with the hot blood of humanity and situations breathing the very breath of Destiny? Such, assuredly, is the way of the immortals.

At bottom it is a question of native endowment. Art is great, but only as the handmaid of Nature; and with all his accomplishments, Nature was not lavishly munificent with Stevenson. Concerning his own gifts he was remarkably clear-sighted and commendably honest. He knew just what enabled him to go so far and achieve so much. Again and again he dwelt on the slenderness of his equipment; nor was he honest in any spirit of mock-modesty. It was with no sham humility he insisted that he owed everything to his "dire industry"; and that, if he had genius at all, it was simply a genius for hard work. And which is worthier of the crown of laurel, the Titan who does all things easily because of his great strength, or the ordinary man who, in the stress of battle, acquits himself not only honourably but heroically, even in the face of failure?

In one important respect Stevenson was at a grave disadvantage. A writer, be his gifts never so high and splendid, is not a patent machine for producing books, nor is literature a vague and cloudy something, remote from the warmth and throb of life, something anæmic, attenuated, ethereal, never meant to come home to men's business and bosoms. An author is first a human being; and the more human he is the better for the creatures of his imagination. Though Stevenson roamed the world so much, the circumstances of his life precluded him from becoming "deeply

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

versed in the ways of men." It was a serious loss. For the novelist of all men can least afford the sheltered seclusion of cloisters or the sick-room. His business is not with monks or nuns, or the circumscribed activities of the invalid ; it is not even, as Stevenson discovered, with imaginary pirates and highwaymen ; but with the seething, motley world of ordinary men and women who jostle and strive and suffer, succeed and fail, love and hate, are happy or miserable. If he is to depict them as they are, transfer them, in all their palpitating reality, to his canvas, he must know them, live with them, enter into their lives—in a word, become as one of themselves.

The superiority in many respects of the great Greek and Roman writers lies, I conceive, largely in the fact that they were also men of affairs—soldiers, admirals, politicians, adventurers in the practical sphere of action. They knew the world before they wrote of it. The same is true of our own Elizabethans ; and, indeed, continues to be true of almost every writer of enduring quality. Save for a short time at the end of his career, Stevenson took no part in affairs and was little in contact with men of the world. The experience, when it came, was slight enough. Yet it does not appear at all fanciful to ascribe to it, at least in part, his new feeling for reality, and his sense of its necessity in his own work. Remote as *Weir of Hermiston* is from Samoan scenes and characters, it may easily have benefited by its author's enlarged knowledge of the mixed, anomalous, contradictory motives which actuate mankind. The imagination was enriched and stimulated by new suggestions ;

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

and to the imagination a suggestion is more than a volume of evidence to the dry-as-dust intellect.

SCOTT AND STEVENSON—THE SECRET OF STYLE

It is the fashion, indeed it has become a commonplace of criticism, to compare Stevenson with Scott. It seems to me unfair, almost cruel, to make such a comparison. Beside Scott, Stevenson is the smart boy in a lower form, pert, alert, nimble, indubitably clever and agile, but lacking *thew and sinew*. As regards creative power, no just comparison is possible; nor even in regard to style can the comparison be aptly sustained. "Sir Walter's books," observes a discerning American critic, "seem to me like a large symphony which has many discords; Stevenson's like a discreet yet moving theme perfectly played on fewer instruments." The perfectly-played theme, be it big or little, is always a delight; but it may well be less impressive, less potent to touch and enthrall than the broken music of the large, careless genius whose very imperfections spring from inexhaustible opulence. The lover of verbal neatness, of grace, of symmetry, will always be apt to deride Scott and extol Stevenson.

As has been pointed out a hundred times, Scott is slovenly, uncouth, inchoate. He has passages without number which set the teeth on edge. There is scarcely a fault of style which a teacher of English might not illustrate from his works, while Stevenson is the model to be set with enthusiasm for the class. At first glance he seems to have all the virtues which Scott so conspicuously lacks. Yet Scott is in the first flight of English prose-writers, and

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Stevenson is not. The Waverley Novels, disfigured as they are by blemishes which would bring a fourth-form boy deserved punishment, dull, ragged, careless as they are in many parts, nevertheless contain scenes and passages by the hundred (they will readily occur to every reader) which in pure style soar to heights never reached by Stevenson.

The reason is obvious. For style at its highest something more than a delicate, fastidious taste in words is needed. Indeed, it is no paradox to say that not until the creative writer forgets words in the glow, the "fine frenzy" of creation does he achieve the glories, the harmonies, and witcheries of great style. The white-heat intensity of imagination, in which language becomes molten and runs easily into any shape imposed upon it, is the real secret of that final triumph. The "thoughts that breathe" bring the "words that burn." So it ever is with the lords of language. Isaiah, Job, Æschylus, Dante, Shakespeare, are above the dominion of words—masters, not slaves. And often intensity of imagination performs its miracles as with the artless simplicity of a child. *The driving is like the driving of Jehu, the son of Nimshi, for he driveth furiously.* There at a stroke, as by a flash of lightning, we have a whole character limned. By a single sentence composed of simple words Jehu and his driving are made vivid for ever.

Of that miraculous power Stevenson had little. With him language is rarely if ever molten; rarely if ever comes with a pouring rush that, so to speak, carries the reader off his feet. Rather his style flows equably like a smooth, pellucid, sunlit stream, with a murmur very soothing, very sweet to the ear, but conveying little suggestion of velocity, and

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

none at all of the beauties and terrors of the cataract and the abyss. "The thought constructs the tune," said Emerson of Shakespeare; and at his best the same is true of Scott. With Stevenson, almost to the very end, the tune constructs the thought. The difference is immense, vital; and it is essentially the difference between the author of *The Antiquary* and the author of *Kidnapped*.

The enormous labour it cost Stevenson to master the art of writing has been fully described in the preceding pages; here it is necessary only to touch very briefly on the result. Such was his zeal for mere technique, it might be said of him, as was said of Amiel, "he would willingly believe that writing is a thing apart from thinking." He doted on words, not like a student, but like a lover; wore them, as he remarked, "next his skin and slept with them." And he succeeded in fashioning for himself an instrument of rare and exquisite delicacy. It is not an instrument of any remarkable compass or power; the heights and depths of passion and emotion are beyond its range, or more correctly beyond the range of its creator; for, after all, in essence the style is the man. No theory of æsthetics or of technique, no piously-devised system of "learning to write," will produce a Shakespeare. A Shakespeare simply arrives; and behold! unimaginable splendours and glories of style. In that matter as in so much else Nature keeps her mystery inviolate.

Nevertheless, the genius which is "an infinite capacity for taking pains" achieves wonders; and, by dint of incredible labour and a devotion almost unexampled, Stevenson achieved a style which, probably more than any other of his time, has moved admiration and envy. Never before

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

was style so loudly and so lavishly praised. I have refreshed my memory by re-reading a selection of the innumerable panegyrics it has evoked, and have enjoyed a feast of superlatives. It is indeed difficult to see by what stretch of ingenuity adulation could be carried farther. All the excellences, all the beauties, all the virtues which have ever distinguished the masterpieces of literature are, so the eulogists boldly aver, exemplified and enhanced in the writings of Stevenson. It is good to be generous, and such burning enthusiasm is immensely exhilarating, even if it momentarily dazzles and bewilders the critical judgment.

It should be noted that much of that unqualified praise was bestowed while Stevenson still lived, and that he was not intoxicated. The peril of excessive praise is a favourite theme with the moralist. We are told that it relaxes the fibre, swells the head, induces a spirit of carelessness, of pride and insolence. The exact contrary was the effect on Stevenson. To him eulogy was not an intoxicant but an incentive, spurring him to yet higher ideals and more arduous efforts. As his reputation grew he became more and more exacting with himself, more and more a believer in the virtue of constant, determined work. Public appreciation was but the measure of his failure. For he knew (as every true artist knows) how pitifully his best efforts fell short of his own ideal. That shone high above him like a star, mentor and monitor, at once taunting him with weakness and inspiring him with hope, and he followed it with all the concentrated ardour of a devotee.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

THE CROWNING MERIT

And it is precisely there that he makes his last, most potent appeal. Men and women in general are little concerned with questions of style ; even in books, "which the world will not willingly let die," they may have but a feeble and transient interest. But they are fascinated by devotion, thrilled and inspired by the spectacle of the brave man fighting against disastrous odds. I have tried to show how Stevenson lived, fared, and did his work, in what disabling conditions, with what tragic interruptions. We have followed him from land to land, from sea to sea, in his flight from "swift death." We have seen him blind, prostrate, deep in the Valley of the Shadow, given up by doctors, and still toiling invincibly. In his own sphere, what other man than he has achieved so much amid so many difficulties and obstacles ? Alike in quantity and in quality the work he accomplished is amazing ; and, all things considered, is, so far as I know, without parallel. In the whole history of English literature there does not shine a braver, more devoted spirit than Robert Louis Stevenson.

As he comported himself in his strange passage through the world he was not always wise (who is ?), and I have not concealed his follies. He was human, and therefore fallible ; in certain clear-shining virtues which outweigh many faults he was (as I like to think) human also ; and these, too, I have endeavoured to set forth as they were. I have said that he can bear the truth ; and on that principle this book is written. From some vices,

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

by no means uncommon, he was notably free. There was in him nothing of the snob ; his whole career was, in fact, a protest against snobbery, from which in his early days he was forced to endure much.

His intimate friendships were few ; in that respect he was callous enough to be self-sufficing ; yet I do not find that he ever failed a friend in the hour of need. If his honour was at times smirched, it was nevertheless a principle of his nature to abhor meanness, chicanery, and all that goes with these. Above all, there shines in him an unflinching fidelity, a consuming devotion to an ideal. Of the shirker, the coward, there was not an atom in his composition. In the end his faith was the faith of the man who strives to the last iota of his strength. He died working, died, as he wished to die, "in his boots," a soldier gallantly fallen on the field of battle. It is in fidelity, in courage, that he is especially illustrious. He is of the heroes—

Made weak by time and fate, but strong in will,
To strive, to seek, to find and not to yield.

I end, therefore, as I began. When Robert Louis Stevenson is summed up, when his qualities, mental and moral, have been analysed and tabulated, it will be found that a superb courage crowns all. And from that master-quality flow, almost as a matter of course, other virtues in which he was conspicuous—generosity, love of justice, an eager humanity, a passion for the happiness of the race. Criticism may deny him the title "great" ; it cannot deny that he was brave. And it is his valour, tried as by fire at many a turn,

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

more than aught else that enchants, inspires, and
endears him to the peoples of two hemispheres.
At parting I salute him where he reposes on his
lonely hill-top in the far Pacific :

Atque in perpetuum, frater, ave atque vale.

Brother, hail and farewell, a long, long farewell.

THE END

INDEX

INDEX

ACADEMY, THE	I. 155, 159, 179, 182, 324 ; II. 67, 257
<i>Across the Plains</i>	II. 18, 105, 211
Acton	I. 225
Adams, Henry	II. 190
<i>Admiral Guinea</i>	II. 45-7
Advocates' Close	I. 165
Æschylus	II. 267
African wars	I. 122
Ah Fu	II. 149
Airdle, the	II. 137
<i>Alan Brick</i>	I. 238, 291 ; II. 74
Alexander, J. W	II. 81
Allen Giant	I. 211
<i>All Influences were in Vain</i>	I. 164
<i>Amateur Emigrant, An</i>	I. 228-40, 252-3, 256-7, 263, 292 , II. 247
<i>Amelia Balfour</i>	II. 208
American hospitality	II. 93
American influence in South Seas	II. 147
American winter	II. 104
Anaho	II. 127-8
Anaho, Bay of	II. 125
Anderson, Henry	I. 28
Anderson, Isobel	I. 28
Anderson, Dr. Robert	II. 251
Anstruther	I. 72, 87
<i>Antiquary, The</i>	II. 268
Antwerp	I. 184
Apemama	II. 148, 149
Apia	II. 151, 152, 154, 157, 168, 183, 194, 206, 235, 245, 257
Apollo	I. 189
<i>Apology for Idlers, An</i>	I. 203 ; II. 171

INDEX

Appeal to the Clergy of the Church of Scotland, An	I. 176
Appin murder, the	I. 342 ; II. 8
Appleton, Dr.	I. 155, 179
<i>Arcadia</i> , Sidney's	I. 305
<i>Arethusa</i> , the	I. 187, 202, 207
<i>Argus</i> , the	II. 159
Argyll, Duke of	I. 105
Aristotle	II. 27
<i>Arizona Breckonridge</i>	I. 253
Armitage, Harold	I. 338 <i>n</i>
Arnfield's Hotel	II. 90
Arnold, Matthew	I. 22, 121, 148
Aroria Island	II. 150
Ascot	II. 68
Ashton, Julian	II. 218
<i>Atalanta Magazine</i>	II. 214
<i>Athenæum</i> , the	II. 21
Athole, Vale of	I. 314
<i>Atlantic Monthly</i>	II. 235 <i>n</i>
Auckland	II. 167, 218
Augustine	I. 119, 164 ; II. 33
Austen, Jane	I. 150
<i>Autumn Effect</i> , An	I. 157
Autun	I. 224
Avignon	I. 148
Ayr	I. 182
Aytoun, Professor	I. 142
BABINGTON, REV. CHURCHILL	I. 144, 308-10
Baden-Baden	I. 141
Baildon, H. B.	I. 62
Baker Cottage, the	II. 103
Balachuilish	II. 71
<i>Baleful Potato</i> , The	I. 66
Balfour, Andrew	I. 32
Balfour, Dr. George W.	I. 34, 293, 329 ; II. 87 <i>n</i> , 253
Balfour, James (Clerk of Session)	I. 32
Balfour, James (Governor Darien Coy.)	I. 33
Balfour, James, Pilrig	I. 31
Balfour, Jane	I. 57
Balfour, John	II. 140
Balfour, Rev. Lewis	I. 30-3, 53, 102, 104, 234
Balfour, Margaret Isabella	I. 34

INDEX

<i>Ballads</i>	II. 175, 195
Ballantrac	I. 182
Ballantyne, R. M.	I. 45 ; II. 86 <i>n</i>
Balmoral	I. 305
Balzac	I. 151 ; II. 225
Barnford, Dr.	I. 265, 278
Bancroft, Lady	I. 85
Bancroft's <i>History of the United States</i>	I. 244
Barbizon	I. 183, 184, 192, 193, 203, 304 ; II. 218
Barclay, T.	I. 156
Barker, Mrs. Sale	I. 330
Barmouth	I. 157
Barrie, J. M.	II. 246
Bass, the	I. 96
Baudelaire	I. 196
Baxter, Charles	I. 82, 107, 139, 140, 141, 173, 180, 200, 201, 226 231, 233, 260, 266, 292, 315, 337, 350 ; II. 8, 29, 35, 111, 112, 116, 132, 138, 153, 163, 174, 193, 199, 211, 238, 240, 246, 247
Baynes, T. S.	I. 310 <i>n</i>
<i>Beach of Falesa</i>	II. 188-9
Beaton, Cardinal	I. 24
<i>Beau Austin</i>	II. 45, 46
Beckford	II. 66 <i>n</i>
Bell, Dr. Joseph	I. 85
Ben Vrackie	I. 305, 313
Bentley, publisher	I. 342
Béranger	I. 177
Berkeley, Bishop	II. 94
Berwick Law	I. 96
Besant, Walter	II. 53
Bibliophile Society of Boston	I. 114, 128, 178, 204, 303 ; II. 18 <i>n</i>
Biographer, difficulties of a	I. 3
Birth-proud people, a	I. 9
<i>Black and White</i>	II. 195, 198
<i>Black Arrow, The</i>	I. 91, 320, 322, 325, 329 ; II. 19, 74, 105
Black Forest	I. 141
<i>Black Watch</i>	II. 163
Black, William	I. 253
Blackie, Professor	I. 68, 85, 305, 335
Blacksmith's Daughter	I. 231
<i>Blackwood's Magazine</i>	I. 203
Blair Athole	I. 290, 306

INDEX

Blair, Helen	I. 28
Blair, John	I. 26, 27, 234 ; II. 123
<i>Body Snatcher, The</i>	I. 306 ; II. 52, 53
Boisgobey	I. 339
Bona, Cardinal	I. 108
Bordelais Straits	II. 129
Bough, Sam	I. 73
<i>Bloody Wedding, The</i>	II. 194
<i>Book of Martyrs</i>	I. 42
Boston, U.S.A.	I. 243
Boswell, James	I. 300, 301
<i>Bottle Imp, The</i>	II. 144, 198
Boucher, W.	I. 320, 325
Boulogne	I. 141
Bourget, Paul	II. 211
Bournemouth	II. 39, 75, 76, 82, 241, 323
<i>Bovary, Madame</i>	I. 198
Box Hill	I. 218
Braemar	I. 313, 314
Braxfield, Lord	I. 333
Brenner Pass	I. 65, 211
<i>Bride of Lammermoor, The</i>	II. 139
Bridge of Allan	I. 180
Bristo Port	I. 184
Brodie, Deacon	II. 65
Bronson, editor	I. 248
Brougham, Lord	I. 79, 141, 143, 284
Brown, G. Baldwin	I. 254 n
Brown, H. F.	II. 69
Brown, Dr. John	I. 142, 214 n, 315
Brown, Robert G.	I. 82, 84, 211
Browne, Gordon	II. 238
Browne, Sir Thomas	I. 87, 337 ; II. 106, 205, 226
Browning, Robert	I. 91, 182, 280 ; II. 77
Brussels	I. 142
Buchan, Earls of	I. 31
Buckland, Jack	II. 166, 167
<i>Bulletin, The</i>	I. 259
Bunyan, John	II. 64
Burford Arms	I. 218
Burford Bridge	I. 218, 221 ; II. 7
Burke, Edmund	I. 80, 344
Burlingame, E. L.	II. 96, 108, 141, 171, 198

INDEX

Burns, Robert	I. 43, 89, 112, 115, 123, 126, 127, 132, 136, 174, 175, 177, 215, 232 ; II. 138
Burt	I. 300, 301
Bury St. Edmunds	I. 144
Butaritari	II. 147
Byles the Butcher	II. 66
Byron, Lord	I. 31, 43, 89, 112, 115, 132, 195, 225, 281, 342 ; II. 66 n, 241, 260
<i>Byways of Book Illustration</i>	II. 16
CAER KETTON	I. 95, 174
<i>Cain : an Epic</i>	I. 91
Calderwood, Professor	I. 68
California	II. 120, 186
Calistoga	I. 273, 278
Calton Cemetery	I. 125
Calvin, John	I. 124, 165
Cambridge	II. 75
Campagne Defli	II. 12, 13, 14
Campbell, Professor Lewis	I. 308, 310 ; II. 225
Cannibalism	II. 126, 127
Cannonmills School	I. 59
Cape Race	II. 92
Carlyle, Thomas	I. 68, 110, 121, 142, 155, 156, 190, 215, 220, 229, 253, 260, 270 ; II. 43, 80, 226, 236
Carolines, the	II. 144
Carron, Loch	I. 183
Carruthers, solicitor	II. 208
Carson, Mrs. Mary	I. 255
Carswell, Nether	I. 17
Gasco, the yacht	II. 115, 116, 121, 123, 124, 125, 126, 127, 129, 130, 135, 136, 138, 166
Casquets, the	II. 130
Cassell & Co.	I. 321 ; II. 2, 19, 71, 214
Catrina	I. 302, 307 ; II. 71, 177, 212, 213, 217
Catullus	I. 127
Cedercrantz, Conrad	II. 202, 219
<i>Celestial Surgeon, The</i>	I. 233, 281
Celt, shyness of	I. 301
Celtic Myth, the	I. 21
<i>Century Magazine</i>	I. 281 ; II. 16, 19
Cernay la Ville.	I. 232
Cervantes	II. 262

INDEX

Chalmers, Bridget	I. 33
<i>Chambers's Journal</i>	I. 203
Chapman, Livingston	II. 98, 103
Charlie, Prince	I. 97
Chatto, Andrew	II. 160 n, 240
Chatto & Windus	II. 22, 57, 159, 195, 211
Chaucer	I. 91
Chester	I. 157
Chesterfield, Lord	II. 8
Chétillon-sur-Loing	I. 181, 187
Chicago	II. 120
<i>Child's Garden of Verses, A</i>	I. 40, 53, 91, 330 ; II. 3, 4, 5, 14, 17, 19, 26, 32, 36, 59, 58, 158
Chiswick	II. 110
<i>Christmas Sermon, A</i>	II. 106, 198
" Christopher North "	I. 141
<i>Chronicle of Friendships, A</i>	II. 77
Church and State	I. 121
<i>Churchman, The</i>	II. 67
Cicero	II. 226
<i>Cigarette</i>	I. 187, 202, 207
<i>Circumlocution Office</i>	II. 204
" Claire "	I. 127, 128, 130, 134, 136, 137
" Clarinda "	I. 136
<i>Clarissa Harlowe</i>	I. 207
Clark, Sir Andrew	I. 148 ; II. 9, 11, 38
Clarke, Rev. W. E.	II. 153, 190
Classics of childhood	II. 3
Claverhouse	I. 290
Clemens, S. L. (" Mark Twain ")	II. 114
Cleopatra	I. 164
Clinton, sub-editor <i>Young Folks</i>	I. 328
Cliques and coteries	II. 20
<i>Cloud of Witnesses, A</i>	I. 42
Coleridge	I. 86, 149, 225 ; II. 64
Colinton Manse	I. 34, 213 ; II. 2, 22, 87
Colley, Sir George	I. 343
Collins, Wilkie	I. 149
Colvin, Sir Sidney	I. 144, 149, 152, 153, 155, 182, 200, 218, 224, 228, 237, 256, 262, 286, 292, 302, 308, 310 n, 315 ; II. 9, 36, 42, 75, 76, 79, 89, 90, 112, 126, 130, 169, 170, 209, 244, 246, 247
Congreve	I. 89, 219, 287, 294

INDEX

- Constable & Co. II. 75 *n*
 Constant, Benjamin I. 80
Contemporary Review II. 53, 87
Contest of Wills, A I. 92
 Coppée I. 179
Cornelius Dabber I. 334
Cornhill Magazine . I. 154, 171, 180, 182, 202, 203, 207, 209, 211, 229,
 252, 253, 299, 307 ; II. 16, 21
 Cornwall I. 203
 Couper, Elizabeth I. 19
 Courage, novelist's need of I. 2
 Covenant, lights of I. 42
 Craibe Angus II. 217
 Cramond I. 213
 Crawford, "Tiger Earl" of I. 31
 Creator, teacher of critic II. 27
 Crimean War I. 122
Critic, The II. 67
 Crockett, S. R. I. 167
 Cromwell, Oliver I. 32
 Cumming, Elizabeth I. 17
 "Cummy." See Cunningham, Alison
 Cunningham, Alison . I. 40, 41, 42, 43, 44, 47, 103, 104, 107, 268,
 281
 Curtin, John II. 84, 85
 Cusack-Smith, Sir B. II. 258 *n*
- Daily Chronicle, the* II. 143
Daily News, the II. 72
 Dale, Mrs. I. 39
 Darnien, Father I. 345 ; II. 145, 159, 160, 171
 Damocles, sword of II. 249
 Dante I. 268, 282 ; II. 267
 Dartmoor II. 74
 Daudet, A. I. 196 ; II. 26
 David I. 43, 158, 160 ; II. 230
 David and Jonathan II. 24
David Balfour. See *Catriona*
 Davos Platz . I. 281, 293, 295, 298, 300, 302, 304, 339, 341, 345, 349 ;
 II. 1, 2, 6, 7, 9, 11, 13, 18, 36, 39
Davos Press, the I. 347
Deacon Brodie I. 228-9 ; II. 46, 47
Decline and Fall I. 20 ; II. 125

INDEX

Defoe	I. 71, 72, 317
<i>Demi Monde, The</i>	I. 195
Demi-paradise, A	I. 247
<i>De Profundis</i>	I. 255
<i>Devonia, the</i>	I. 237, 238, 239, 240, 242, 252 ; II. 92
<i>Dialogue on Character and Destiny</i>	I. 263, 275
Dickens, Charles	I. 89, 181, 190, 243, 270, 296, 311 ; II. 157
Dickson, Dr. K. R.	I. 81
Dieppe	I. 207
Dirleton	I. 252
Disraeli, B.	I. 315
Don Juan	I. 264
Don Juanism	I. 232
<i>Don Zulva the Brave</i>	I. 321
Dorchester	II. 75
Dordillon, Bishop	II. 128
Dostoeiwski	II. 26
Doyle, Sir A. C.	I. 85 ; II. 211
Dream in literature	II. 64
<i>Dreams</i>	II. 106
Drummond, Dr.	II. 30
Drummond, Kate	I. 129
Drummond of Blair	I. 26
Duddingston Loch	I. 166
Dumas	I. 191, 196, 198, 317 ; II. 25, 217, 225
Dumas, the younger	I. 195
Dumfries	I. 146
Dunblane	I. 140
Dusky Royalties	II. 131
<i>Dynamiter, The</i>	II. 31
 EALING	 I. 225
Earraid, island of	I. 72, 87
<i>Ebb Tide, The</i>	II. 217, 237
Eden of refuge, an	II. 12
Edinburgh	I. 125, 128, 130, 141, 142, 143, 146, 150, 156, 160, 165, 180, 183, 193, 199, 200, 202, 206, 213, 217, 221, 226, 255, 267, 276, 290, 293, 304, 332, 333, 335, 337, 338, 339, 350, 351 ; II. 2, 7, 25, 62, 84, 96, 124, 137, 153, 163, 184, 215, 234, 241, 246
<i>Edinburgh Edition, The</i>	II. 240, 242, 249
<i>Edinburgh Review</i>	I. 141
<i>Edinburgh University Magazine</i>	I. 84

INDEX

Education by travel	I. 64
El Dorado	I. 211
<i>Eleven Thousand Virgins of Cologne, The</i>	I. 201, 202
Eliot, George	I. 253
Elizabethans, the	II. 265
Elliot, Andrew	I. 66
Elliot, Gilbert	I. 32
Elphinstone, Cecilia	I. 31-2
Emerson, R. W.	II. 80, 268
Émigré, French	I. 28 ; II. 123
Emmet, T. A.	I. 79
<i>Encyclopædia Britannica, The</i>	I. 177
Ennius	II. 64
Environment	I. 119
<i>Equator, The</i>	II. 144, 145, 146, 147, 148, 149, 151, 152, 166
Eton	II. 203
Eveless Eden, an	I. 184
Exeter	II. 76
<i>Fables</i>	II. 238
<i>Fables of Song</i>	I. 154
Fairchild, Charles	II. 92, 94
Fakarava	II. 129, 130, 135
<i>Familiar Studies of Men and Books</i>	I. 158, 212, 342 ; II. 16
<i>Family of Engineers</i>	II. 200, 246
<i>Far from the Madding Crowd</i>	II. 76
<i>Feast of Famine, The</i>	II. 135
<i>Feast of Trimulchio, The</i>	II. 33
Feminine Triumph, a	I. 286
Fergusson, Robert	I. 112
Ferrier, James Walter	I. 82, 84 ; II. 24-5
Ferrier, Miss	II. 33, 36
Fielding, H.	II. 235
Fiji.	II. 192
Fine Art, Chair of, in Edinburgh University	I. 254
Flaubert	I. 196, 197, 198, 283 ; II. 26
Florizel, Prince.	I. 203
Fontainebleau	I. 181
<i>Footnote to History</i>	II. 200, 213
Forbes, Duncan	I. 300
<i>Forcigner at Home, The</i>	I. 44, II. 16
Foreign Office	II. 203
<i>Forest Notes</i>	I. 180

INDEX

<i>Forest State, the (Prince Otto)</i>	I. 272
Forster, John	I. 243
<i>Fortnightly Review</i>	I. 154, 299
<i>Forty Years in My Bookshop</i>	II. 75
France, Anatole	I. 196
<i>Francis Villon, Student, Poet, and Housebreaker</i>	I. 203
Frankfort	I. 141
Franklin, Benjamin	I. 263, 264
Franklin, Ben, Printing Company	II. 160 n
Fraser, Campbell, Professor	I. 68
Free St. Mary's School	I. 59 n
Freer, Adam	I. 30
Freer, George	I. 28
Freer, Marion	I. 30
Freer of Escandie	I. 26
French prose	I. 196
<i>French School of Fiction, Modern</i>	II. 33
Froude, J. A.	I. 190, 254
<i>Fruits of Solitude, The</i>	I. 263
Fuller, Thomas	I. 58, 197
Funk, Dr.	II. 252
GADARENE SWINE, THE	I. 105
Gareloch	I. 232
Garschine, Madame	I. 149, 150, 151
<i>Gates of Gold, The</i>	I. 258
Geddes, Jenny	I. 124
Genoa	I. 64
"Gentle art of Myth-making"	I. 115
Gilbert Islands	II. 164, 168
Gilbert, W. S.	II. 59
Gilbertian comedy, A	I. 261
Girvan	I. 182
Gladstone, W. E.	I. 16, 36, 105, 344 ; II. 21, 50, 69
Glasgow	I. 17
Glencorse	I. 167, 213
Glenorchy	II. 71
Goethe	I. 110, 141, 257 ; II. 64, 236, 262
Gordon, General	II. 55, 205
Gordon, Mr. and Mrs. J. E. H.	I. 218
<i>Gospel According to Walt Whitman</i>	I. 212
Gosse, E. W.	I. 200, 310 n
<i>Gossip on Romance, A</i>	I. 341 ; II. 59

INDEX

Grampians, the	I. 291, 313
Grant, Mrs.	I. 300
Great Madin Island	II. 147
Great men not perfect	I. 7
<i>Great North Road, The</i>	II. 62
Great War, the.	I. 122
Greek and Roman writers	II. 265
Greenaway, Kate	I. 330
Greenock	I. 237
Greenside Works	I. 18
Greenwood, Frederick	II. 258
<i>Greenwood State, The</i>	I. 257
Grey, Sir George	II. 218
Greze . I. 183, 184, 185, 188, 193, 199, 200, 201, 202, 203, 207, 232 ; II. 218	
Grove, George	I. 203
Grub Street	II. 117
<i>Guy Mannerling</i>	II. 207
HADDEN, TREVOR	II. 8
Haggard, B.	II. 208
<i>Hair Trunk, The</i>	I. 201
Hamerton, P. G.	I. 146, 213, 224, 254, 308, 310
Hamilton, Captain	II. 194
Hamilton, Louise	I. 31
Hamilton of Preston	I. 31
Hamilton, Robert	I. 31
Hamley, General	I. 296
Hardy, Thomas	II. 75, 76, 90
Harper, H. H.	I. 114, 168 ; II. 4
Harte, Bret	I. 248 ; II. 214
Havre	II. 91
Hawthorne, N.	I. 86, 87, 203 ; II. 67
Hazlitt, W.	I. 87, 179, 342
Hazlitt, projected Life of	II. 54
<i>Heathercat</i>	II. 238
Heine	I. 105, 160, 187 ; II. 44
Heintz, Dr.	I. 247
Helen of Troy	II. 128
Hellman, George S.	I. 114-16, 128-9, 151, 177, 178, 204, 344
Henderson and Macfarlane	II. 165
Henderson, James	I. 318, 320-8, 338
Henderson, schoolmaster	I. 59

INDEX

Henley, William Ernest 1. 79, 128, 139, 151, 153, 160, 164, 171-6, 180, 183, 184, 187, 188, 200, 201, 206, 211, 212, 217, 225, 228, 229, 230, 231, 237, 244, 247, 252, 254, 256, 262, 278, 283, 295, 321, 328, 329, 337, 339, 341, 342 ; II. 1, 2, 15, 16, 18, 19, 21, 25, 29, 32, 35, 42-6, 47-8, 50, 51, 59, 65, 79, 82, 90, 96, 106, 108, 109, 110, 113, 114, 117, 125, 130, 132-4, 155-6, 211, 234, 240, 257, 261

For final quarrel with Stevenson see under
Robert Louis Stevenson

Heredity	I. 119
Herodotus	II. 170
<i>Heron yacht</i>	I. 156
<i>Hester Noble</i>	I. 264
High Commissioner, The	II. 220
Highland character, Elusiveness of	II. 216
Highland Lassie, The	I. 127
Highland Summer, A	II. 10
<i>Highland Widow, The</i>	II. 189
Highlands, projected history of	I. 300, 302, 314 II. 54, 71
Highlands, real epic of	I. 301
Hird, Ben	II. 166
<i>History of Joseph</i>	I. 46
<i>History of Moses</i>	I. 46
Hiva-oo	II. 129
Hoey, Mrs. Cashel	II. 72
Hogan, J. F.	II. 143
Holmes, O. W.	II. 41
<i>Holy Fair, The</i>	I. 31
<i>Holy Willie's Prayer</i>	I. 230
Homburg	I. 64, 181
Homer	I. 282 ; II. 262
Honolulu	II. 132, 140, 142, 183, 237, 239
Hood, Thomas	I. 312
Horace	I. 193 ; II. 3, 225, 226
Horner, Francis	I. 79
<i>Hospital Verses</i>	I. 172
Howells, W. D.	II. 26
<i>Huckleberry Finn</i>	II. 114, 196
Hugo, Victor	I. 195, 198 ; II. 225, 262
<i>Humble Remonstrance, A</i>	II. 53
Humboldt	II. 124

INDEX

- Hume, David I. 107, 141
Hunhauna II. 125
Hutchinson, Allen II. 175, 239
Huxley, Professor I. 104
Hyde, Dr. II. 159-61
Hyères I. 281, 329; II. 15, 18, 22, 24, 28-9, 31, 36, 43, 111, 116, 199
Hyperion for a satyr II. 119
- Idler, The* I. 316
I Dreamed of Forest Alleys Fair I. 166
Ille Terrarum I. 177
Illustrated London News I. 182; II. 188, 238
Imaginative artists, gloom of I. 205
Independent, The II. 67
Indianapolis II. 103
Ingram, J. H. I. 179
Inland Voyage, An I. 184, 187, 207, 225, 282
Inverleith Terrace, No. 1 I. 37
Irongray I. 146
Irving, Washington I. 317; II. 255
Isaiah II. 257
Isle of Wight I. 64
It's Forth Across the Roaring Foam I. 280
- JAMES, G. P. R. I. 343
James, Henry I. 330; II. 18, 42, 53, 80, 81, 130, 197, 211, 214, 225, 237
Janet Nicoll, the II. 167, 171, 173
Japp, Dr. Alexander I. 317, 318, 319, 320, 321, 326, 327, 328, 338; II. 1
Jeffrey, Francis I. 79, 90, 101, 111, 143, 230
Jenkin, Fleeming I. 65, 69-71, 110, 111, 158, 182, 183, 200, 201, 221, 222, 226, 257, 304, 337, 342; II. 8, 42, 62
Jenkin, Mrs. Fleeming I. 110, 158, 162; II. 62
Jerome, K. J. I. 316; II. 238
Jerry Abershaw I. 343
Jersey City I. 244
Jersey, Lady II. 208
Joan of Arc II. 196
Job I. 160; II. 180, 267
Job's comforter, a II. 14
Johnson, Samuel I. 106, 300-1; II. 226, 227
Jolly Beggars, The I. 117; II. 188

INDEX

<i>Judy</i>	. . . . .	I. 320
Juvenal	. . . . .	II. 160
KALAKAUA, KING	. . . . .	II. 142, 146
Keats	. . . . .	I. 89, 91, 169, 175
Keir, Jean	. . . . .	I. 17
Kelland, Professor	. . . . .	I. 68
Kelvin, Lord	. . . . .	I. 68
<i>Kidnapped</i>	I. 176, 291, 302, 320, 323, 329 ; II. 8, 61, 71, 72, 73, 74, 77, 82, 93, 139, 156, 195, 198, 212, 213, 215, 268	
Killiecrankie	. . . . .	I. 291, 306
<i>King Matthias's Hunting Horn</i>	. . . . .	I. 178
Kingsley, Charles	. . . . .	II. 160
Kingussie	. . . . .	I. 348 ; II. 10, 18, 126, 137
Kinnaird Cottage	. . . . .	I. 313, 343 ; II. 137
Kipling, Rudyard	. . . . .	I. 311 ; 211, 218, 216
Knox, John	. . . . .	I. 156, 165
<i>Knox, John, and His Relations with Women</i>	. . . . .	I. 158
Knox, spirit of	. . . . .	I. 123
Kooamua, Chief	. . . . .	II. 126
LACTANTIUS	. . . . .	I. 108
Lafarge, artist	. . . . .	II. 190
La Fête	. . . . .	I. 187
Lamb, Charles	. . . . .	I. 87
Landor, W. S.	. . . . .	I. 210, 312
Lang, Andrew	I. 152, 155, 211, 229, 308, 310 n ; II. 18, 21, 54, 171	
<i>Lantern Bearers, The</i>	. . . . .	I. 65 ; II. 106
La Solitude	. . . . .	II. 15
Lathrop, G. P.	. . . . .	II. 73
Latin Quarter	. . . . .	I. 155
Lavater	. . . . .	II. 148
Law Examinations	. . . . .	I. 169
<i>Layman's Sermon, A</i>	. . . . .	I. 109
<i>Lay Morals</i>	. . . . .	I. 152, 229 ; II. 46, 231
Lees, J. Cameron	. . . . .	I. 310 n
Leighton, Robert	. . . . .	I. 319, 320, 327, 328, 339
Leper houses	. . . . .	I. 28
<i>Let Love Go</i>	. . . . .	I. 205
Liberton	. . . . .	I. 29
Lillie, Jean	. . . . .	I. 17, 37
Lincoln, Abraham	. . . . .	I. 122 ; II. 260
Lister, Lord	. . . . .	I. 171

INDEX

<i>Literary Portraits</i>	. . . . .	II. 235 <i>n</i>
<i>Literary World, The</i>	. . . . .	II. 72
Livy	. . . . .	II. 226
Lizars, A. J.	. . . . .	I. 29
Lizars, David	. . . . .	I. 28
Lizars Family	. . . . .	I. 29
Lizars, John	. . . . .	I. 28
Lizars, Margaret	. . . . .	I. 28-30
Llandudno	. . . . .	I. 157
Lochearnhead	. . . . .	II. 8
Lockhart, J. G.	. . . . .	I. 80, 141
<i>Lodging for the Night, A</i>	. . . . .	I. 195, 202
Loing, the	. . . . .	I. 181, 201, 202
Loire, the	. . . . .	I. 201
London, Lights of	. . . . .	II. 184
London, Literary stimulus of	. . . . .	I. 143
London Methodism	. . . . .	I. 21
Longfellow	. . . . .	I. 212
Longmans, Green & Co.	. . . . .	II. 57, 66
<i>Longman's Magazine</i>	. . . . .	II. 18, 53, 171
Loti, Pierre	. . . . .	II. 131 <i>n</i>
Low, Will H.	. . . . . I. 184, 193, 281 ; II. 15, 74, 77, 92, 96, 114	
<i>Lowden Sabbath Morn, A</i>	. . . . .	II. 6
Lowell, James Russel	. . . . .	I. 197 ; II. 77
<i>Lubeck, the</i>	. . . . .	II. 157, 192
<i>Ludgate Hill, the</i>	. . . . .	II. 90, 91, 92
Lysaght	. . . . .	II. 246
Lytton, B.	. . . . .	II. 67
<i>Macaire</i>	. . . . .	II. 47, 49
Macauley, Lord	. . . . .	I. 47, 90, 106, 197 ; II. 226
McCheyne, Robert Murray	. . . . .	I. 42
McClure, S. S.	. . . . . II. 96, 104, 105, 108, 115, 116, 173, 187	
McCrie, Thomas, D.D.	. . . . .	I. 158
Macdonald, Flora	. . . . .	I. 300
Macdonald, Sir Hector	. . . . .	I. 344
Macdonald, manager of <i>Times</i>	. . . . .	I. 232 <i>n</i>
MacGregors, The	. . . . .	I. 22
Mackay, W. Macdonald	. . . . .	II. 240
Mackintosh, Sir James	. . . . .	I. 80
MacLaren, J. Wilson	. . . . .	I. 332-6
<i>Macmillan's Magazine</i>	. . . . .	I. 152, 158, 203
MacPherson, Cluny	. . . . .	II. 10

INDEX

Madeira	II. 142
<i>Magazine of Art</i>	II. 2
Majuba Hill, Disaster of	I. 343
Malietoa Laupepa	II. 202, 221, 236
Mansfield, R.	II. 94
Mantz	I. 181
Mar, Earl of	I. 314
Marcus Aurelius	II. 125
<i>Markheim</i>	I. 210 ; II. 52, 66
<i>Mark Tapley</i>	I. 145
Marryat	I. 317
Marscilles	II. 11, 14
Marshall Islands, The	II. 144, 167
Martial	II. 225
Martin, Patchett	I. 207
Masson, David	I. 68
<i>Master of Bullantoe, The</i>	I. 13, 238, 297, 313 ; II. 107, 116, 135, 138, 139, 141, 142, 155, 156, 157, 192, 198, 213
Mataafa	II. 202, 208, 209, 219, 221, 235
Mattos, Mrs. K. de	II. 75, 109, 110
Maxwell, Sir H.	I. 22
Maybole	I. 182
Mediterranean	I. 201
Meiklejohn, Professor	I. 308, 310 n
Melodramatic Revolt, A	I. 101
Melville, Herman	II. 125
<i>Memoir of Fleeming Jenkin</i>	I. 221 ; II. 78, 82
<i>Memories and Notes</i>	II. 89
<i>Memories and Portraits</i>	I. 156, 179 ; II. 82, 87, 88, 92
Men of Genius, their love-affairs.	I. 127
Mentone	I. 64, 148, 153, 155
Meredith, George	I. 218-21, 232 ; II. 7, 59, 211, 225, 226, 236, 262
Merrit, Dr.	II. 121
<i>Merry Men, The</i>	I. 210, 307, 340, 341 ; II. 16, 81
Michelet	I. 196
Middleton, Safroni	II. 246
Middleton, Richard	I. 324, 325
Mid-Victorianism	I. 121
Mullaïs, Sir John	II. 56
Miller, Hugh	I. 142
<i>Mill House, The</i>	I. 169
Milton	I. 88, 282 ; II. 44
<i>Minister of State, The</i>	I. 219

INDEX

Mirabeau	I. 246
Miracles	I. 105
<i>Misadventures of John Nicholson</i>	II. 8, 82
Mitchell, Michael	I. 241
Mixing of Bloods	I. 30
<i>Modern Cosmopolis, A</i>	II. 18
Mot, Princess	II. 131, 134
Molière	I. 196
Molokai	II. 144
Monaco	I. 149
Monasquan	II. 114, 115
Monastier	I. 223
<i>Monmouth : A Tragedy</i>	I. 91
<i>Monstrous Regiment of Women, The</i>	I. 158
Montaigne	I. 87, 105, 179, 196
Monte Carlo	I. 149, 153
Monterey	I. 246, 258, 267
Montigny	I. 183, 185, 193
Montpellier	II. 11
Montreal	II. 103
Montrose, the great	I. 290
Moors, H. J.	II. 153, 154, 157, 168, 183, 190, 200, 206, 210, 219
<i>Morality of the Profession of Letters</i>	I. 299
<i>More New Arabian Nights</i>	II. 51
Moret	I. 202
Morley, John (Lord Morley)	I. 154
<i>Morning Star, The</i>	II. 143
Mother Love	II. 255
Mount Ego	I. 298
<i>Movements of Young Children</i>	I. 176
Murray, John, publisher	I. 43
Musset, De	I. 196
Myers, F. W. H.	II. 69, 70
<i>My First Book</i>	I. 316, 320, 327
NAPLES	I. 64
Napolcon	II. 55
National psychology	I. 124
<i>Nation, New York</i>	II. 46, 47
Nebraska	I. 245
Neilston, parish of	I. 16
Nelitchka	I. 150
Nelson, Lord	II. 260

INDEX

Nemours.	I. 189
Nerli, Count	II. 233
<i>New Arabian Nights, The</i>	I. 89, 211, 218, 223, 297, 311 ; II. 2, 16, 57
Newell, Rev. J. E.	II. 153, 209
<i>New Form of Intermittent Light</i>	I. 93
Newman, Cardinal	I. 89, 110 ; II. 127, 160, 226
New material	I. 4
<i>New Poems</i>	I. 114, 151, 280
Newport, Rhode Island	II. 92
<i>New Quarterly Magazine</i>	I. 212, 240
New York	I. 240, 285 ; II. 94, 113-15, 120, 139, 192
Niagara	I. 249
Nice	II. 13, 14, 15
Nightingale, Florence	I. 122
Nonuti	II. 148
North Berwick	I. 65, 252 ; II. 106
Northern Lights, Board of	I. 19
Noumea	II. 173
Novelist's outfit	I. 2
Nukahiva	II. 125, 126, 129
OBAN	II. 70
<i>Odyssey, the</i>	II. 21
<i>Olalla</i>	II. 62
<i>On Falling in Love</i>	I. 203
<i>Ordered South</i>	I. 152, 283, 300
Ori-a-Ori, Chief	II. 132, 134, 136, 138
<i>Orleans, Charles of</i>	I. 182
Osbourne, Mrs. Fanny van de Grift	I. 188, 189, 199, 200, 222, 223, 231, 233, 234, 244, 246, 249, 261, 267, 272
(See also Stevenson, Mrs. R. L.)	
Osbourne, Lloyd	I. 316, 346 ; II. 90, 94, 104, 107, 114, 120, 142, 149, 155, 161, 166, 167, 168, 175, 192, 197, 253
Osbourne, Samuel	I. 261, 262, 273
Osbourne, S. L., & Co.	I. 347
Ossian	I. 300
Otis, Captain	II. 121, 124, 135
<i>Our Mutual Friend</i>	I. 296
Ovid	I. 163
<i>Owl, The</i>	II. 238
Oxford	II. 203

INDEX

PAGO-PAGO	II. 194
<i>Pall Mall Gazette</i>	I. 203, 299 ; II. 52
<i>Pall Mall Magazine</i>	II. 97, 118, 258
<i>Pan's Pipes</i>	I. 211
Papeete	II. 130, 136
<i>Paradise Lost</i>	I. 1 ; II. 189, 196
Paris	I. 183, 184, 192, 193, 194, 203, 221, 232, 304 ; II. 11, 184
Parliament House	I. 170, 180, 199
<i>Partial Portraits</i>	II. 80
Pascal	I. 110
Paul, Sir James Balfour	I. 21
Paul, Kegan, & Co.	I. 207
Paumotus	II. 129
<i>Pavilion on the Links, The</i>	I. 252
Payn, James	II. 16, 21, 67, 68
Pearce, Charles E.	I. 319, 320, 323, 325, 327, 338, 339 ; II. 19
Peebles	I. 65
Penn, William	I. 263
<i>Penny Plain</i>	I. 52
<i>Penny Whistles</i> , see also <i>A Child's Garden of Verses</i>	I. 332 ; II. 2
<i>Pentameron, The</i>	I. 210
<i>Pentland Rising, The</i>	I. 66, 68
Pentlands, a paradise of romance	I. 97
Pentlands, The	I. 167 ; II. 87, 137, 247
Penzance	I. 202
Pepys, S.	I. 299 ; II. 232
Persius	II. 64
Personal Reminiscence, a	II. 60
Perth, County of	I. 290
Peterson, William	I. 33
Petronius	I. 337 ; II. 33
<i>Pharos, The</i>	I. 73
Phillips, A. R.	I. 320, 321, 322, 329
<i>Pickwick Papers, The</i>	I. 311 ; II. 215
<i>Picturesque Notes on Edinburgh</i>	I. 213, 225
<i>Piers Plouman</i>	II. 64
Pilgrimage	I. 342, 345
<i>Pilgrim's Progress, The</i>	I. 42 ; II. 189
Pilsach, Baron	II. 202, 233
Pitlochrie	I. 291, 305 ; II. 107
Plato	I. 317
Plattsburg	II. 102
Poe, E. A.	I. 148, 179, 212, 317, 328 ; II. 67

INDEX

Poetic Justice	I. 274
Pollock, W. H.	I. 155
Pope	I. 89, 115 ; II. 44, 226
<i>Portfolio, The</i>	I. 146, 157, 176, 213, 224
Presbyterian Assembly	II. 218
Presbyterian Sunday	I. 106
<i>Prince Otto</i>	I. 272 ; II. 19, 57, 58, 60, 125, 138
<i>Providence and the Guitar</i>	I. 190
Psychology	I. 23
Psychology, Morbid	II. 243
<i>Pulvis et Umbra</i>	II. 106
<i>Punch</i>	II. 72
QUARLES ON MONEY	I. 271
Queensferry	I. 213
Quincey, Thomas de	I. 149 ; II. 64
<i>Quo Vadis</i>	II. 33
RABRELAIS	I. 109 ; II. 235
Raiata	II. 128
Rannoch, Moor of	I. 291
<i>Realism, Note on</i>	II. 26, 28
<i>Redgauntlet</i>	I. 44
Registrar-General, Returns of	I. 124
Reid, Captain Denis	II. 146, 147, 150, 153
Reid, Sir George	II. 224, 252
<i>Reisebilder</i>	I. 187
Renan, E.	I. 179, 274, 302, 331 ; II. 27, 211, 263
<i>Requiem, The</i>	II. 32
<i>Return of the Native, The</i>	II. 76
Reunion House	I. 241
Reviews, American	II. 73
Rhine, The	I. 64
Rhone, the	I. 64, 148, 201
Richmond	II. 39
Ripon, Lord	II. 220
Ritchie, Adam	I. 99
Road of the Loving Heart	II. 247, 250
<i>Roads</i>	I. 89, 146, 155
Robertson, historian	I. 141
Robertson, William, D.D.	II. 85
<i>Robinson Crusoe</i>	II. 21
Rob Roy	I. 21, 22, 27, 100, 302 ; II. 72, 217, 239

INDEX

Rochefoucauld	I. 196
Roch, Valentine	II. 90, 94, 120
Rosebery, Lord	II. 256
Romance, Golden Age of	I. 35
Rome	I. 64
Roslin	I. 213
Royal Society of Arts, Edinburgh	I. 93
Royat	II. 21, 35
Rodin, sculptor	II. 42, 77
Ruedi, Dr.	II. 7
Ruskin, John	I. 83, 142
Russian Realists	II. 26
SACRAMENTO	II. 120
Sainte-Beuve	I. 148, 196
St. Gaudens, A.	II. 96, 114
St. Germain	I. 304
St. Helena, Mount	I. 279
St. Hill, Mrs. K. H.	II. 175, 176, 180
<i>St. Ives</i>	I. 89; II. 246, 250
St. Marcel	II. 11, 14
<i>Saints' Everlasting Rest</i>	I. 42
Salvini	I. 150, 182
Samoa	II. 21, 41, 154
Samoa Women	II. 153
<i>Samoa Times</i>	II. 210
Sanchez, A.	I. 248
Sanchez, Mrs.	I. 272
"Sand, George"	I. 151
San Francisco	I. 244, 245, 255, 258, 260, 267, 268, 272, 279; II. 113, 115, 120, 143
<i>San Francisco Chronicle</i>	I. 259
Santa Barbara	II. 257
Saranac	II. 113, 115, 124
Sargent, John S.	II. 81
<i>Sartor Resartus</i>	II. 60
<i>Saturday Review</i>	I. 146, 155; II. 20, 59
Saul	I. 43
Savage Island	II. 169
Savile Club	I. 155, 180, 200, 225, 228; II. 152
Schlegel, W. F.	I. 342
Scilly Isles	I. 202
<i>Scots Observer</i>	II. 159

INDEX

Scott, Mary, " Flower of Yarrow "	. . . . .	I. 32
Scott, Robert, " Sandyknowe "	. . . . .	I. 32
Scott, Dr. T. B.	. . . . .	I. 273 ; II. 81, 82 n
Scott, Walter	. . . . .	I. 32
Scott, Sir Walter	I. 20, 32, 47, 58, 74, 81, 83, 101, 132, 142, 179, 198, 215, 251, 290, 300, 302, 307, 311, 317 ; II. 22, 26, 27, 66 n, 87, 154, 184, 189, 199, 216, 226, 240 262	
Scott, Walter, of Raeburn	. . . . .	I. 32
Scott, Sir William, and others of family	. . . . .	I. 32
Scribner, Charles	. . . . .	II. 96, 101
Scribner, Charles, & Son	. . . . .	II. 108
<i>Scribner's Magazine</i>	. . . . .	II. 105, 138, 198
Sellar, Professor	. . . . .	I. 68, 308, 310
<i>Semiramus : a Tragedy</i>	. . . . .	I. 272
Sens	. . . . .	I. 148
<i>Sentimental Journey, A</i>	. . . . .	I. 187
Sewall, American Consul	. . . . .	II. 190, 194
Shakespeare	I. 83-8, 110, 179, 193, 194, 203, 218, 282 ; II. 26, 262, 263	
Shelley, Sir Percy, and Lady Shelley	. . . . .	II. 81
Sheridan	. . . . .	I. 287
Shorter, Clement	. . . . .	II. 62
<i>Shovels of Newton French</i>	. . . . .	II. 200, 212
Silverado	. . . . .	I. 279
<i>Silverado Squatters</i>	. . . . .	I. 281, 283, 341 ; II. 1, 18, 25
Simoneau, Jules, and wife	. . . . .	I. 247-9
Simpson, Sir Walter	I. 141, 156, 180, 189, 201, 208, 293, 342	
<i>Sire de Malétoit's Door</i>	. . . . .	I. 202
Siron's Inn	. . . . .	I. 192
Sitwell, Mrs. (Lady Colvin)	I. 108, 144, 148, 150, 152, 156, 173, 190, 263, 302	
Skene, Edwards & Bilton	. . . . .	I. 140, 167
Skene, W. F.	. . . . .	I. 140
Skerryvore	. . . . .	II. 40, 41, 74, 78, 80, 88
Smiles, Samuel	. . . . .	I. 87
Smith, Captain	. . . . .	I. 247
Smith, Rev. George	. . . . .	I. 30, 31, 232
Smith, Henrietta	. . . . .	I. 30
Smith, Jean	. . . . .	I. 19, 37
Smith, Thomas	. . . . .	I. 18, 19
<i>Some Aspects of Robert Burns</i>	. . . . .	I. 229
<i>Some Portraits by Raeburn</i>	. . . . .	I. 203

INDEX

<i>Song of Rohero</i>	. . . . .	II. 135
<i>Songs of Travel</i>	. . . . .	II. 189
<i>Sophia Scarlet</i>	. . . . .	II. 200, 212
<i>South Seas, In the</i>	. . . . .	II. 126, 195, 213
<i>Spectator, The</i>	. . . . .	II. 21, 72
Speculative Society, The	. . . . .	I. 78, 83, 140, 167; II. 23
Spencer, Herbert	. . . . .	II. 143
Spencer, W. T.	. . . . .	II. 75
<i>Sphere, The</i>	. . . . .	II. 258 <i>n</i>
<i>Squaw Man, The</i>	. . . . .	I. 343
Stael, Madame de	. . . . .	I. 80 <i>n</i>
Stephen, Leslie	I. 154, 155, 156, 171, 182, 203, 209, 217, 307, 308-10; II. 16, 156	
Sterling, John	. . . . .	I. 265; II. 43
Sterne	. . . . .	I. 187
Stevenson, Alan	. . . . .	17
Stevenson, Alan (son of Robert)	. . . . .	20
Stevenson, David	. . . . .	20
Stevenson family, origin of.		16
Stevenson family, politics of		16
Stevenson Family Records	. . . . .	I. 12
Stevenson, Hugh	. . . . .	I. 17
Stevenson, James	. . . . .	I. 21
Stevenson, Margaret	. . . . .	I. 231
Stevenson, Robert (grandfather)	. . . . .	I. 19, 74; II. 200, 224
Stevenson, Robert A. M.	I. 49, 110, 138-9, 155, 185, 193, 201, 211, 342; II. 11, 82	
Stevenson, Robert Louis :		
A baseless fear	. . . . .	II. 259
Adventure, love of	. . . . .	II. 123
Advocate	. . . . .	I. 170
Agnostic	. . . . .	I. 106
A household idol	. . . . .	I. 40
Airy cynicism	. . . . .	I. 153
Allowance from father	. . . . .	I. 268
All things to all men	. . . . .	II. 232
Always at high pitch	. . . . .	I. 157
Ambition as historian	. . . . .	II. 170
An Alexandrian	. . . . .	I. 311
Ancestry, quest for	. . . . .	I. 12-15
An intolerable situation	. . . . .	I. 227
Apia gossip	. . . . .	II. 235
Appearance as student	. . . . .	I. 74

INDEX

Stevenson, Robert Louis—*continued* :

Appearance, early	I. 63
Appearance, late	II. 257-8
Appreciates father	I. 270
Arrested by French police	I. 181
A Scots sentimentalist	I. 350
As moralist	II. 8
As musician	II. 82
As young Lochinvar	I. 188
Atheist.	I. 106
At Saranac	II. 98-102
Beginnings of authorship	I. 66
Begins <i>A Child's Garden of Verses</i>	I. 330
Birth	I. 36
Bizarre dress	I. 102
Blackness of depression	II. 88
Bleak prospects	I. 238
"Bohemian crank"	II. 161
Bond with mother	I. 268
Bourget, disgust with	II. 211
Boyish taste in reading	I. 52
Briefed as counsel	II. 219
Broken nerves	I. 251 ; II. 36
Brush with Henley	II. 29
Buys estate	II. 154
Calton Hill "howff," visits to	I. 117
Career divided into two parts	I. 318
Cast off by own people	I. 260
Causes of failure as dramatist	II. 47
Celtic studies	I. 300
Celtic traits, non-existent	I. 24
Changed personality	I. 250
Charm of heroic and romantic for	I. 23
Charm sometimes failed	II. 17
Childish love of theatre	I. 52
Childish zeal for preaching	I. 46
Cipher messages to Fanny	I. 224
Claimed by Lady Shelley as her son	II. 81
"Claire," relations with	I. 130 ff.
Colinton Manse, golden days at	I. 53-5
Collaboration with Henley	II. 45
Collaboration with Lloyd Osbourne	II. 197
Conceals black moods	II. 133

INDEX

Stevenson, Robert Louis—*continued* :

Condemned to silence	II. 74
Consecrated to romance	I. 1
Contempt for society	I. 102
Contrite moods	II. 24
Costly enterprises	II. 207
Courage	I. 269 ; II. 31
Crowning merit	II. 270
Damien letter	II. 159
Daring everything	I. 236
Darling of a coterie	I. 199
Death, cause of	II. 252
Death of a piece with life	II. 260
Deceptive appearances	II. 121
Debt to predecessors	I. 317
Departure for California	I. 234
Dependent on father	I. 152, 270
Desire to meet Carlyle	I. 156
Desperate activity	I. 251
Disagreement with Henley	II. 50
" Discovered " by America	I. 155
Dislike of Edinburgh	I. 24
Distressed over quarrel with Henley	II. 113
Dreams of fame	I. 193
Dual personality	I. 349
Early haunts	I. 117
Early loves	I. 129
Early piety	I. 45
Early poetic activity	I. 91
Edinburgh edition, receives news of	II. 240
Egotism	II. 261
Embroided with Germans	II. 202
Established popularity	II. 70
Extreme care as artist	II. 6
Failure of South Sea record	II. 195-6
Fame to-day	I. 253
Family researches	II. 238
Farewell to youth	I. 332
Feigning lightness	I. 206 ; II. 116
Fiction, beginnings in	I. 178
Financial straits	II. 141
First contact with heathendom	II. 126
First introduction to American readers	I. 281

INDEX

Stevenson, Robert Louis—*continued* :

Fleeing from spectres	II. 117
Fondness for " penny bloods "	I. 334
Foreign blood	I. 26
Fortunate in friends	I. 146
French grace and Saxon ethics	II. 67
French influences	I. 196
French studies	I. 193
Funeral on Mount Væa	II. 253
Great white chief	II. 222 ff.
Guest of Princess Mod	II. 131
Hardships in New York	I. 241
Head of clan	II. 228
Highland character, delineations of	II. 215, 217
Home-sickness	II. 137
Ideal, devotion to	I. 2
Inconsistency	I. 165
In hands of Edinburgh police	I. 77
Irish question, fever over	II. 84
Isolation	I. 125
Journalism	I. 181
Last birthday	II. 248
Last day at work	II. 251
Law student	I. 137
Lays in arms	II. 210
Learning to write	I. 86-91
Library at Vailima	II. 225
Lineage, passion for	I. 10
Little knowledge of affairs	II. 264
Liveliness	I. 200
Loneliness	I. 258
Longing for home	I. 284
Looming shadow of end	II. 217
Lord of the manor	II. 234
Love of home	I. 10
Love of Paris	I. 193
Love of truth	I. 6
" Lover and sensualist "	I. 230
Magic of name	II. 241
" Mania of owning things "	II. 190
Marriage	I. 273
Material success	II. 241
Meredith, meeting with	I. 217

INDEX

Stevenson, Robert Louis—*continued* :

Mire of politics	II. 200
Misdirected energy	II. 169
Misunderstood by friends	I. 257 ; II. 181
New scenes, interest of	II. 130
Not epigrammatic	II. 226
Not impersonal	II. 263
Not intoxicated by success	II. 269
Offended dignity	I. 208
On value of Latin	II. 225
On verge of starvation	I. 260
Origin of <i>Jekyll and Hyde</i>	II. 65
Pacific Abbotsford	II. 185
Pacific or death	II. 164
Palmist's delineation, a	II. 175-80
Peculiarities accounted for	I. 22
Persistency	II. 105
Personality a defect in fiction	II. 263
Petted by women	I. 118
Place in literature	II. 259
Plans history of Highlands	I. 292
Polynesian politics, first taste of	II. 128
Prince Bountiful	I. 190-1
Progress as novelist	II. 139
Projects Life of Hazlitt	I. 342
Projects Life of Wellington	II. 54
Proposal to deport	II. 210
Protest against Transvaal War	I. 344
Reading, extent of	II. 226
Reconciled to his family	I. 289
Re-creating childhood	I. 48
Refused admission to Casino	I. 149
Relations with Henley	II. 1-2

and many other references

Religious "difficulties"	I. 103
Reputed a millionaire	II. 132
Resorts to drugs	I. 149
Restlessness	I. 182
Royalty conferred on	II. 209
Rupture with Henley	II. 108-13
Samoa, first impressions of	II. 153
Samoa, why chosen	II. 183
Santa Lucia Mountains, adventure in	I. 246

INDEX

Stevenson, Robert Louis—*continued* :

- Scot and Gascon I. 337
- Scott, compared with II. 266
- Second Pacific cruise II. 142
- Secretiveness I. 113, 189
- Self-criticism I. 163
- Serious fundamentally I. 163
- Settled exile II. 180
- Shattering disaster, a II. 34
- Shedding French influences II. 26
- Slenderness of equipment II. 263
- Slow advance I. 154, 311
- Social ostracism of I. 126
- Studies Spanish I. 272
- Style I. 43, 168, 283, 284, 303 ; II. 60, 267, 269
- Style, secret of II. 265
- Sunday-school teacher II. 232
- Suspected of treason II. 219
- Swanston, an abiding influence I. 98
- Theories of art and fiction II. 160
- "The Vanquished Knight" I. 135
- Title of *Tusitala* conferred II. 209
- Tribute to mother II. 248
- Tribute to wife and stepdaughter II. 244
- Tries to get arrested I. 228
- Ultima Thule*, his II. 152
- Unfavourable environment I. 141-3
- Vaulima Prayers* and other references I. 45
- Vaulima splendour II. 232
- Vanishing dreams II. 164
- Visit to leper settlement II. 145
- Voice, quality of II. 258
- Weariness I. 204 ; II. 249
- Worked best in bed II. 44
- Stevenson, Mrs. R. L. I. 4, 92, 114-16, 276-9, 284, 289, 294, 304, 307, 345, 351 ; II. 7, 12, 13, 29, 30, 48, 63, 65, 90, 103, 109, 111, 113, 115, 120, 131, 164, 170, 175, 186, 191, 245, 257
- Stevenson, Thomas (father) I. 20, 34, 36-8, 59, 93, 107-11, 134-8, 186, 199, 202, 227, 231, 234, 238, 268, 277, 286-8, 292, 295, 305, 313, 315 ; II. 9, 22-4, 38, 39, 83, 84, 135, 187, 212, 224, 232

INDEX

- Stevenson, Mrs. Thomas (mother) I. 38, 39, 49, 94, 103, 107, 145, 202, 227, 231, 268, 286-7; II. 21, 81, 88, 90, 102, 120, 135, 144, 192, 193, 238, 252-4
- Stewart, James II. 71
- Stewart, Dr. Robert I. 333 *n*
- Stobo Manse II. 9
- Stoddard, C. W. I. 255
- Stoddard, R. H. II. 59, 67
- Story of a Lie, The* I. 240, 252, 256, 263
- Story of a Recluse, The* I. 184
- Stour Valley I. 229
- Strain, Mrs. E. H. II. 246
- Strange Case of Dr. Jekyll and Mr. Hyde, The* I. 119; II. 63, 68, 72, 93, 139, 231
- Stranraer I. 182
- Strathaird I. 313
- Strathpeffer I. 290-3, 300-4
- Strong, Mrs. Isobel I. 114; II. 138, 194, 244, 251
- Stuart, Sir Thomas A. II. 233 *n*
- Studies of a Biographer* II. 156 *n*
- Stuebel, Dr. II. 190
- Style, Some Technical Elements of* II. 53
- Suicide Club, The* I. 211
- Sullivan, T. R. II. 94
- Swanston I. 94, 95, 144, 155-6, 167, 174, 183, 193, 229, 293; II. 87, 246
- Swanston, Idyll of, *The* I. 94
- Sweet Girl Graduate, A* I. 207
- Swinburne I. 91
- Switzerland II. 124
- Sydney II. 157-8, 164, 166, 169, 173-5, 186, 187, 192, 193
- Sydney Sun, The* II. 159 *n*, 162 *n*
- Symonds, J. A. I. 297, 298, 310 *n*, 341, 342; II. 60
- TAAHAUKA II. 129, 130
- Tacitus II. 33, 118, 226
- Tahiti II. 129-30, 140, 183
- Taipei-Kikino, Chief II. 125
- Tales of a Traveller* I. 317
- Talk and Talkers* I. 342; II. 16
- Taravao II. 130
- Tautira II. 131-7, 153

INDEX

Tay, the	I. 291
Taylor, Sir H. and Lady	II. 81
Taylor, Jeremy	II. 106
Tchehov	II. 27
Tembinoka, King	II. 148-50, 168, 197
<i>Temple Bar</i>	I. 202
Ten Commandments, The	I. 276 ; II. 198
Tennyson	I. 212, 315
<i>Tess of the D'Urbervilles</i>	II. 76
Thackeray	I. 20, 86, 142, 181 ; II. 262
Thackeray, Miss (Lady Ritchie)	I. 155
Théâtre Français	I. 195
<i>Thermal Influence of Forests, The</i>	I. 140
Thistle Club	II. 239
Thompson, D'Arcy	I. 61
Thomson, Robert	I. 62
Thoreau	I. 257, 317
<i>Thrawn Janet</i>	I. 44, 306, 307
Thucydides	II. 170
Ticknor, publisher	I. 243
<i>Times, The</i>	I. 232 ; II. 66, 72, 143, 201
<i>To an Island Princess</i>	II. 131
<i>To-day</i>	II. 238
Todd, John	I. 50, 95, 99
Tolstoi	I. 149 ; II. 26
<i>Tom Sawyer</i>	II. 21
Torajiro, Yoshida	I. 257, 258
Torquay	I. 65 ; II. 84
Toulon	II. 36
Tourgenief	II. 27, 263
Tradition, force of	I. 123
<i>Travelling Companion, The</i>	II. 28
<i>Travels with a Donkey</i> . . . . .	.. 223-5, 241, 256, 282
<i>Treasure Island</i>	I. 89, 153, 316, 319, 320-9, 331, 332, 338-40 ; II. 1, 19, 20, 25, 51, 52, 53, 54, 93, 139, 198, 215
<i>Treasure of Franchard</i>	II. 10, 18
Tree, Beerbohm	II. 46
Trent, Professor	I. 68, 114, 177, 178, 303, 330 n ; II. 3, 5
Troyes	I. 295
Trudeau, Dr. E. L.	II. 98, 100
Tulloch, Principal	I. 168, 292, 300, 308, 310 n
Tummel, the	I. 291 ; II. 137
Tutuila	II. 194

INDEX

<i>Tweed, The</i>	I. 65
<i>Two Falconers of Cairnstane, The</i>	I. 178
Tyndall, Professor	I. 104, 160, 166
<i>Typee</i>	II. 125
Tyrrell, J. R.	II. 233 n
<i>Underwoods</i>	I. 176, 281, 302 ; II. 18, 40, 82, 88
Upolu	II. 150, 184, 190, 209, 249
VÆA, MOUNT	II. 151, 183, 190, 217, 249, 257
Vaekehu, Queen	II. 128
Vailima	II. 119, 184, 186, 192, 195, 199, 221, 227, 239, 244
<i>Vailima Prayers</i>	II. 198 230
<i>Vanity Fair</i>	I. 182
<i>Vendetta, The</i>	I. 257
Venice	I. 64
<i>Vicar of Wakefield</i>	II. 41
<i>Victor Hugo's Romances</i>	I. 154
Victoria, Queen	I. 314, 315 ; II. 56
Villon	I. 195
Virgil	II. 196
<i>Virginibus Puerisque</i>	I. 182, 207, 211, 297, 300
Vital Influence, A	I. 158-62
<i>Voces Fidelium</i>	I. 73
Voltaire	I. 160, 196, 203
Vossius	I. 108
WAIKIKI	II. 139, 144
Walker, Helen	I. 146
<i>Walking Tours</i>	I. 182
<i>Wandering Willie</i>	II. 137
Warden, Miss F.	II. 47
Waverley Novels.	See under Scott
<i>Way of the World</i>	I. 294
Webster, John	I. 91
<i>Weir of Hermiston</i>	I. 8, 89, 167, 175, 177, 221, 333 ; II. 28, 141, 246, 250, 265
Welsh Blacksmith	I. 240-1
<i>Werther</i>	I. 145
<i>Wesleyan Times</i>	I. 21
West Indies	I. 17
Weybridge	I. 338 ; II. 7
<i>When the Devil was Well</i>	I. 178

INDEX

Whibley, Charles	II. 235
Whitman, Walt	I. 83, 147, 152, 157, 189, 236 ; II. 8, 290
Whitmee, Rev. S. J.	II. 190, 210, 235
Whyte, Alex., D.D.	I. 309 n
Wick	I. 72, 73, 87
Wiesbaden	I. 181
Wigton	I. 182
Wiley, Dr.	I. 278
Wilkie, Sir David	I. 29
Williams, Virgil	I. 255, 273
<i>Will o' the Mill</i>	I. 65, 209, 210
Wilson, John, see also "Christopher North"	I. 143, 230
<i>Winter's Walk, A</i>	I. 182
Wise, H. B.	I. 118
Wolfe, General	II. 260
<i>Woodlanders, The</i>	II. 90, 124
Wordsworth	I. 87, 119, 180 ; II. 44, 260
Workshop	I. 303 ; II. 3, 4, 5 n
<i>Wrecker, The</i>	II. 121, 147, 149, 161, 188, 197, 199, 207
<i>Wrong Box, The</i>	II. 142, 155
 <i>Young Chevalier, The</i>	II. 212
<i>Young Folks</i>	I. 318 ft ; II. 19, 74, 97
Young, Robert	I. 99
 ZASSETZKA, MADAME	I. 149
Zola	I. 196

